Dakota Mission.

Visiting Committee's Report
to Prudential Committee,
May 30 and July 11, 1882.

1.

At the meeting of the Prudential Committee May 30, the Committee which had visited the Dakota mission were permitted to make verbal statements of the nature of a report. They now present a report in detail ~~of their visit~~, with ~~the~~ suggestions ~~they have to make~~ in regard to the Indian mission.

The Committee left Boston April 18th, and reached the city on our return May 28th. We were carried prosperously in all our journeys, met with no accidents and few detentions, were preserved in uninterrupted health, experienced fewer discomforts and had greater enjoyments than were anticipated; for all which we give humble and hearty thanks to our Heavenly Father.

Rev. Joseph Ward of Yankton, Dakota, who was invited by ~~kindly acceded to the invitation of~~ the Prudential Committee, ~~and~~ To accompany us, ~~he~~ went with us to Santee, and assisted materially in our general consultations with the missionaries ~~there~~, and in our private counsels. We put on record our appreciation of his valuable services. Pressing duties connected with Yankton College rendered it impossible for him to accompany the Committee from Santee to Ft. Sully, ~~and~~ Sissiton and Ft. Berthold.

On our way to the mission field, in passing through Chicago, and again on our return, we had ~~long and important~~ conferences with the ladies of the Woman's Board of Missions of the Interior. Mrs. Dr. A. C. Thompson of the Executive Committee of the Woman's Board of Boston, who accompanied the Visiting ~~was one of our~~ Committee, and had a full share in our observations and consultations, ~~at the mission stations,~~ brought us into more confidential relations than otherwise might have been possible with the Christian women in the mission field, as well as with our friends in Chicago.

The Indians in our Country.

It may ~~conduce~~ helps to a more intelligent judgment of our Indian mission to fix our attention first upon the general state of the Indians in our country. In the year 1881, according to the report of the Indian Commissioner, (from which we draw many of our statistics,) the number of Indians in the United States, exclusive of Alaska, was 261,851. Of these there were dwelling in the Indian Territory five civilized tribes, numbering 59,277, leaving 202,574 on reservations ~~and~~ or roaming at large.

The number who wear citizen's dress wholly is 70,000, in part 30,850 – a total of 100,850. The Indians are not evenly distributed over the frontier states and territories. there are in Arizona ~~has [illegible]~~ ~~The largest number~~, 18,690; ~~is in Arizona.~~ ~~There are~~ in ~~In~~ Dakota ~~there are~~ 30,608; in the Indian Territory, exclusive of the civilized tribes, 18,395; in New Mexico 26,000; in Montana 20,000; in Washington Territory 13,137. No other territory or state ~~of the Union~~ has more than 10,000.

The various ~~Indian~~ reservations on which the greater number of Indians are ~~now~~ gathered, cover~~ing~~ an area of 243,091 square miles, or 155,632,312 acres, of which ~~area~~ 18,248,815 acres are reported tillable; if equally divided, every Indian family of five persons ~~man, woman and child of the 260,000~~ would have about 350 ~~7,000~~ acres of tillable land. The number of acres cultivated by the Indians during the year 1881 was 554,367.

The United States Government by various treaty stipulations has purchased of the Indians portions of the lands once occupied by them ~~in their possession~~; and has come under obligation~~s by various treaties~~ to give annuities to various tribes. The present liability ~~ty~~ of the U.S. to Indian tribes under ~~by~~ treaty engagements ~~stipu-lations~~ for "limited annuities," "to be paid in a "limited number of years," is $9,682,032; - for annuities of a permanent character, $349,432; - for amounts held in trust, on which 5% is annually paid, $6,120,045.

The amount disbursed from the appropriations for the Indian Department ~~of the Government~~ for the year ending June 30, 1881, was $4,287,323. Of this it is ~~supposed~~ Computed that there reached the Indians the value of $3,656,947; namely, in medicines &c. $16,378.; in annuity goods $584,825.; in subsistence supplies $1,804,505.; in agricultural and miscellaneous supplies $291,450.; for transportation and storage $282,680.; for purchase and inspection expenses $21,662.; for advertisement &c. $8,347.; annuities in money $306,987.; for support of schools $208,996.; to promote civilization, including Indian labor, $117,574.; in presents $50.; in survey of reservations $251.; in agricultural ~~[illegible]~~ improvements $11,235.

The amount expended in distributing this sum, including salaries and expenses of Indian inspectors, of regular and special Indian agents, interpretors and employees, for buildings and incidentals at agencies, police and scouts, and miscellaneous expenses, was $630,376.11.

(15 per cent on whole appropriati)

It appears that to every man, woman and child of the total 262,000 Indians about $14, or every family of five, $70.– ~~are~~ were distributed from the U.S. Government.

Various religious bodies besides the Am. Board are engaged in missionary and educational work among the Indians, cooperating with the Government in efforts to civilize them. The Friends have missions in ~~In~~ Nebraska and in the Indian Territory; The Methodists, ~~the Friends have missions,~~ in California, Oregon, Washington Territory, Montana, Idaho and Michigan; The Roman Catholics, ~~the Methodists have missions,~~ in Oregon, Washington Territory, Montana and Dakota; The Baptists, ~~the Catholics,~~ in the Indian Territory and Nevada; the Presbyterians ~~Baptists~~ in the Indian Territory New Mexico, Idaho, Washington Territory ~~and~~ Nebraska ~~and~~ Dakota & Michigan arizona. Utah; the Protestant Episcopalians ~~Presbyterians,~~ in Minnesota, Dakota the Indian Territory, and Wyoming; the United ~~Protes-~~ Presbyterians, ~~tant Episcopalians~~ in Oregon; the Evangelical ~~United Pres-~~ Lutherans, ~~byterians,~~ in Colorado; ~~the Evangelical Lutherans.~~ The Am. Missionary association in Oregon.

As an indication of the work carried on by the the Government ~~and by~~ various religious societies, it may be stated that the church buildings reported in 1881 among the Indians, ~~for 188~~, including the five civilized tribes, number 296; the missionaries, not included among teachers, 184; the number of schools is 383, of which 79 are boarding, and 304 day, schools. The amount reported as expended for education, from tribal funds and from the U. S. Government and States, was $530,522; by religious societies (for education & missions $139.440, of which the amount for education was at least $53,702:- a total of $584,248., which is probably over $13. for ~~every child~~ each of the children of school age, who number (45000, estimating those not reported in due proportion with those reported.

A partial report was given ~~in~~ 1881 of births and deaths, which is probably ~~is~~ a fair estimate of the whole number. The births were 2,339, the deaths 1989, among the same tribes; which indicates that the number of Indians is increasing.

Indian Missions of the Am. Board.

The attention of the American Board was directed to the North American Indians at the very commencement of its missionary work. More than twenty tribes have shared its labors ~~to the present~~ at different times;- the Cherokees, the Choctaws, the Chickaws, the Creeks, the Osages, the Chippewas, ~~the~~ or Ojibways, the Ottawas, the Wyandottes, the Munsees, the Senecas, Tuscaroras, Cayugas, Onondagas, Stockbridges, Pawnees, Sioux, the Nezperces, ~~the~~ Flatheads & Kayuses of Oregon, the Cahnegawa or Iroquois and Abenaquis of Canada. ~~June 27, 1xxx,~~ "~~the General Association of Massachusetts Proper at their session~~

In the year 1820 of 88 missionaries and assistants, just one half, 44, were connected with our Indian missions, and nearly one half the expenditure of the Board was for these missions.

In the year 1829 the members of the churches in our Indian missions numbered 872, and in all other missions of the Board 278. The Indians converts were three quarters of all mission converts. At the Semi-Centennial in 1860, out of 1258 missionaries and assistant missionaries who had been commissioned by the Board, 428, more than one third had been connected with the Indian missions.

Among the greater number of these tribes our work has long ceased. In 1834 the mission to the Chickasaws was closed in consequence of the incoming white population; in 1836 that to the Creeks and Osages, and in 1848 that to the Stockbridges, for substantially the same reason. The mission to the Choctaws, in connection with which occurred the first nullification of U. S. laws by Southern States, was closed in 1859: the result was due to prolonged discussions at several annual meetings of the Board because of slavery complications. Twenty-seven hundred Choctaws had been received to the mission churches. The missionaries generally became connected with the
7 Southern Presbyterian Board. The mission to the

Cherokees was closed in 1860 because it was believed the nation was substantially a Christian nation, and that mission, if continued among them, belonged to a home and not to a foreign missionary society. For the same reason the mission to the Tuscaroras in New York was closed the same year. In 1866 the church on the Alleghany reservation, New York, was relinquished by the Board, and taken in charge by the American Home Missionary Society. The interesting missions in Oregon, among the Nez perces, the Flatheads and the Kayuses, were broken up in 1847 by the murder of some of our missionaries. In 1858 the mission to the Abenáquis in Canada was suspended because so few of the tribe remained; and for substantially the same reason, in 1835 the mission among the Maumee Indians, in 1836, the mission at Mackinaw, in 1848 the mission among the Stockbridge Indians. The Pawnee mission was closed in 1846 because other denominations had come in to occupy the ground. There remained our Dakota mission, of which we will speak now more particularly.

The Dakota Mission

was commenced in 1835. The Dakotas, or Sioux, the most numerous and then the most warlike tribe in North America, were dwelling on the upper Mississippi, and its affluents; their haunts were about St. Anthony's Falls. They roamed over Minnesota and ~~the~~ Country westward to the Black Hills. Yielding to the pressure of the whites they have been crowded back and now by treaty stipulations they are gathered in reservations chiefly in Dakota. A few bands are in Montana, while in Dakota there are a few Indians who are not Sioux proper.

The total number of Dakota Indians is about 32,000, of whom 21,000 wear blankets and 11,000 dress like whites; 2,600 can read. Their reservations include an area of more than 57,000 sq. miles, or ~~nearly~~ about 37,000,000 acres, nearly equal to all New England. One million acres are reported to be tillable, which would make the proportion to every Indian family of five ~~man woman and child~~ 1500 acres.

In 1881 more than 15,000 acres were cultivated, ~~each~~ and yielded 37,000 bushels of wheat, 90,000, of corn, and large quantities of oats, barley, vegetables and hay. The Indians owned 12,000 horses and 13,000 cattle, and sold robes and furs ~~valued at~~ to the amount of $15,000. In addition, the government appropriation, for supplies, clothing, medicines, agricultural and other implements, houses, schools, &c, &c, including expense of agencies, exceeded one and a half million dollars, or $~~2~~850 for each ~~Indian~~ family of five.

At ten out of the eleven agencies, the government has industrial and other boarding and day schools. Three Protestant Societies have missions among the Dakotas. Two agencies are allotted to the Roman Catholics, though other Societies are not excluded. There is no agency which ~~has~~ is not assigned to & claimed by some Society. ~~working~~. At some agencies several Societies have missions.

The Protestant missionaries number 16 white ministers, 5 white male and 26 female teachers, with 34 Indian ministers and teachers; a total of 71 Protestant laborers. One hundred and twenty Indian scholars were sent to Hampton and Carlisle last year. Probably for every 1900 Indians there are, one white minister, four white teachers, and two Indian Ministers or teachers. They have 33 church buildings, and the amount from all sources expended for Education in 1881 was $55.686. The children of School age number about 5500.

The missionary force, it must be said, is not equally distributed; it is chiefly concentrated at six agencies, where the total number of Indians is only about 10.000. Very little has been done to Evangelize the remaining 22,000.

The ~~missions~~ Stations of the American Board are at four agencies; the other agencies ~~are~~ being occupied actually or constructively by other Societies; indeed other Societies have crowded into our stations. Dr. S. R. Riggs, in 1878, estimated the number of Indians for whom the Board may be considered specially responsible, at 4607. Now it may be set down at 6300:- namely, at Santee 384, at Sisseton 1.000, at Ft. Sully 1500, at Ft. Berthold 1350, at Devil's Lake 1066. The children of School age under our charge, ~~counting half the number at Santee and Sully, two thirds~~

~~at Sisseton~~, ~~all at Ft. Berthold and Devil's Lake~~, are about 800.

For these 6,300 Indians, our missionary force comprises four white ministers, four male and 14 female teachers, 8 Indian ministers and 9 Indian teachers. This gives for every 1600 Indians, one white, and two Indian ministers, and for every 100 children two white teachers and one Indian teacher. (The annual expenditure for these 6300 Indians is $20,000. The amount asked for 1882 was $25,000.)

The Santee Agency Station.

(The Committee first visited the mission station at the Santee Agency, occupied since 1866.

This) is in the northeastern edge of Nebraska, on the south west bank of the Missouri River, opposite Springfield, Dak., ~~which is~~ and 36 miles above Yankton. (There is direct railway communication between Springfield and Chicago. Dr. Thompson and Mrs. Thompson reached Santee Saturday evening and were present and participated in the religious services Sunday. Mr. Burr, Rev. Jos.

Ward and Sec. McEans arrived Monday afternoon. A visit was made to Bazil Creek, and we were visited by the Ponca chiefs, and received a request from them, for establishing a School at their reservation, about 30 miles distant. We left Santee late Wednesday Afternoon.)

The Indian reservation is about 12 miles wide, and extends back 12 to 18 miles according to bends in the river. It contains nearly 115,000 acres, much of which is bluff land, unfit for cultivation. There are several Streams running through it, on which there is more or less good land and some timber.

The Indians are not living in villages, but are scattered over the reservation, occupying farms generally of about 160 acres, of which from 5 to 50 acres are under cultivation. The Indians number all told 767. They occupy dwellings which compare fairly with those of their white neighbors. "A Stranger travelling through the country would hardly know that he was in an Indian reservation." The Indians, as yet, have no valid title to their farms, but hold them under allottments from the government. They are surrounded on every side by white settlers. Doubtless their land will be secured to them in due time, or its equivalent will be paid them. The government already has in trust a fund belonging to the Indians at Santee and Flandreau, which amounts to $86,580. Four sevenths, which is the proportion for the Santees, allots to them $49,475.

This, more than $300, to each family, is not to be paid in money, but to be expended for assistance in agriculture, education, and general support. For many years the Santees have been receiving ~~weekly~~ government rations, which are gradually being withdrawn, that they may learn to provide for themselves. According to the proportion of $50, distributed in supplies to each Sioux Indian, the Santees received from the government in 1881, $38,350. They earned 70 per cent. of their living by labor in civilized pursuits, 5 per cent. from fishing & hunting, & 25 per cent was from government rations. The government buildings at the Agency, on the South West bank of the Missouri, opposite Springfield, ~~Dakota~~, comprise Industrial School houses, dwelling houses, work shops, offices, ware houses, machine house, saw-mill &c. A grist-mill, with granaries and dwelling-houses, ~~are~~ is on another part of the reservation. Carpenter and blacksmith shops are carried on wholly by the Indians, who receive regular wages, as do many clerks and other Indians employed by the government.

In 1881 the Indians at Santee had 2,700 acres under cultivation, on which they raised 2,000 bushels of wheat, 24,000. of corn, 6,500 of oats and vegetables, 1,300 tons of hay; they kept 430 horses and over 500 cattle. They have mostly given up hunting; the value of robes and furs sold in 1881 was $500.

Such is the material condition of the ~~Santees~~ Indians at this Mission Station.

The Educational and religious work is done through the government Schools, and through the Protestant Episcopal and American Board Missions.

About a mile South of the government buildings are those of the Episcopal mission, comprising a church and parsonage and an industrial School for girls. The Episcopalians sustain one church and two chapels, two clergymen, and five helpers, and report 141 Communicants.

Less than a mile north of the government buildings are those of our mission, very pleasantly situated and ~~making~~ presenting an ~~quite an~~ attractive & somewhat imposing appearance. They comprise a building for school-house and chapel, with tower and bell, the Dakota Home for young women, the Bird's Nest for little girls, Young Men's Hall, the Boy's Cottage, a dwelling-house for the missionary, with out-buildings, ~~several~~ three small cottages and a work-shop~~s~~. The buildings have cost over $25,000; they are in good order, and the premises are neatly fenced and well kept. There are about 80 acres of land assigned to the mission; a small part of it is under cultivation. One yoke of oxen and a horse are kept; there are no cows, but there are several cows and horses ~~kept by~~ belonging to Rev. A. L. Riggs. The Board has as yet no title to the land, it is simply allotted to the missions on the government plan at the Agency. No titles are given even to Indians on government reservations.

Besides the church-building at the Agency there is a chapel at Basil Creek, 14 miles distant, where religious services are held a part of the time.

Religious Condition. ~~of the Station~~.

The Pilgrim Church at Santee has a memorable history. In the stress of our Civil-War came the Indian outbreak in 1862, and the massacres at Red Wood and New Ulm in Minnesota. The following winter the Indians who were conquered, and chained in the prison at Mankato, under sentence of death, were visited by their old missionaries. A religious awakening commenced, and many gave such evidence of conversion that in one day, 200 received baptism. The interest which began in the prison extended to the camp at Ft. Snelling. A large church was gathered. In 1866 the communicants numbered nearly 400. From its numerous removals, as the Indians were transported from one place to another, ~~the Church~~ it took the name of the Pilgrim Church. Since it was planted at Santee, colonies have gone from it to form churches, at Flandreau and Elsewhere. The present membership is 170. The church, with its Indian Pastor, 4 catechists, elders and deacons, belongs to the Presbytery of Dakota, and is reported in the Minutes of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of America.

The Sunday School and social meetings, the women's meetings, and the missionary Society, are said to be well sustained. Members of the church hold meetings occasionally in neighborhoods distant from the Agency.

A copy of the Dakota Bible, we are were told, may be found in every family on the reservation, ~~where there is at least~~ and some one ~~[illegible]~~ who can read it. Family prayer is commonly maintained. Mr. Riggs thinks there are not more than six adult Indians on the reservation who are not members of some church.

Mr. Riggs has oversight of religious matters in general, and the other teachers assist in the Sabbath School, which includes the members of the Normal School. A good influence pervades the School Homes, and some instances of conversions have been were spoken of. In other respects, the Church work is in the hands of the Indian pastor and elders.

Educational Work.

The main work at Santee is educational. The total number of school children on the reservation, including the Poncas near by, according to the government report is 275. The government boarding school we are found in charge of Rev. Mr. Oak, a Methodist minister, and religious instruction to some extent is given by him. At the time of our visit, there were 39 scholars; — Poncas — 12 more had been present but had left a few weeks previously.

There are ~~in the several schools~~ accommodations for so many more scholars than the reservation furnishes that the government agent asks ~~that~~ for scholars from other reservations to be sent to fill up the buildings.

In St. Mary's Episcopal girls boarding school there were 39 pupils. There are also Episcopal schools for boys, (which we did not visit.) Our school comprised 78 scholars, 37 girls and 41 boys. Of the boys, 18 lived in the Boys' Cottage, and 20 in the Young Men's Home. Of the girls, 17 lived in the Dakota Home, and 15 in the Bird's Nest.

The girls in the Home do house-work and sewing; they are taught to some extent, to make and mend their clothing. The boys also assist in house-work, and in the care of the land and the buildings

The Chapel is divided by folding-doors into several rooms, which serve admirably for School purposes.

All the Scholars are taught in this building, partly in Dakota and partly in English. They learn to read and write and to do ordinary sums in Arithmetic; many are quite proficient in Geography. A few it is said make a beginning in Bookkeeping, in History of the United States, and in Bible history. Some Elementary instruction is given in Natural Philosophy and Physiology. Singing is a daily Exercise. No Scholars seem far Enough advanced to Enter an ordinary Grammar School.

The teachers in the School-building are Rev. A. L. Riggs, Mr. Robbins, Eli Abraham, Miss Ilsley and Miss Glisan. Associated with them but doing their work in the Homes are;- Miss Webb and Miss Paddock in the Dakota Home— where also is Miss Faxon—; Miss Brown, in

the Bird's Nest, where Miss Ilsley lives also; Miss Voorhees in the Boys' Cottage; a Matron in the Young Men's home, where Miss Glisan lives also; A sewing woman, employed a part of the time; a Steward and his wife; and a shoe-maker. (The shoe-maker, on a salary of $700, and a Cottage free of rent and schooling for his children, has taught eight
Each boy takes his turn every third week for a few hours in the afternoon
or ten boys.) ~~each five or six hours every third week~~.

The boys have learned to handle the tools and do some stitching and pegging, but no one can prepare his own work or make a shoe. One hundred dollars of the shoe-maker's salary has been paid from profits on outside work.)

Of the scholars, 24 girls are from Santee, 2 of them day scholars, 5 girls are from the Presbyterian station of Yankton, 1 is from Peoria Bottom, and 1 is from Ft. Berthold, 3 from the Ponca Agency, and 3 are white girls; 23 boys are from Santee, 7 from Ft. Berthold, 2 from Peoria Bottom, – these three being our own Mission Stations; 1 is from Ft. Bennet, 1 from Crow Creek, 1 from Ponca agency, and 6 from the Presb. Yankton Agency. (It is noticeable that) while the school is intended for advanced scholars from our four stations, there were no scholars from Sisseton and only 11 from the one other two stations.

(Mr. Riggs, we have said, has general oversight of the church work, and Eli Abraham preaches in ~~turn~~ at Bazil Creek. (Except this, their time is devoted to the Normal School. ~~With these exceptions~~, For this school, ~~alone~~ which in 1881 had on the rolls 88 names, 19 of them town scholars, and at our visit had 75 Indian scholars, 5 of them day scholars, the mission force comprised: 4 American white men and one Indian, and 8 American women, as teachers and matrons, and the running expenses in 1881 were $8278.)

The scholars were mostly between 8 and 16 years of age., ~~two (?) were older and two or three (?) younger~~.

The institution ~~at Santee~~ bears the name of "The Santee Normal Training School." and a just judgment of the present condition cannot be formed without recalling ~~the~~ its history. ~~of the School~~.

The Santee Normal Training School.

In 1866 "a select school" was opened at Breckenridge, now called Santee, by Mr. E. H. Pond, assisted to some extent by Mr. J. P. Williamson. During four months of 1868, "twenty young men who gave promise of usefulness were gathered into a boarding school." In 1868, Aug. 15, Rev. J. P. Williamson and Rev. S. R. Riggs report that "The Santee Agency is the centre of twenty-five hundred Indians. To this place we must look for teachers and preachers for the 25,000 Sioux, who do not yet know their letters. These teachers must be qualified, and year by year a higher grade of scholars will be required in all teachers, both religious and scholastic. Our mission must see to it that these teachers are prepared, and for this object a School Normal and Theological must be established."

Shortly after, the Dakota mission formally determined "to give special attention to the preparation of native preachers and teachers".

In the execution of this determination, Rev. S. R. Riggs proceeded to erect buildings near what is now Sisseton, for one Training School, and Rev. A. L. Riggs undertook a similar work at Santee.

The Training School at Sisseton was opened in Nov. 1870. It seems soon to have relapsed into an ordinary school. "For the higher education in this whole field," wrote Dr. Riggs, August 1873, "we shall look to the institution at the Santee Agency, under the personal care of A. L. Riggs." Rev. A. L. Riggs went to Santee for the purpose of establishing a Training School for teachers and preachers. "The training of teachers for the common schools and the institution of a Theological Class" were specially in view. Dec. 19, 1870, the Training School was opened, in "a substantial and neat building". In the first year, 115 scholars were enrolled, 37 young men, 18 young women, and 60 boys and girls. Mr. Riggs had one assistant teacher. In 1872, the scholars were reported to number 118, with two additional Indian teachers. For 1873 no report appears. For 1874, the report is 85 scholars, 3 American teachers including Mr. Riggs, and 2 Indian teachers.

1875, 87 scholars, 5 American and 2 Indian teachers.
1876, 93 scholars, 5 American and 1 Indian teacher.
1877, 92 " , 4 " " 3 " teachers.
1878, 104 " , 5 " " 3 " "
1879, 72 " , 6 " " 1 " teacher.
1880, 89 " , 7 " " 1 " "
1881, 88 " , 12 " " 1 " "

In 1870 was erected the first Young Men's Hall, of logs. Here, till 1877, they lived with Indian matrons to do the cooking. In Dec. 1873, the Dakota Home, erected for young women, was occupied.

In the spring of 1877 the new Young Men's Home was completed. In 1881 the Bird's Nest for little girls, and the Boy's Cottage, for boys under 12. Cottages for married students have also been erected. The buildings recently added have chiefly been for little boys and girls, for whom there seems to have been no thought when the Normal Training School was established. Indeed, last year there was opened a Kindergarten department.

There has been a decrease in the age as well as a diminution in the number of the scholars. In 1871 the young men (37) and young women (18) numbered together 57, or half the school. In 1872, the young men (57) and young women (5) numbered 62, more than half the school. In 1881 the young men (17) and young women (18) were 35.

From 1876 Catalogues of Scholars have been printed. By examining the names it appears that in 1881, 9 Indians were spending their 5th year in the school, 7 their 4th year, 16 their 3rd year, 10 their 2nd year, and 45 their 1st year. Several of those longest in the school were in 1881 in the "Bird's Nest" or "Boy's Cottage". On the other hand, young men and women when they have learned enough, perhaps, to enter an ordinary Grammar School, instead of being retained and taught in higher studies are sent away to academies at Beloit, Wheaton and elsewhere.

The reports indicate that while some instruction in higher studies has been given, incidentally and to a few scholars there has been as yet no formal organization of either a normal, or a theological department. In 1874, Mr. Riggs reports: "Our Normal Training School has had gratifying success in all its branches. As yet its strictly normal work in the training of teachers is limited, there having been but two under drill and instruction in this line." In 1878, and in 1879, it is reported that there was a normal class of three. In 1876, a Theological Class of 8 for four weeks is reported. In 1881, one Theological Student is reported. No other allusion is made in any year to Normal or Theological Students.

In 1877, indeed, Mr. Riggs wrote: "Our schools go on with unabated success, and our scholars are going forth to teach others." But no new schools were opened in the mission, so far as appears, and no new teachers are reported for that and the following year. In 1879, the number of scholars had dropped from 104 to 72. The report states that, "The main work of the missionaries at Santee, is in the Normal Training School. This is becoming more satisfactory, and of greater promise;-- "I have given attention to it," (Normal Training), writes Rev. A. L. Riggs, May 19, 1881, "with particular scholars from time to time, but as yet we have had no course of study, nor pupils enough of that grade to form a class."- "Our Theolgical course is still kept in sight. I have had one Theological student this past winter."

During the week of the Annual mission meeting there is held a Theological Institute, for Indian pastors and evangelists, to whom Lectures are given by several missionaries. This Institute was attended by 16 last year.

Since 1872, during the time the Training School has been fairly and fully in operation, the number of Indian preachers and teachers in our mission has not increased; indeed there has been a diminution of preachers. In 1872 the Messrs Williamson joined the Presb. **Board**. There was left under the American Board, 7 churches with 561 members, 10 Indian ministers, 6 of them ordained and 4 licentiates, and 3 teachers. There seem to be 2 less ministers in 1881, 2 more teachers, and 4 catechists, not named in 1872. In 1881 there are 9 churches, (one gain **over** 1872) 615 members, (54 gain) 8 ministers, (2 loss) 5 teachers, (2 gain), and four helpers.

In letters dated March 25 and April 10, 1882, Mr. Riggs gives the total membership of the School from July 1870 to 1880 as 390: or "adding the members of the Theological Institute at Sisseton Agency," 401 – "of the 390 71 males and 42 females have continued until they have made such progress as to be fitly termed advanced students. By this I mean that they have knowledge of the four rules of Arithmetic, can read and write quite correctly in their own language, have studied Elementary Geography and the Bible, and can read simple English. Some can speak English and have also studied Book-keeping, Algebra and Geometry, or rather have begun these branches. Thirteen have had Theological instruction, and Eleven more were members of the Sisseton Institute. Ten have had instruction as Normal Scholars." This statement varies slightly from the Annual reports, according to which a Theological class for four weeks of Eight Students in 1876, and of one Student in 1881, make nine in all, instead of thirteen. The reports also give of Normal Scholars, two in 1874, three in 1878, and three in 1879. Eight in all, instead of ten. Mr. Riggs wrote, as has been already quoted, May 19, 1881. "As yet we have had no normal course of study, nor pupils enough of that grade to form a "class". In his letter of April 10, 1882, he gives the names of preachers and teachers, who have studied at Santee. There are named 5 preachers, 11 catechists, and, exclusive of preachers and catechists, 12 teachers, of whom 3 are women.

Of the 5 preachers, one, A. Ehnamani was a pastor in 1867. before the School was established, another, Amos Ross. has been connected with the Episcopal Mission, and the other three, Joseph Rogers, John Eastman and Henry Selwyn are connected with the Presbyterian Mission. On the other hand, the four new ministers in our churches since 1872, are David Greycloud, David Renville, Joseph Irondoor and Chas. R. Crawford, neither of whom is named as having studied at Santee.

Mr. Riggs gives the names of 16 students at Santee, who have become teachers. Of these Eli Abraham, is the only one connected with our Mission Schools; while the other Indian teachers in our mission Schools, Samuel Hopkins, Samuel

Smiley and Elizabeth Wingan are not named as Scholars at Santee. In a word, while all our Indian Pastors have attended the Theol. Institute held during the week of the Annual meeting of the Dakota Mission, no one of the 13 who have been ministers of the Mission Churches since 1872 has studied at Santee, except A. Ehnamani; ~~who~~ and he was pastor at Santee before the School was established. Of the five ministers reported as students at Santee, no one has been in our mission-churches except Ehnamani. — Of the 16 Santee Scholars who are reported as having become teachers, Eli Abraham is the only one teaching in our mission Schools: and excepting Eli, those who are teaching in our Schools were not trained at Santee.

Among Catechists "who preach, but have no permanent charge of a Congregation", exclusive of those named as teachers, Mr. Riggs reports 6 from the School, in the ten years, of whom 2 are now living at Santee.

At the time of our visit, there were no Scholars at Santee expressly preparing to be preachers or teachers.

The accompanying table gives the statistics of church members and expenditures of the Dakota mission from 1871 to 1881, and the statistics of scholars and teachers and the expenditures at Santee.

Statistics of Dakota Mission, and of Scholars, Teachers and Expenitures at Santee.

Church members.} Santee Normal Tr. School.}

Date.	Indian ministers.	Indian Teachers.	Ch. members Santee.	Sisseton.	Fort Sully.	Fort Berthold.	Total.	Total Scholars.	Young men.	Young women.	Normal Class.	Theol. Class.	American Teachers.	Indian Teachers.	Expenditures at Santee.	Expenditures of whole mission.
								(average 55)							$	$
1871	7	1	267	423			690	115	37	18			2		4,095.34	12,589.
1872	10	3	225	336			561	118	57	5			2	2	8,547.30	11,870.
1873	8	5	223	374			597						1	2	6,194.28	14,909.
1874	7	5						85			2		3	2	4,670.76 100. 4,770.76 }	12,758.
1875	7	2+4 helpers	172	413			585	87	8	22			5	2	4,779.60 100. 4,879.60 }	11,543.
1876	5	1+4 "	174					93	23	26		8 for 4 weeks	5	1	4,591.65 130. 4,721.65 }	14,049.
1877	6	3+3 "						92	22	27			4	3	8,322. 175 8,497 }	16,572.
1878	6	3+3 "	179	404			583	104	27	39	3		5	3	5,078. 150. 5.228 }	11,174.
1879	8	3+4 catechists						72	19	29	3		6	1	6,170. 119. 6,289 }	12,558.
1880	8	3+4 "	170	343			513	89	35	32			7	1	12,631.50 200. 12,831.50 }	20,540.
1881	8	4+4 "	170	407	23	15	615	88	17	18		1	12	1	8,728.24 200. 8,928.24 }	20,025.

Sisseton Agency Station.

The Sisseton – or Lake Traverse – Reservation is on the Eastern border of Dakota, adjoining Minnesota from which it is separated in part by Lake Traverse. It lies 300(?) miles west and a little north of St. Paul, and is reached by railway to Brown's Valley, on the East edge of the reservation, or to Wilmot on the South.

The agency and the mission-station are about 14 miles from Brown's valley. The reservation contains 1435 square miles or a million acres, a great part of which is fit for agriculture and grazing. The Indians, numbering 1377, are not in villages but are distibuted on farms, over the country. They dress like whites. Some live in frame houses, others in comfortable log houses. They have horses and oxen, wagons, ploughs, mowers and harvesters. 300 families are engaged in agriculture. 3500 acres of land were cultivated last year, yielding 28,700 bushels of wheat, 11,700 of corn, 36,000 of oats and vegetables, 8,600 tons of hay. Government rations furnished one third of the subsistence of the Indians, and three fifths they procured by labor in civilized pursuits. From fishing and hunting and root gathering, they derived but a small part of their living.

The government holds in trust, from sales of their lands, $98.500, to be paid, not in cash but in providing for educational, agricultural, and general necessities. When the Reservation shall be broken up, every Indian, man, woman and child, may have 160 acres of good land, and 6 townships, or 600,000 acres will remain to be sold.

Of the $80.000, expended by government last year for the Sisseton and Wahpeton and Santee Sioux of Lake Traverse and Devils Lake, $50,000 would be the proportion for the Lake Traverse Indians, About one third of the 1377 can read. Nearly 500 are children, 242 of school age. The births were 38 and the deaths 34, showing a slight natural increase.

Less than one seventh are counted as non Christians. These chiefly live at Wahpay and Lake Traverse, though a few men of influence continue in their polygamy near the agency.

A Protestant Episcopal Church has just been built near the station we have occupied for twenty years - and an Episcopal Mission is begun.

In connection with our Mission - there are 6 churches - including the one at Brown Earth, just South of the reservation, where some of the Indians take farms. - Each church has its native pastor, deacons and elders. S. Schools and Social meetings are flourishing. There is a home missionary Society towards which the women's Sewing Society of the Goodwill Church alone contributed last year $60.21. The Young men's association of this church numbering 13, meet Every Sunday after morning service and depute two of their number to go out, in the afternoon in one direction and hold neighborhood prayer-meetings at every house where the Indians do not come to Church. and one brother to hold an evening service in the Agency hall. Rev. Chas. Crawford visited every church, last winter as a deputation, to awaken interest and raise money for the Home Missionary Society Last winter also. Rev. David Greycloud, pastor of Magasan church, 18 miles distant from Goodwill Station - did Missionary Service at Devil's

Lake, 200 miles north. On his return in his wagon across the country in April, his people crowded the church to welcome him and hear his story, and he found that the S. S. Superintendent and one of the elders had taken turns in preaching in his pulpit during his absence, and that there had been several conversions. These 6 churches have 407 members, which is a larger proportion of the population, than in our civilized communities. Churches and pastors are in formal organic connection with the Presbytery of Dakota, and one of the pastors has been commissioned to the General Assembly of the Presb. Church.

The churches are provided with commodious and substantial meeting-houses, in which they assemble at the ringing of the bells and have their organ voluntary to open the service. They contribute something to self support, and to the various objects of benevolence, which are reported in the Presb. Assembly minutes. The minutes for 1881 ~~credit them with~~ state their contributions as $935. of which $151. is reported as for Foreign Missions. $10. to church erection, $225. to Congregational purposes, and $549 to miscellaneous. (No contributions were received by the Am. Board) They seem to have as much life in themselves and to be as capable of taking care of their own affairs as average churches in the border States.

Education.

The government Industrial boarding School at the Agency when we visited it had 58 pupils, boys and girls, who shewed good proficiency in reading - English wholly - writing, simple arithmetic and geography. The Agent, Major Crissey Expects permission to Erect a new building to accomodate 80 girls, the present building can then accomodate 80 boys. There are several school-houses on the reservation, not now occupied, as the population is not Compact Enough to support a local School. With the abundant funds at its disposal, there is no reason why provision should not be made for the whole 242 children of school age by the government.

The Episcopal mission has not yet opened a School. Our mission School, originally intended to be a training School for teachers and preachers, is now a boarding School for boys and girls. in Charge of Mr. Morris and a lady assistant.

The children are taught both in Dakota and in English. The school at the time of our visit, had 27 scholars, (which is a much larger number than during the previous year. In his report for the school year ending June 1881, Mr. Morris, wrote: "In Oct. 1880, 7 scholars were enrolled, the average was 5. In Dec. 26 were enrolled, average 21. In January, 1881, Feb. and March, about the same. In April, May and June, 30 enrolled, average 15. Of these some have staid but a short time, and a larger number than usual are day scholars." This shows an average enrollment during the year of 25 and of attendance, 16.) An Indian woman has charge of one cottage in which 2 girls and 8 " boys live, and another Indian woman is in charge of another house in which 4 girls and 10 " boys were living. Mr. Morris had three Indian girls in his own family. It is proposed to have established, in connection with each of the Indian churches scattered over the reservation, small schools, to be in charge of an Indian teacher, in which the children can be taught in their own language, so that all shall be able to read the Bible. Such schools may prepare scholars for advanced schools. By granting $40 a year it is thought the Indians will meet the rest of the expense of such a school for 5 months of each year.

The mission has requested that a new building be erected for a girls boarding home. The plan involves two white women in place of the two Indian women now serving, (and a man and wife in charge of the new building, and even more force has been spoken of.

The present condition of the school is far from satisfactory. Some repairs and additions are indespensible to the buildings. Neither the boys nor the girls are adequatly provided for. The school has had, of late years, a small number of pupils. A new and large building for girls may be erected soon by the government, and as there may be changes before long in the relation of the churches here to the American Board, the Committee, do not think it adviseable to erect a new building.)

There are now, a school house, which, after some repairs, will answer its purpose well: a commodious dwelling-house, recently enlarged, and two small cottages. The land designated on the Government Plat at the Agency as assigned to the American Board, is about 20 acres. There is little land under cultivation, and no cows or cattle belonging to the mission. Mr. Morris has his own horses and cows. The Board has no title to the land on which the buildings stand. The meeting-house just finished, with bell and furniture, is not considered mission property.

The missionary force consists of Rev. Dr. S. R. Riggs and wife, Mr. W. K., and Mrs. Martha Riggs Morris, an assistant teacher, also Mrs. John B. Renville, and two Indian matrons. Dr. Riggs residence is Beloit. He spends a few weeks in visiting the reservation each year, and attends the Annual Meetings. He is one of the editors of the Iape Oyae, published at Chicago monthly. This paper partly meets its own expenses. (The grant to the mission annually for literature is $400. Most of which is supposed to be for the paper.

Mrs. Renville is the (white) wife of the Indian pastor of Ascension church, where she at one time taught a school. $300 was requested and appropriated for her last year. We did not learn that she was teaching or had taught for some months.) To the 6 native pastors $100 each has been appropriated. Deducting Dr. Riggs salary of $700. and native pastor's aid of $600., the remaining $1,750. is appropriated to our educational work at Sisseton (27 scholars: 16 average.)

The valuation of mission buildings is $3225.

(The Committee reached Sisseton, by way of Wilmot, Saturday, May 6., and left by Brown's Valley, Wednesday, May 10. Rev. Dr. S. R. Riggs, Mr. and Mrs. Morris and Miss Thompson, assistant teacher, extended to us the hospitalities of the station. We visited the Ascension Church, as well as that at Goodwill, and had interviews with Rev. John B. Renville, Rev. David Greycloud, Rev. Joseph Irondoor and Rev. Charles R. Crawford, pastors of the churches. Redmouth and Little thunder, elders of the Mayasan: church, we also talked with. We had favorable opportunity of seeing the government school, in charge of Mr. Young, and received generous hospitality from Major Charles Crissey, United States Indian Agent, who gave us important information.

Fort Sully Station.

West of the Missouri river and stretching from Nebraska on the South to within 30 miles of Bismarck on the North, a distance of more than 200 miles as the crow flies, and by the river 500 miles, is the great Sioux reservation. It extends from the river, west to the Black Hills, and till within a few years included them. The area is 49,000 square miles or 31,000,000 acres. There are five Indian agencies on the reservation, Standing Rock, the most northern, is assigned to the Roman Catholics; Lower Brulé, Red Cloud (Pine Ridge) Spotted Tail (Rose Bud) and Cheyenne River Agencies are assigned to the Protestant Episcopalians. The Cheyenne River comes in to the Missouri from the Black Hills, so as nearly to divide the reservation north and South. Fort Bennet is a few miles below the mouth of the Cheyenne on the west bank of the Missouri, and Fort Sully is seven miles South of Fort Bennet, and on the East side of the river.

Our mission is among the Blackfeet, Minneconjou Sans arc, and Two Kettle Sioux of Cheyenne River. A number of these Indians have crossed the Missouri, and taken farms--in severalty on Peoria Bottom, 17 miles South of Fort Sully. Peoria Bottom is our central station. It is 15 miles, north of Pierre, from which the stages start for the Black Hills. Pierre is where the Chicago and North-Western R. R. strikes the Missouri River, and is the present western terminus of the road, 780 miles from Chicago.

Connected with the Cheyenne River Agency there are now 3000 Indians, including 1094 hostiles of Sitting Bull's Camp recently received. With a few exceptions they are wild Indians.

There were ploughed last year less than 500 acres, out of the 25,000. acres of their cultivable land. No wheat is reported as raised, 1800 bushels of corn are reported, no oats or barley, a few vegetables, and 2500 tons of hay. They hunt and fish. For furs and robes, they received ~~they received~~ $4000. They own 1,000 horses and 3400 cattle. They hardly earn one tenth of their own living, nine tenths are furnished in government rations.

Our mission work here was begun by Rev. Thos. L. Riggs in 1872. He is now living on Peoria Bottom, where are the Mission-buildings and where ~~is soon to be~~ has just been established a Post-Office Oähe, Hughes Co. Dakota, 15 miles above Pierre and 17 below Ft. Sully as already stated. This Bottom is a beautiful level prairie, rimmed easterly by a ridge which rises sharply from the bottom to a table-land of indefinite breadth, and towards the river has a second bottom of lower land covered with cottonwood and other timber and various shrubs. Peoria Bottom is 10 miles on the river and averages 2 miles in width to the ridge of higher table-land.

The mission buildings consist of a commodious log dwelling and ~~numerous~~ sundry farm buildings. A church, which serves also as school-house, stands close by. Three miles south is a small school-house. The Indians have their farms of 160 acres, 40 rods on the river and one mile back, which ~~amount simply~~ allotment gives them timber and wood lots and wheat-fields.

They live in log-houses, have fenced in their ploughed ground, and are provided with a few cows and cattle, horses and wagons, ploughs and harvesters. There are already some white settlers, who have bought out Indian claims, and the number of such is likely to increase.

The Church of 23 members has its native preachers and officers, its Sunday School, and women's prayer-meeting.

The Sunday we were present, Deacons Spotted-Bear and Yellow-Hawk passed the boxes for the weekly offerings. Yellow-Hawk had finished his three months turn of preaching, the Sunday previous.

The chief responsibility for the religious services is laid upon the Indians, and they seem to take hold very well. They continue to draw their rations and other supplies from the agency at Ft. Bennet, but are making fair progress towards earning their own living. Some of the Church members live on the west side of the Missouri, on the reservation. The church is Congregational, (the only Congregational church in our Indian mission,) and is connected with the Dakota Cong. Association.

The teachers, Miss Collins and Miss Irvine, are engaged in evangelistic work from house to house, besides teaching every forenoon. One has the school in the Chapel, the other saddles and bridles and mounts their pony, and gallops off three miles to the other school-house, where we saw a grand-mother and mother and son and daughter in the same class, learning to read; the women specially ~~learn~~ studying that they may be able to read the Dakota Bible. One week, one teacher takes the distant school, and the next week, the other teacher mounts the pony and goes there.

On the opposite side of the river, a few miles distant, is Chantier Bottom, where Indian teachers, Samuel Hopkins and Mrs Hopkins, have a school and hold religious meetings. On Cheyenne River, some thirty miles from Peoria and across the Missouri, at Minneconjou village, is another out-station, where Isaac Renville and wife and Mrs. Elizabeth Winyan have a school, and maintain religious services. For April the school attendance was 20 girls and 18 boys. A comfortable log-house serves for church and school house, and has rooms in which the Indian ministers and teachers live, and where Mr. Rigss, and where Miss Irvine or Miss Collins make their head-quarters, as by turns, they spend a few weeks in evangelistic labor in the villages. Mr. Renville's salary is paid by the Dakota Native Missionary Society; the other expenses of the out-station are met by ~~the~~ our Board. At Sans Arc, a village of 34 tepees, a few miles above, where are 63 children of school age, Samuel Smiley has a school, also in the native tongue. The attendance for April was 23 girls and 27 boys. He uses a rented house for dwelling and for school and church services.

The Two Kettle village, a little beyond, needs a school, and as soon as a teacher can be found, one should be established.

The Protestant Episcopal Mission station is near the mouth of Cheyenne River, where is a church and boarding school. (We were unable to visit this station.) The working force comprises 2 ministers and teachers, 2 female teachers, and 2 Indian assistants.

The government boarding school for boys, in charge of the wife of the Agent, Mrs. Love, assisted by Miss. Chevalier (we had the pleasure of seeing, and we received generous hospitality from Major Love.) There were 20 boys in the school, who manifested remarkable proficiency in learning English. They are taught only in English.

The children of school age, on the reservation not counting the new comers of the "Hostiles", number 335. The total ~~average~~ number in our Station Schools reported for 1881 was 106 ~~39~~. ~~The total number in attendance is not reported.~~ In the boarding and day schools of the government, and of both the missions, an attendance for at least one month is reported of 170 scholars. We were assured, by the Agent, that a boarding school to accomodate 50 boys will be immediatly provided at the Agency.

There is evidently work enough for both the Missionary Societies among these wild Indians on the Cheyenne, and at Standing Rock Agency, higher up the Missouri, where the Roman Catholic Benedictines are in charge of the government schools, under a Father and 2 sisters, and also have schools of their own, under a priest, 4 lay brothers and 4 lay sisters: but ~~[illegible]~~ there is no Protestant instruction. While it is to be hoped that the government will Enlarge its school work, the religious organizations should put forth new Efforts.

The teachers at Peoria Bottom wish to open a small ~~girl's~~ Home in which to receive girls ~~scholars~~, not from the Bottom, but from the Minnecanjou and Sans Arc and other distant villages. The girls who come to the Home, would be taught with the Peoria Bottom Scholars, in the present school-house. Miss Collins and Miss Irvine think they can manage a Home for 12 or 15 girls, with very small expense. The Committee asked Mr. Riggs to prepare a plan with careful estimates of the cost of such a Home. Another Missionary family should be provided to be stationed at present at Peoria Bottom, and to be gaining the language and getting hold of the work. (The Board has no title to the land on which Mission buildings at Oe"ha stand. Rev. Thos. L. Riggs entered the claim at the government office, and holds it in his own name. The Com. could make no arrangement to secure a title: but this needs to be done before any new building is Erected)

Fort Berthold Station.

In 1876 mission-work was begun at Fort Berthold among the Indians there who are not Sioux, but Arickarees, Gros Ventres and Mandans. These three bands of broken tribes have been living for many years in one village, for mutual protection against their old Enemy, the Sioux. The Gros Ventres who number 445, and Mandans, who number 223, have many things in common; the Rees, who number 678, are not on good terms with the other two tribes.

The reservation is in the north-western part of Dakota, not far from the British Possessions. It has an area of 4550 square miles, 2,900,000 acres, on both sides of the Missouri. 50,000 acres of the land are reported tillable, but it has not been surveyed, and the Indians are huddled together near the Agency. Fort Berthold is not a military station, but was a trading-post of the American Fur Company. Fort Stephenson, 17 miles down the Missouri, and Ft. Buford 100 miles & more up the river, are army posts. The Indians are in their heathen degradation. The Mandan oval lodges are covered with Earth on which grass grows, as Catlin pictured them fifty years ago. Poles with bits of cloth, fur, and similar charms against Evil, project above the buffalo skulls on the conical roofs. Over the medicine lodge a Sioux Scalp was dangling. Some three hundred of the Indians dress in part like whites. A few gather at Ft. Buford and Elsewhere, but they chiefly live in this village, where the accumulation of filth for twenty-five years partly Explains a death rate of 82 deaths to 26 births, last year. The Indians have 1000. acres under cultivation, with the assistance of the agent, and raised last year some wheat, 3500 bushels of corn, 5000. of oats and vegetables, and 500 tons of hay. They have 800 horses, but only 78 cattle. They sold robes and furs to the value of $2800. For 70 per. cent of their living they depend upon government rations. The government appropriation in 1881 for these 1346 Indians was $50.000. For their Education there was expended by the government $1600. There are no boarding-schools, only the agency day-

School, and that of our mission. The number who can read is reported to be 50.

Rev. Chas. L. Hall began work here, and has faithfully labored on amidst great discouragements. He has been sorely bereaved & the mission has been greatly weakened by the death of his wife. Miss. Ward and Miss. Pike are assistant missionaries. The mission-dwelling stands on a pleasant bluff, where is a view for miles up and down the river. Near by is the chapel, which also serves as a school-house. The squalid Indian village is a quarter of a mile distant, and the Agency buildings are a mile ~~off~~ in the opposite direction. The missionaries have been learning the three languages, and teaching in them to some extent. The Mandan and Gros Ventres languages are somewhat alike, and scholars of those tribes are classed together. For the future it is proposed to teach all in English only. The temptations of the idle village life make it impossible to secure regularity of attendance. Scholars come and go as they will, with no parental constraint or restraint. Religious services are held regularly, and while no church has yet been gathered, the missionaries believe there have been some conversions. The teachers go into the homes of the pagans and use various means to win them.

Two hundred miles east of Ft. Berthold is Devils' Lake, where are many Sioux who have taken farms, and who desire schools and Protestant preaching. Mr. Hall has oversight of this field, also, and has organized a church of 15 members, to which David Greycloud, Pastor of the Mayasan, (Sisseton) church ministered, last winter.

Fort Berthold is a difficult field, but one which strongly appeals to Christian commiseration ~~pity~~. In no distant heathen community is there greater need of making known the gospel. As soon as another suitable missionary family can be found, our friends who are toiling here should be reinforced.

The Indian agent, Major Kauffman, is kindly disposed to the mission. It is hoped the government will undertake more in the direction of Education; this has not received so much attention as the agricultural and industrial work of the agency.

Ft. Berthold is reached by the way of St. Paul and the Northern Pacific R. R. to Bismark, on the upper Missouri. (From Bismarck there is transportation for some months of the year in steamboats. We found no boats going at the right time for us, and made the journey in an open wagon more than 180 miles up and down from Bismarck. We left Bismarck, Monday morning, May 15. and reached it again, Friday evening. For the 17 miles between Ft. Stevenson and the Agency there was no house or ranch or hut, and even the telegraph wires to Ft. Buford turn away without touching Fort Berthold.)

The valuation of the mission buildings is $3200. As on other reservations, the Board has no title to the land occupied, but holds it as an allotment by the government, with formal written consent of the Indians.

The Poncas.

At the Santee Agency, Wednesday, April 26, a deputation of Poncas called upon the visiting Committee. Standing Bear, Buffalo Chip, Smoke Maker, Yellow Wolf, and others represented that they were suffering for want of due provision from the government, and asked that a school might be established among them.

The Poncas live about 38 miles from the Santee Agency. They number according to Standing Bear, 170. They are under charge of the Santee Agent, who furnishes them from government appropriations. The number of School-children is about 25. There had been twelve Ponca children in the agency school, as has been stated, but they had left just before our visit; it was said because their parents were going back to the Indian Territory. There is abundant room in the several schools at Santee for the Ponca children.

The agent says the government will build a school-house for them, if they remain where they are. It is also understood that the Presbyterian Board is proposing to take care

6

of them. The Chiefs were informed that in view of these facts, the American Board would not be justified in opening a ~~mission~~ Station.

Remarks and Suggestions.

1. The Visiting Committee was instructed to make particular inquiry as to the state of the churches, and the religious condition of the Indians. As will be seen from the accounts already given, the Indians at Santee and Sisseton differ very widely from those at Fort Sully and Fort Berthold. The former may fairly be regarded as Christian communities. A great change has been wrought, by the blessing of God, upon the labors of faithful missionaries. Less than fifty years ago these Indians were as fierce and intractable, as closely wedded to their heathen practices, as hostile to civilization and christianity as Sitting Bull and his followers are now. The results already reached, are not only occasions for gratitude to God, but for renewed efforts in behalf of the Indians yet in their savage degradation. A larger proportion of the Santees and Sissetons are church members than is the case in the adjacent white communities. The churches are thoroughly organized, and have formal relations with the Presbyterian Church ~~of~~ in the United States. They seem to require, and they receive the same, but perhaps no more oversight and no more pecuniary assistance than Home Missionary churches along side of them. They do not seem to be

any longer proper objects of our Board of Foreign Missions. When the Cherokees had reached a similar condition in 1860, the Board ceased its care and responsibility for them. These Indian churches at Santee and at Sisseton still need encouragement and Christian fellowship and some pecuniary aid. If they were Congregational churches, the American Home Missionary Society might be asked to do what is necessary for them. In 1866, as has been said, the Seneca Indian church on the Alleghany reservation, being "sufficiently advanced in Christian knowledge, to pass from the care of a foreign missionary, to that of a home missionary society", was relinquished by the American Board, and received under care of the American Home Missionary Society. As these churches are all Presbyterian, it seems proper to call the attention of the Presbyterian Boards to them, and suggest that they take them in charge. In case any transfer should be made of the Santee and Sisseton churches to the Presbyterian Board, the Committee suggest that Rev. Dr. S. R. Riggs, in view of his long services, be continued at his present salary, and requested to do such work as he is able to, in connection with the Fort Sully station, (where he relieved his son, Rev. Thos. L. Riggs, for a
2 few months not very long ago,) or in any other part of

the Indian mission.

(The appropriations for Sisseton for 1882, including $700. salary of Dr. Riggs, was $3050., of which $600. was for native pastors and $300. for Mrs. Renville. The appropriation for Santee was, for native pastor's aid $150. For all other purposes, $8,150. Besides there was a balance for 1881, of $1242.90. One hundred dollars a year is also allowed, to Rev. A. L. Riggs for the education of his son.

By transferring these churches and schools to the Presbyterian Board, the amount of property transferred would be something near $25000: the annual charge from which we should be releived would be about $10,000.)

In the regions of Cheyenne River and of Fort Berthold, the Indians are, for the most part, in pagan degradation, and these regions still seem proper fields for our missionaries. Between the Cheyenne River and Fort Berthold, is Standing Rock Agency, and east of Fort Berthold is Devil's Lake Agency, where are Roman Catholic missions; in both these fields our missionaries are needed, as no other Protestant Society proposes to work in them. Standing Rock has in

3 fact been occupied for a few months by a native

preacher. At Devil's Lake there are Protestant Indians who went from our Sisseton station. Work has already been commenced, and a church formed.

2. Among the other bands of the Sioux, the American Board does not appear to be called to labor. The Presbyterian, the Protestant Episcopal, and the Methodist Episcopal churches have had the Agencies assigned to them, and have formally undertaken to sustain missions in them. It may be that at some Agencies the work is not pressed vigorously by these Societies; but for us to go to them would be considered an intrusion. If we were to begin, we should at once meet with rivalry.

3. The Committee was instructed to ascertain "how far the Santee Normal Training School is accomplishing the purpose for which it was instituted as a Training School for teachers and preachers, and whether anything need be done to make it more effective".

The account of the school already given, answers these questions in part. As has been said, there were no scholars in special preparation for the ministry, or for teaching, and none, so far as we

4 could learn, having these objects in view, though

it is hoped some of them may. The school has no course of study upon which pupils begin at their admission and which they pursue, and after finishing it, graduate. Individual teachers seem to be painstaking, but they labor at a disadvantage for lack of the classification of scholars which is found to be indispensible in schools for white children. (It is something more than a misfortune that the school bears such a name. We are holding forth to the public, and professing to do what we are not doing, and do not seem to be planning to do. In the Missionary Herald for July 1878, we published an article by Rev. A. L. Riggs, in which we say;-"Our plan comprises something of the Academy, the Normal School, and the Theological Seminary, together with more or less of industrial training..... In all this region this school stands unequalled by any other, whether it be of the government, or of any missionary society." These and similar statements, have given the impression that the Board has an Indian Normal Training and Theological School. In fact we are training teachers and training ministers hardly

5 more than a primary school is training them.

It is very painful to say this, but we must see things as they are.) As a boarding school for Indian children, a fair measure of success has been attained, but for the best results, and especially in the interest of economy, changes are necessary. The number of teachers and others is out of proportion to the number of scholars and to the instruction given. It is a waste of force to have so many, and such well educated and devoted men and women spending their time in a school of this character. As a boarding-school, where chiefly primary instruction is given, everything is on an extravagant scale.

The Committee made inquiries as to the industrial training of scholars. (In 1874 an attempt was made to teach weaving. The loom now lies in the lumber garret. Later it was proposed to teach broom-making, and a quantity of broom corn was raised, and is still in the garret. In response for a request for permission to procure machinery for broom making, the Prudential Committee asked for specifications and estimates; these have not been furnished, and the matter seems to have been dropped. Shoemaking has been undertaken within the last year or

6 two.) The Committee think more might be done,

and they trust that more will be done, for the training of girls in practical housekeeping, cooking and sewing, by having them do more work of this kind in the Homes; and that more will be done for the boys in farm work, by setting them to work more systematically.

In response to the inquiry of the Committee whether the government agency work-shops could be used for other training in mechanic trades, a decided negative was given by one of the missionaries. It appears, however, from an article by Rev. A. L. Riggs in the Missionary Herald for July 1878, that some of the pupils, then at Santee were from the "apprentices at the government shops." As those who were engaged in the government shops were received as pupils in the school, it would seem practicable to have pupils, of the school trained in the government shops.

The possibility, suggested by the Committee, of placing Indians with Christian farmers and mechanics in Iowa and Ill., was not received with any more favor by Mr. Riggs.

On the other hand, the Visiting Committee
7 do not think it advisable to pay a large salary

to the Scandinavian shoemaker for anything he can teach Indian boys under the circumstances. If shoemaking and harnessmaking are to be taught, the conditions must be more favorable.

Many of the pupils, as will be seen, come from outside of our mission fields. Of course, with a large corps of teachers, and numerous buildings, it is desirable to have as many scholars as possible. One Indian child needs teaching as much as another, and all may be welcomed. But here are scholars from Presbyterian, Episcopal and other mission fields. If our school is to be used for their scholars, and they be saved the expense of maintaining a boarding-school, why should not those missions join us in meeting a proportionate part of the expense of this institution?

In 1877 Mr. Riggs wrote:- "The expenses of 11 from the Yankton Agency are paid by the Presbyterian Board." Our Treasurer has no record of this money, and no account has been made of any money received since. But in answer to an inquiry Mr. Riggs wrote, Feb. 24, 1882, that he had received "from Rev. J. P. Williamson, for the support
8 of pupils in this school, in 1874, $100.; in 1875, $100.;

in 1876, $130.; in 1877, $174.90; in 1878, $150.; in 1879, $119.29; in 1880, $200. less travelling expenses of pupils. It would have been more orderly had I reported this to the Treasury of the Board and revised my estimates accordingly. As it has been, the yearly estimates have been less by $150., and then by $200. than they would have been if these contributions had not been relied upon. And so now for the current year, if $200. is paid in and reported, I shall have to ask for a grant of the same, or else not report it. I understand from Mr. Williamson that sum is appropriated for the year 1882."

A part of the expense for scholars is for their board and clothing. The government rations and clothing do not suffice; something must be added from outside. It is this expense, as is understood, that Mr. Williamson has proposed to meet. In 1880-'81 there were 13 from Presbyterian stations at Santee. The $200. allowed is less than $16. for each of these, which is not two thirds of what it costs to board and clothe them. Actually, the cost per scholar, for salaries of teachers and incidentals, was between $90. and $100., not including interest on

9 the $25,000. which the buildings cost. Instead of

$200. the 13 Presbyterian scholars cost the school more than $1200. There seems to be no reason why this should not be paid by the Presbyterian Board, instead of by the American Board. The Visiting Committee, however, did not succeed in convincing Mr. Riggs of this. The Committee suggest that this matter should not be left with the missionary in charge to arrange as heretofore; and that if scholars are to be received from the Presbyterian mission, the Presbyterian Board be requested to meet an equitable proportion of the expense.

What should be done with the school now, it is not easy to suggest. The missionaries at our other stations say it is ~~not~~ too far to send scholars to Santee. From Sissiton, as has been said, there were none present: a boarding school for girls is asked for there, and at Peoria Bottom. We found three scholars at Santee from Peoria Bottom, and eight from Ft. Berthold. Practically, the school is to find its scholars for the most part from the neighborhood. It is very much too large and too costly, however, for a local school.

By the appointment of a Treasurer, though temporarily the expenses may be increased, ultimately, doubtless, they will be reduced. Three teachers

10

in the school room where now there are five ought to be enough, it would seem, for 90 scholars pursuing such studies.

Can the school become a training school for teachers and ministers? Twelve years have elapsed since it was started for this specific purpose. (Mr. Riggs has carried out his own plans, as to construction of buildings and as to instruction, and large appropriations have been granted.) Since in this time the school has only become what we find it now to be, we need not anticipate that it will become such a school as was expected and needed. We can only hope for a good boarding school for Indian children. Those who are to be teachers and preachers must be instructed in other institutions. (In spite of obvious disadvantages, this is now the most hopeful method of providing well taught Indian ministers. In case the Presbyterian Board assumes the work at Santee, they should of course take the school.

4. As to the title to the lands occupied by mission buildings, the Committee suggest that the Treasurer of the mission be instructed to do what may be practicable to secure a valid title as soon as it can be done. For the lands at Peoria Bottom an arrange- 11

ment should be made with Rev. Thomas L. Riggs. Mr. Riggs wrote March 18, 1880: "The land on which our mission buildings stand I have entered as my preemption. Will the Board wish to have entire control of the land - that is, when I make final proof (I can do it at any time now) would you care to have me convey title to the Board, and would you wish to make good to me my cash expenditures incurred thereby? There are 165+ acres in the tract which at government price ($1.25 per acre) and other expenses of final proof, will amount to about $250. or some less probably. I shall prove up and pay up some time the ensuing summer." - Oct. 27, 1880, Dr. Clark informed him, "the item in yours of March 8th, relating to the title to the land on which our buildings stand, was brought to the notice of the Committee yesterday. They favor your conveying the title to the Board, or holding it in your own name as trustee for the Board - whichever form is most convenient for the object - and they will advance you the amount - about $250. as we understand - which you have paid for it, or may pay to secure the title in due form."

12 Mr. Riggs afterward declined to do as was

proposed, and took and holds the title in his own name.

5. The Committee as instructed called attention to the necessity of providing for due oversight of receipts and expenditures, and of having all business conducted in accordance with the Regulations for Mission Treasurers. They found that at Santee and at Ft. Sully no regular Mission treasury books had been kept. Conference was had with Mr. Joseph Steer who has since been appointed assistant missionary, and designated Treasurer of the Mission and of the Santee station, in regard to methods of pecuniary management; and hereafter all the accounts are to be duly audited.

6. The Visiting Committee also called attention to various other particulars indicated in the letter of instructions, and made general inquiries with regard to the state and needs of the Indian work.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

A. C. Thompson
Boston, July 11, 1882. Charles C. Burr.
John O. Means.

May 30. 1882

The Com. deputed by vote of the Prud. Com. to visit the Dakota Mission ask leave to make verbal statements at the present time & to present a written report hereafter.

April 18 we left ~~Boston~~ Boston & reached ~~here~~ ~~Boston~~ the City in on return, ~~May~~ Mr Burr, on May 26. Dr Thompson May 27 & Stanley Means May 28. We were carried prosperously in all our journeys, had no accidents & few detentions, were preserved in uninterrupted health ~~& strength~~, & experienced fewer discomforts & had greater enjoyments than were anticipated: for all which we give humble & hearty thanks to our Heavenly Father.

On reaching Chicago we proceeded to Yankton, Dakota, where Rev. Jos Ward extended to us most generous hospitality. Mr Ward kindly acceded to the invitation of the Prud. Com. & accompanied us to Santee & assisted materially in our general consultations with the missionaries ~~& others, & with~~ those in our ~~[illegible]~~ private counsels. ~~There~~ We wish to put on record our appreciation of his most valuable services. Very pressing duties connected with Yankton College made it impossible for him to accompany us to Ft Sully, to Sisseton, & to Ft Berthold, which we visited in their order after leaving Santee.

In Chicago, ~~before visiting~~ on our way to the Mission ~~Station~~ field & again on our return ~~from them~~, we had long & important Conferences with the ladies of the Woman's Board of the Interior. Mrs Dr A. C. Thompson, of the Ex. Com. of the Woman's Board, Boston, who was one of our Company & who took ~~an active part &~~ a full share in our observations & consultations at the ~~several~~ mission Stations, brought us into more confidential relations, than otherwise might have been possible, with the Christian women ~~there~~ in the Mission field as well as with our friends at Chicago.

In our Instructions our attention was called to the several particulars (1.) of the State of the Churches, (2) of the Schools in general & of the normal Training School in particular, (3) of the buildings & other property & the business management, & (4) of the ~~several~~ separate Stations specifically & of ~~the~~ missionary force at each Station.

I. In speaking of the state of the Churches & of the religious condition of the Indians, attention must be called to the fact that the Indians on the Santee & those on the Sisseton Reservations differ from the Indians at Ft Sully & those at Ft Berthold very widely. The former may be called Christian communities while the others are thoroughly pagan.

1. at Santee, on a tract of land about 12 by 15 miles square are 767 Indians. Of whom probably not more than 350 are over 21 yrs of age. The Episcopalians have Churches & ministers & number not a few communicants. We have a Church, the Pilgrim Church, on our Mission premises & a Chapel at Bazile Creek 14 miles distant. There is an Indian pastor, deacons, elders & other Ch. officers. S. Schools & social meetings, women's meetings & missionary societies are sustained. Mr Riggs who sh^d know all the Indians knows of only 6 adults on the reservation who are not members of some Church. It was said that a copy of the Dakota Bible would be found in every family & some one who could read it. The Pilgrim Church, ~~with its~~ 170 members, with its Pastor

& elders is in formal & organic connection with the Presbytery of Dakota, is duly represented in Synod & in the Genl assembly of the Pres. Ch. of the U.S. & holds the same relations, has ~~all the~~ the same rights, privileges & responsibilities as the other Pres. Churches of ~~the~~ territory.

2. At Sisseton, in the ~~[illegible]~~ tract of land of 1433 square ~~which is~~ miles ~~in one direction & in another~~, comprising a million of acres, exclusively reserved, there reported to be 1377 Indians. All dress like whites, though 200 are counted (D.R.) as pagans. Some of these comprising leading Indians are scattered among the Christian Indians while the larger number of the pagans live at Wah-pay & at Lake Laverse. The Indians live many of them in frame houses & others in quite substantial log houses. They have 3500 acres of land under cultivation. There are 6 Churches, with Indian pastors, ~~& elders~~ & other officers, with S.S. organizations, & Young men's associations doing evangelistic work, women's prayer meetings & missionary Societies. ~~of~~ the adult Indians Christian & pagan number probably less than 900. Dr Riggs reckons the pagans as 200, leaving 700 belonging to

Sisseton Reservation: border of Dak. & Minn. W. of St. Paul miles north 1.435 .. 918.780. acres. 14 000 tillable(?) 3.512 cultivated
wheat 28.700 b. corn 11.700, oats & vegetables 36.000 b. hay.
8.600 tons, horses 250, cattle 586. 1/3 subsistence from govt
rations, 60 p. ct. from labor in civ. pursuits

1.066 Dev. L.
Pop. 1.377. all dressed like whites, 300 families engaged in agricult.
242 children. Exp. by govt & by relig. Societies for Ed. $5000.
423 can read .. births 38 deaths 84.
appropriation 1881. $80.000. 50.000 Sissetons?
8

the Christian communities. Our 6 Churches report 407 members.

These results, at Sisseton & at Santee, of the labors & prayers of the missionaries of the Board are most gratifying. It is ~~most~~ cheering to find the Indian Christians doing good work, while much remains to be done. It does not seem that these communities should longer be regarded as proper ~~objects~~ fields for Foreign Mission labor.

The Churches, pastors & elders, at Sisseton, like those at Santee are in ~~formal &~~ organic relation with the Presb. of Dakota & some of the ministers have been constituent members of the Genl Assembly of the Presb. Ch. of the U.S.

3. At our other two Mission Stations the religious condition is very different. There is a small Church at Peoria Bottom of 23 members doing good service. Isaac Renville, who teaches a native school at the Minneconjou village on Cheyenne River 40 miles distant, also preaches Sundays & has other religious meetings. So also does Samuel Smiley, an Indian teacher at Sans Arc village, 7 miles from

Cheyenne River Agency. 1901. + 1094. white 87. 0. 44. boys school of 20. Soon to be another house for West. of Miss. from Nebraska to about 30 m. south of Bismarck the Great Sioux Reservation of 49000 sq. miles, 31.400.000 acres. back to the Black Hills.

L. Renville. ~~And~~ To the 1900 Indians on the Cheyenne River Reservation have just been ~~are~~ added 1094 hostiles from Sitting Bull's Camp, recently captured; they reached the Agency while we were there. Thus there are about 3000 Indians in wild, savage paganism, among whom the missionaries here are called to labor.

At Fort Berthold the paganism is not less than at Ft Sully: & as yet no Indians have been organized into a Church. There is crying need of missionary work at these the northern stations. These are proper Foreign missionary fields

On the whole, the religious condition of the ~~the~~ southern stations is better, ~~than was anticipated by the Com~~; the religious state ~~[illegible]~~ of the the northern fields is more deplorable, & the need of Christian evangelisation is more pressing, than was anticipated by the Com-

Fort Berthold . N West part of Dakota.

Arickarees 678 } 26 births, 82 deaths.
Gros Ventres 445 } 320 wholly or in part dress like whites.
Mandans 223 } Children 150(?)
1346 No boardg school . . All Indians
live at agency: a few away at Ft Buford.

Expended for Education, total $2000. 80 Indians read.
4550 sq. miles
Acres in res. 2.912.000 . - tillable 50.000 - ploughed 1000.
3500 b. corn, 5000 oats & vegetables, 500 tons hay. robes & furs $2800
800 horses, 78 cattle . 20 per ct. living by civ. pursuits 70 rations
appropriation 1881, $50.000.

II. As to the Schools, the Com. was instructed to inquire (1) whether there is or may be a school under Indian teachers connected with each Church: (2) as to the organization of the Schools & the character of the instruction, especially as to the religious teaching.

1. At Ft Berthold "a small school, now mainly taught by Miss Ward. Attendance "irregular. Peculiar difficulties. Religious instruction prominent. Evangelistic spirit & efforts of all the missionaries.

Something more needed: possible with another missionary family.

Govt School not what it ought to be, & not likely to become such. We shd do something at once.

2. At Peoria Bottom two schools, one in the Ch. & one 3 miles distant. At Cheyenne River 2 Schools in the Villages with Indian teachers. Scholars in these Station Schools taught mere rudiments of readg, writing geography & arithmetic.

Girls Boardg School needed at Peoria Bottom.

Poncas: about ~~20~~ 175 souls in all, on the Niobrara River 25 children of school age

3. At Sisseton a small boardg school for boys & girls. Not satisfactory.
Request for a girls school: not to be undertaken in view (1) of Gov't possibilities: —
(2) Mr Morris incapacity
(3) Presb. possibility.

4. At Santee is the Normal Training School.
Not in any just sense what it is named & what it was intended to be. No scholars in preparation for teaching or preaching.
It is simply a boardg school for boys & girls, doing fairly well, with disproportionate number of teachers & other workers & of expenses.
Not well planned & not well managed.
Individual teachers excellent: Mr Robbins, Miss Ilsley. (Miss Elisan. Eli Abraham)
As a boardg school needs reorganisation & reinvigorating. Of doubtful expediency for our Board: but cannot be dropt, at present: must make the best of it now.
Boys Cottage 18. (had 19.) Young men's Home 20 = 38
Dak. Home 17 (had 19) Bird's Nest 15 32
70.
Gov't School 39 (had 12 Poncas more)
Epis. School 39 girls in charge of 4 ladies.

III. Of the Buildings & other property & business arrangements. (Mr Burr speak)

1. Santee
2. Sisseton
3. Ft Sully.
4. Ft Berthold

IV. Of the Several Stations

1. Santee. Business matters need to be placed on a different footing & in other hands. No separate accts have been kept by Mr Riggs. — Mr Steer may be the man. Work & authority distinctly assigned to him. Institution can go on with Mr Steer & Mr Robbins & the other teachers.

Industrial — Shoemaker &c. Continued as [illegible]

Mr Steer may need ~~p~~rooms in for lodgings.

Miss Paxson to leave.

IV. 2. Sisseton. — No new School. Church Schools may be established, for $40. each from the Board.

Money to come to Sisseton from Govt.

Repairs on School house. — Miss Thompson's place to be supplied by Mrs Morris.

3. Ft Sully. –

Improved condition of the mis. No cause for the trouble of lady teachers. Great work to be done. – New School pupils. –

New family – Mr Bissell?

# Miss Irvine & Miss Collins to have vacation & have $150. allowed. T. L. Riggs allowance for money paid by his interpreter

Day schools like Smiley's to be opened, if possible, in upper villages on Cheyenne.

Little Eagle to be second.

T. L. Riggs's resignation

4. Ft Berthold. work organized May 1876.

New Miss'y needed. Mr Case.

House for him & for a few boys, in due time.

Miss Ward & Mr Hale to have vacation.

(His letter just read)

V. General.

Thanks to Rev. Jos. Ward

Delegation of Omahas & their request.

Transfer to Presb. Home Miss. Board the stations of Santee & Sisseton. Open negotiations at once.

1.

Preliminary Report of
Deputation of Dakota
Mission. May 30. 1882.

Letters and other documents

addressed to the Board.

Vol. 245.

Ojibwa, Pawnee, and Stockbridge

Missions.

1844 – 1859.

Ojibwa Mission.

General affairs of the Mission.

Transactions at a meeting, held Sept. 13. 1848 1
Letter of Rev. D. Greene respecting Ojibwa mission property 2
Report of the mission, 1850 3
Report of the School at Lapointe, 1852 5
Transactions with and by the U. S. Govt. & its agents 6. 9. 10. 13–18. 89.
Certificates of location, & their assignment to A. B. C. F. M. 17
Letter from Thomas Skye, a converted Ojibwa 8
Letter from Henry Blatchford to Rev. L. H. Wheeler 12

Letters from Rev. S. G. Clark, of Brooklyn. Ohio 19–24

Letters from individual missionaries.

Ayer. Frederic, 1844–1848, 25–36
Boutwell, William T. 1845–1847, 37–45
Ely. Edmund F. 1845–1849, 46–55
Hall, Sherman, 1844–1856, 4, 56–149
    Journal of a tour on the Upper Mississippi, 1850. 91
    Report of the Station at Lapointe, 1851, 1852 99. 111
    Mr. Hall to J. S. Watrous, government agent 114
    Indian manual labor school 114–124. 127, &c.
Hall, Sherman & W. T. Boutwell, 1846, 40
Pulsifer, Charles, 1849–1859. 150–182
Spooner, Abby, 1847–1859. 183–191
Miner, D. Irenaeus, 1859. ~~192~~ 192
Sproat, Greenville T. 1844–1846 193–197

Wheeler, Leonard H. 1844-1859.	199-273
L. H. Wheeler to B. Thompson	224, 226
Wheeler, Mrs. Harriet, 1851.	215

From individuals, not missionaries.

Welton, J. T.	198
Hays, James P.	200
Watrous, John S.	225
Austrian, J. to L. H. Wheeler & Austrian's advertisement	242, 243
Plan of J. Austrian's Purchase	244
Plan of the Mission Claim	255, 261.
Application of Geo. N. Smith to be recd. as a missionary	258
Ellis, Edwin (M. D.) medical statement in regard to Mrs. Wheeler	272
Hall, Edward (M. D.) do. do do.	274
Spooner, Abby, her accounts with U.S. as teacher	85

Pawnee Mission.

Allis, Samuel, 1844–1849, 275–279
Dunbar, John, 1844–1849, 280–289
Ranney, Timothy E. 1844, 290–292
☞ For other letters of Mr. Ranney, see vol. 239, lettered "Cherokees, Vol. II." }.

Mackinaw Mission.

"Remarks of Rev. David Greene, in reference to an expected grant of land at Mackinaw 293
Power of attorney from A.B.C.F.M. to R. Stuart & others 294

Stockbridge Mission.

Marsh, Cutting, 1845–1849, 295–318
  Mr. Marsh to the Society in Scotland &c. 314
  D. Butler to Mr. Marsh 309
Slingerland, Jeremiah, native preacher, 319–322
  From the Sachem, chiefs, & Headmen of the tribe, 323, 324

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (1-4)

Ojibwa Mission
  1. 13 September 1848
Greene, David
  2. 2 May 1850
Report of the Mission
  3. [1850]
Hall, S.
  4. 2 August 1850

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Meeting of the Brethren Sept. 13. 1848.

Present. Hall, Wheeler, & Ely.

Expences. The secular affairs of the Lapointe & Bad River stations were discussed at length, & the following estimates agreed to — Viz

La Pointe	Br. Hall's family	$ 550.	
	" Ely's — "	425.	
	" H. Blatchford's "	290.	
	School	25.	
	Medicines	6.	$ 1296.00
Bad River.	Br. Wheeler's family	514.	
	School	30.	
	Medicines	6.	550.00
			$ 1846.00

H. Blatchford. The question of the expediency of setting apart Henry Blatchford as a Native Preacher, was considered. & thought to be inadvisable in his present disabled condition.

Miss. Spooner. It is judged, for various reasons, (relating to her peculiarities,) that ~~she~~ Miss Spooner had not better return as Teacher.

Br. Hall was requested to explain this matter to the Prud. Com.

Schools. Shall there be two schools sustained at Lapointe? We think the question cannot be judiciously settled at the present, but respectfully suggest to the Prud. Com. the propriety of having a Teacher in view, in case one is needed next season.

Indians. The corrupting influence of the Inland Indians, on those of the Lake — The influence of the Payments — were subjects which occupied the attention of the Brethren.

It was thought important to call together those of the Indians of this band, under our influence, & present to them some plan for their temporal improvement.

Minutes of the Ojibwa Mission.
Sept. 13. 1848

Rec'd Oct. 23.
Ack'd March 20.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston.

2

Westborough, 2d May, 1850.

My Dear Sir,

Yours of yesterday came to hand this morning. By your letter to Dana I learned that you were about to sail for Europe. May you receive from the voyage & the relaxation all the benefit to your health & which you hope for, & become, in other respects, better prepared for future labors, by what you may see & learn during your absence. Who takes your work while you are away?

As to the Ojibwa Mission property, I do not know enough of the facts to say what claim the Board have on the U.S. government for compensation for what must be sacrificed by the removal of the Indians. In the case of the Cherokees, Choctaws, Osages, New-York Indians & the Stockbridges on their removal from Fox river to Lake Winnebago, provision was expressly made in the treaty according to which they were removed, that the Board should be paid for the mission property, i.e., buildings & improvements on land, which the missionaries left; this condition being added, that the sum thus paid to the Board should be expended for similar improvements among the same Indians after their removal. If the treaty with the Ojibwas was negotiated in their country & our missionaries were aware of what was in progress, they should have taken pains to have had an article providing for compensation to the Board inserted in the treaty. If no such article has been inserted, I suppose the

Board has no formal claim & no security that such a claim will be allowed. Still, I think the subject should be laid before the Indian Department at Washington, with a statement respecting what has been done in previous similar cases. The reasonableness of the thing should also be shown, the Board, by its missionaries, having entered the Ojibwa country & expended considerable sums of money there with the sanction & encouragement of the U.S. government & with the presumption that Indians so remote as the Ojibwas would remain in their country unmolested, & the missionaries be permitted to labor permanently among them. How far the fact that the Ojibwas value the labors of the missionaries little or not at all, & have not, apparently, derived much advantage from them," may affect the views of the government in relation to compensating the Board, or encouraging it to continue the mission, I do not know. There can be no harm in making the application to the government, & making it as strong as you expected to gain your point. If you can secure the aid of some real friend to the Board in Congress to second personally the claim of the Board success will be the more probable.

This is all I think of to say about the Ojibwa matter. If Robert Stuart were living, it would be easy to accomplish your object. Possibly Mr. Cass, if rightly approached might give his influence in favor of the Board, though I should dislike to ask such a man for it.

~~& t~~ With Christian regard to Mrs. Treat, I remain affectionately & truly yours.

D. Greene.

Rev. David Greene
Boston Feb. 1850
Rec'd May 3.
On Gov't. [illegible]
[illegible]

Mission to the Ojibwas.

La Pointe— Sherman Hall, Missionary; Charles Pulsifer, Teacher; Mrs Betsey P. Hall, Mrs Hannah Pulsifer; Henry Blatchford, Native Catechist.
Bad River— Leonard H Wheeler, Missionary; Mrs Harriet W. Wheeler.
2 Stations; 2 missionaries, 1 male and 3 female assistant missionaries; 1 native catechist— total 7.

No material change has occurred in the labors or general method of conducting the mission during the past year. The missionaries have endeavoured to keep before their minds constantly, that their primary object should be to preach the gospel to all who are willing to hear it, and to urge its claims upon the conscience and attention of all, so far as they are able, since this is the appointed means of salvation for sinful men. After that to do what else can be done for the moral, intellectual, and social improvement of the people. In this work they have met with about the same encouragement and success as in former years. Small congregations have been regularly convened on the Sabbath, and occasionally at other times for religious instruction and worship. It is true that the number of those who have attended these exercises has been comparatively small. The number however who have ~~listened to~~ heard the gospel in the sanctuary and in other ways has been as great the past year as at any other period of the mission of equal length. But a small portion of the Ojibwas are disposed to listen to religious instruction, or allow the claims which the gospel makes upon them. This remark is true of them universally. At the stations of the other missionary Societies, as well as those of our own, the number of regular hearers is small. Few take interest enough in the things the gospel reveals to be at the trouble to learn what they are, and fewer still are willing to yield their hearts to the claims of the gospel. The majority hate the light and shun it, evidently because it reproves their evil deeds. To all appearance, however, the truth is gaining some foot hold even here, and has an influence on some ~~minds~~ individuals. It has evidently shed some rays of light on many minds. The missions among them are ~~gaing~~ gaining on the confidence and affections of the people.

During the past year, two public religious services have been held regularly on the Sabbath at La Pointe in the English language, and two others also in the Ojibwa language. Besides these, occasional meetings have been held during the week. One Indian family during the past year have professedly renounced heathenism, and for several months past, have regularly attended the religious meetings at the station. One young man connected with this family was, some years ago, baptized by a Catholic priest, and for a considerable time attached himself to the Catholic Church. Some two years ago he began to be dissatisfied with his religion, as a ground of hope for the future world, and occasionally came to the meetings of our missionaries. By listening to the plain truths of the gospel, he became convinced that the members of his communion do not generally conform in practice to those truths, and that something more is necessary, to fit the soul for heaven, than to observe the rites and ceremonies of the Catholic Church. For some months past he has appeared to give evidence ~~that he has~~ of having yielded his heart to God, and it is now expected that he will soon be admitted to the fellowship of the Church. The church at La Pointe now number 16 members, besides those members connected with mission families — in all 25.

It was stated in the last Report, that Mr Ely had been released from his connexion with the Board, and that Mr Charles Pulsifer had been appointed to take charge of the school at La Pointe. Mr Ely left the school at the end of February of last year, and Mr Pulsifer did not arrive here till November, having been detained two months waiting for a passage through the lake. In consequence of this change, the school was suspended eight months. The mission not having received information that a teacher was appointed for the school, decided that, in their opinion, it was expedient that Mr Wheeler remove to La Pointe, for the winter, and take charge of the school at that station. Accordingly about the first of November he removed his family, and immediately recommenced the school. In a few days after it was organized, Mr Pulsifer arrived and soon took charge of it. But in consequence of Mrs Wheeler's state of health, and the difficulty of removing back to Bad River, at that season it was thought best for Mr. Wheeler to remain at La Pointe for a time. Accordingly he did not return till March.

The whole number of scholars who have attended the school since it was reorganized is 37, and the average attendance has been 23. The progress of the scholars has been commendable and gratifying. Their attention has chiefly been given to English studies.

At Bad River, religious meetings have been held on the Sabbath for such of the Indians as were willing to attend, and religious instruction has been imparted by visiting ~~them~~ at their lodges, and in other ways as access could be gained to them. Many have listened with respectful attention to such instructions. A school has been taught there but a small portion of the time during the past year. A person has been procured to aid Mr. Wheeler, particularly in teaching school, who arrived in June last. But such is the present unsettled state of the Indians, arising from causes soon to be mentioned, that it was thought inexpedient at present to attempt to open a school at that station.

Removal of the Indians.

For the last two years, reports have frequently reached the Ojibwas residing on the lands which they have ceded to the United State's Government, that they would be soon required to vacate their lands and remove farther west and north. This subject has for some time past caused some agitation in the public mind, though nothing official has been communicated to them on the subject till the past winter. In 1837 the Indians residing on the country contiguous to the Mississippi, on the east side of that stream, sold their lands to the Government as high up as ~~the~~ where the Crow wing river unites with it. They had the privilege granted ~~them~~ to of remaining on these lands, ~~or the lands~~ and occupying them for the purpose of hunting, collecting the wild rice, ~~&c.~~ &c., till the President should notify them that they must remove. In the fall of 1842 the Indians on the side of the country bordering on the south shore of Lake Superior likewise sold their portion of the country, stipulating also to remove at the demand of the Government. ~~[illegible]~~ They then thought that not much of this land would be wanted for actual settlement for a long series of years, and that the Indians ~~might~~ would be allowed to remain on it, as long as they wish

Lapointe, Lake Superior;
Aug. 2d 1850.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

In compliance with your request that I should forward a report of our mission in season to be used ~~fr~~ in preparing the annual Report of the Board, I have prepared the enclosed which I forward with this, hoping it may not be delayed long on the way.

Mr Wheeler and myself have made a pretty extensive tour through the country to which the Indians are to be removed, and returned two or three weeks ago. The results of our observation I design to give you before long. There is no probability that the mission can be removed this season. I shall not think of visiting the Eastern States this fall, as the Committee gave me leave to do, if the mission should so decide. I think I had better remain here and keep my family here for the present, under the present aspect of our affairs.

Very respectfully yours
S. Hall

Annual Report
of the
Ojibwa Mission

Rec'd Aug. 15. 1850.

[Copied]

quiet and peaceable. But the last 12 or 15 years have wrought a great change. Wisconsin, within whose chartered limits a part of these lands lie, has become a State, and Minnesota is rapidly becoming a populous territory. Considerable portions of these lands are wanted by settlers, some for the valuable timber they contain, others for the minerals they ~~contain~~ contain, and more for actual cultivation. As settlers press forward on the lands where the Indians reside, difficulties often occur. ~~between them and the whites.~~ Petitions have been been forwarded, by the legislatures having jurisdiction over these lands, to the general Government, for the removal of the Indians. Consequently the President has revoked the privilege grated the Indians, ~~of occupying the lands~~, and has ordered their removal the present season. This order reached them early in the Spring, and they were directed to be in readiness to remove early this summer. Nothing has yet effectually been done to accomplish their removal the present season. An effort will doubtless be made this fall to effect it. ~~A~~ The country to which they are required to remove, is that still owned by them and other portions of the tribe farther to the west and north.

What influence their removal will have upon their future condition, or the prospects of the mission, it is impossible to foresee. The mission is waiting to see what steps the Government will take, and where different bands will be located, before they can intelligently decide as to their duty. They do not think of abandoning them in the present crisis of their affairs, though this measure will subject them to many new trials and difficulties. The removal of the Indians will cause considerable excitement among them, but it is to be hoped that they will come peaceably

Annual Report

into the measure, and that no compulsory means will be necessary to induce a compliance with their treaty stipulations. ~~Their removal may result in their benefit in the end~~. The probability is, that if their removal is effected, and they are disposed to improve and comply with the wishes and plans of the Government, the latter will aid them more than heretofore ~~they have done~~, by giving them more farmers and mechanics, and in other ways. Where they now are, it is impossible for the Government to protect them by enforcing the intercourse laws. Ardent Spirits are every where within their reach, and they can obtain as much as they please with little difficulty. The consequence of this state of things, is, that many of them are poor and wretched in the extreme. Deaths by accident from the same cause are frequent, and ~~murders~~ murderous affrays among themselves, and between them and the whites, are common. If they are removed they can be better protected from this dreadful evil. Their removal will concentrate them more, and render them more accessible to the means of instruction and improvement.

In view of the contemplated removal, the farmer at Bad River was dismissed last winter, and the team and farming utensils were removed, and they ordered to make no more improvements there. They however went ~~[illegible]~~ on and planted their ground as usual, and have nearly as large fields of corn and potatoes as formerly, though they had to dig their ground with the hoe. Most of them say, they are not prepared to remove, & shall not be the present season.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (5-8)

School Report
  5. [Summer, 1852]
Hall, S.
  6. 21 January 1851
Ojibwa names
  7. ?
Skye, Thomas
  8. 15 January 1859

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Statement of the school at Lapointe, for the year ending June 30. 1852.

There have attended this school the past year forty scholars. Some of these have attended only a few days, probably not enough to do them any good. About thirty have attended a considerable part of the time under review, and those who have done so regularly have made gratifying progress.

Very few full Indian children have attended the school during the year. There has been a decrease in the average attendance, compared with former years: but of late the number of scholars has been increacing, particularly the girls.

The following table shows the number of scholars and the studies pursued.

Sessions	Whole No. of Scholars	Average each day	No. studying written Arithmetic	No. studying mental Arithmetic	No. studying Geography	No. studying Book-keeping	Writing	Composition	No. reading the Scriptures intelligibly.
Summer Session	30	17	7	10	9	2	10	7	10
Fall and Winter Session	31	13	8	11	9	3	13	8	13

School a La Pointe
for year ending June 30, 1852

Recd, Aug. 3, 1852.
Ackd " 25.

To the Hon. L. Lea, Commissioner
of Indian Affairs.

The Undersigned, one of the Secretaries of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, begs leave to represent:

That since the year 1832 said Board has sustained a mission among the Ojibwa Indians, living in the North Western part of Wisconsin, & now known as the La Pointe & Bad River Indians; that said Indians have made gratifying progress, especially in the cultivation of the soil, & are now in advance of the great mass of their tribe; that they are particularly anxious to receive, in future years, the fostering care of our Government in their present location; but the Undersigned learns that it is contemplated by the President of the United States to remove them at an early day, under the provisions of the treaty of 1842, to the western side of the Mississippi, — a measure to which, it is believed, many & grave objections may be urged; & among them are the following, viz.

1. It was the declared wish of the Government, when the treaty of 1842 was made, to obtain the control of the mineral lands in the possession of the Ojibwas, & not to purchase their territory for agricultural purposes. The Indians were told that they could remain where they were, for an indefinite period, except so far as they might be required to give place to miners; & the Commissioner said to them, "You & I ~~will~~ shall never see the day when your Great Father will ask you to remove". Had it not been for this assurance, it is presumed, the treaty would never have been consummated.

2. The land which the Indians now occupy is not needed by the whites. There is only one American farmer between ~~the west end~~ Fond du Lac, the head of Lake Superior & Ontonagon river, a distance of some 200 miles. Indeed, such is the nature of the soil & climate, & such the general aspect of the

country, that it seems altogether ~~[illegible]~~ improbable, that the entire force of white men will take that direction.

3 These Indians do not stand in the way of the miners. There is no mining done above them, on the Lake; & from the Lake the nearest mining district is one hundred miles on the Ontonagon river.

~~3 The mining population of northern Wisconsin~~, The miners, it is understood, are in favor of having the ~~continuance~~ ~~of these~~ Indians remain in their present home. The latter can make themselves useful to their civilized neighbors, in various ways, as by catching fish, raising vegetables, acting as voyageurs, &c, &c.

5. ~~4.~~ There seems to be little or no danger, where these Indians now are, of their coming in unpleasant collision ~~between the Indians &~~ with the whites ~~men~~. In addition to the facts already stated, ~~mentioned, it may be stated~~, it may be mentioned that the lands in question, as is supposed, contain no mineral treasure; while they are separated from the southern part of Wisconsin by a wide tract of mountainous & inhospitable country.

~~[illegible]~~ 4. The present position of the Indians would seem to be as favorable to their progressive improvement, in all respects, as any other; & in many respects it is more favorable than the region beyond the Mississippi. —

~~(a) They will be as safe from all hurtful influences; whether the residue of the Indian territory east of the Mississippi shall be purchased by the Government or not.~~ (b) They can more easily obtain the necessaries of life on Lake Superior than beyond the Mississippi. Hence their aversion to a removal. (c) In case of their being transferred to the west side of the Mississippi, there is danger that they will imbibe the war spirit of the Ojibwas in that region, much to their injury.

6. Should the Indians be left where they now are, they may be expected to become citizens of Wisconsin at some future time, — an event which the Government must greatly desire.

7 The removal of all the Indians who were parties to the treaty of 1842, as contemplated by the President of the United States, will involve the Government in great perplexity & expense. If the La Pointe & Bad River Indians are left behind, the burden & embarrassment will be materially diminished.

In conclusion the Undersigned would also state, that the Society which he represents has expended several thousand dollars at La Pointe & Bad River, nearly all of which will be lost probably, should these stations be abandoned; & the undersigned is by no means certain that the Board ~~will~~ would resume missionary operations beyond ~~on the other side of~~ the Mississippi.

The undersigned would suggest, therefore, that the La Pointe & Bad River Indians be left in their present location, with the understanding that they are not to be removed therefrom; but that they will be allowed to continue the ~~Career~~ Course of improvement which they have begun, in the hope that they will eventually become citizens of Wisconsin.

And the Undersigned would request the cooperation of the Government in the work of amelioration, commenced by the missionaries, by renewing the appropriations for schools, heretofore made, & by giving such encouragement to the industry &

enterprise of the Indians as may be in its power.

All which is respectfully submitted.

Signed / S B Treat

Sec of the Am. Board

of Comm for Foreign Missions

Washington Jan. 21

1851.

Mr Treat's
Communication
to the Commis-
sioner of Indian
Affairs at
Washington
Jan 1851.

Communication
made to the Comr
of Indian Affairs

Jan. 21. 1851.

Muj-e = bad

Mush-ke-se-be - Swamp River = Bad River 7

O-day-na = village.

Muk-kud-áy-pe-nase - Blackbird

Mush̀-in-a-way. -e Messenger

Wau-bun-e-mik-~~ke~~-White Thunder

Osh-kin-a-way - Young man

Muk-kud-ay-wau- ~~wa~~ -kwut. Black Cloud

Na-wau ~~wa~~-je-wun-ōns. Little Current.

O-~~d~~ za-wau-an-e-mik-e ~~ne~~-ke. Yellow Thunder

Wau-bĭsh-ke-gwun-ay-be. ~~White~~

David ~~A~~ Greene -

7k

Ojibwa
Names

3 Shirts
2 Wool – St hose
1 Cott – "
3 Collars
3 bosoms
1 pockt hand
1 Cravat

8

Indian Village Colpoys Bay
January 15th
1859

Secretaries of the A.B.C.F.M.
Miſsionary House 33 Pemberton Square Boston

My White Brothers
in the Gospel,

I have never undertook to write to you as some of my white friends have done. I am an Indian and of course I cant speak or write so well in the White mans language. Yet I thank God that I am able to look in the Bible for instruction and can understand a little the gospel has done a great deal for the Indians Many hearts has been changed many families has been bleſsed. the soul of the Indian has mingled himself in heaven, and not only Indians but every Kind of man has been made happy in the name of Christ. so this Youths Day Spring tells me Islands in the Big Sea or Ocean has seen the effects of the gospel, I have often think who in the world that send me this visitor. Y. D. and its from Boston Big town I afterwards learn, I sometimes think too perhaps some body will put me in Jail for not paying this paper. it is not because I am stingy to help this good and glorious work it is because I am poor nothing to help me I have been labouring in the lords vineyard for ten years past sickneſs then overtaken me so that I am not

not able to preach. would not the American Board send me a little help or send me to some part of America to preach the Gospel to my own kind of people (Ojibways) if you know a field among the Ojibway Indians vacant I am willing to work for Christ I do not wish to be rich in earthly things or good or money but I want to go with the blessed in heaven for my work.

Colpoys Bay Indians has seen the light of the Gospel our young ones has been taught religious instruction. they have been informed to keep the Sabath holy. and to keep the commands of the Lord. and so on. but I wish some more Gospel teachers would go to the Remainder of the poor Indian and teach them these holy things.

I therefore wish if I can only go round and tell my own fellow Indians how precious it is to serve the Lord. and I sincerely hope you will take this in your good consideration. and see what you can do for me and for the Red man of the West.

For the last thing I am going to say I pray the Lord may bless the work which you have undertook wishing your earnest prayers may be offered up for me for grace and Comfort. please write to me and direct the letter as follows,

I am Yours in Christ

Thomas Skye
Colpoys Bay
Owen Sound

Revd Sirs

I recommend Thomas Skeys appeal to your serious consideration, should you require any further information about him I should be most happy to do it.

I have the honour
to be Sirs Your
Obed^{t} Servant
Joseph Jones
Chief Interpreter &
Writer
for the Indians
Colpoys Bay
Owen Sound

Thomas Skye

Colpoys Bay, Jan. 15. 1859.

Ojibwa Rec'd. Jan. 25.

ans March 12

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (9-12)

Munnypenny, G. W. to the Mission
  9. 18 July 1853
Mix, Charles E. to the Mission
  10. 23 August 1853
Watrous, S.
  11. [October 1853]
Blatchford, Henry
  12. 28 November 1853

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

9

Department of the Interior,
Office Indian Affairs,
July 18. 1853.

Sir;

Your letter of the 9th Instant, asking that the "patronage" of the Department now bestowed upon a School for Ojibwa Children at La Pointe may be transferred to a School commenced at Bad-river, has been received.

In reply I would state that the contract entered into between late Agent Watrous and the Revd. S. Hall, to which you make reference in your letter, was forwarded here by Ex-Governor Ramsey without an expression of opinion as to whether the same should be confirmed or not, and the Department being unwilling to act thereupon without an opinion from the Superintendent has referred the matter to Governor Gorman for his views, when they are obtained it will then be able to give you an answer as to the expediency of the measure proposed.

Very Respectfully,
Your Obt. Servt.

Geo. W. Manypenny
Commissioner

Revd. S. B. Treat,
Secy &c.
Mission House,
Boston.

Hon. G. W. Manypenny

Washington July 18/53

Recd. July 20/53

Ans^{d} Aug 26.

Miss Smith —

10

Department of the Interior,
Office Indian Affairs,
August 23. 1853.

Sir:

In reply to your letter, of the 26th ultimo, requesting that you may have an opportunity of presenting your views upon the contract between late Agent Watrous and the Revd. S. Hall,— I have to state:

That the said contract has just been returned by Govr. Gorman, to whom it was referred for his inspection and opinion, with these objections: 1st. No damages should be allowed in case of removal of the Indians from the present Agency— 2d. The contract should not continue for the space of seven years, but run from year to year.— 3d. That the words "not inconsistent with this agreement" should be stricken out immediately after the words "he shall carry out all instructions from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs."— 4th That he shall be held accountable for all money received like other public officers, not as it reads" to the Indian Bureau after the manner of other public officers connected with the Department"— and that this Office will suspend any action in the

the matter until you can be heard from, as requested.

Very Respectfully,
Your Obt. Servt.
Charles E. Mix,
Actg. Commr.

Revd. S. B. Treat,
Secretary &c.
Mission House,
Boston.

Charles E. Mix Esq

Washington, Augt 22. 53

Recd, Augt 25.

Ansd " 31

Extract.

"I have this day had a talk with the Commissioner in regard to the Chippewa School and your contract. I regret that I did not reach here earlier, before the Department had taken any action on the contract. As it is, I am unable to do any thing that would help you. The clerks in the office look upon the objections raised by Gov. Gorman as a farce, and say there is nothing in them. The Commissioner told me he had written Mr. Treat in regard to the matter. My own impression is, if you insist upon the fulfillment of the contrat, it will stand. Still I may be wrong. I told the Commissioner, that as you were now situated justice at least to you required, that the agent should be instructed to turn over the money to you; and he said there would be no trouble on that score."

"J. S. Watrous"

Extract.

J. S. Watrous

Recd. Oct. 25/53

Crow wing Nov. 28th 1853

Revd. L. H. Wheeler

Dear Sir Yours was kindly received on the 28th inst. and I am happy to say that it reached us, all enjoying good health. in respeck to the kind of employment I would like the best is well known to every one who knows me, but However I dont want any one to think that I cannot get any employment from any other source but by cleaving to the missionaries, I know that I would have trials by being employed by worldly men, but still I would find employment enough, any where but I would a great deal rather be with the missionaries, than to be employed by worldly men. Mr Goff has writen to me all the summer long to go back and that he would employ me, and then again I had two other offers besides that, and if you did not need my services I would probably have hired out to Mr Goff.

I Now Mr Wheeler if you need my services as poor as they be, I will go for it I shall start from this place as early as I can, I want to go through before the flys are geting to be troublesome, one thing more I am not certain wether the mission will bear my expenses back or not, if they dont, I will have to get some help from Lapointe, I should think that it was nothing but right that they should help me, because if it was not for the

I say I only write to you plainly what I think and what he said after he read your letter. I know Mr Hale right well. I think he dont like to have me go ~~to~~ join you, However I may be mistaken in regard to that Now please write to me & let me know what you think about it.

mission & I should never have come to this place at all, one thing I would like to have you do for me Mr Wheeler, it is to get a Cooking Stove for me from below, the same kind of Robert Morrin and the same seize, and if you order provissions please get more, Mr Hall gives six Barrels flour & three of Pork, but say seven of flour & four of Pork for my family is geting so large that it requires more provissions also send for childrens shoes even down to Maggys seize, the fact is if I go back to stay with you I will have to look to you for every thing I need for my family as I do to Mr Hall, without running to the Stores, even down to clothing, I dont want any more than what we really need, you can judge for yourself, wether you ever knew us to waste provissions or any thing else I want only just what will bearly take us through, & Now as for Missionary labors at this place we have not had any, it is now about one month since we last saw an Indian in meeting, and their is no visiting them from lodge to lodge because they were not in a Condition to visit them, they are all the time drunk Hardly ever sober and no School as yet, and we dont Know when their will be any School, the payment is all over & the Indians most of them gone to Hunting down to Swan River, at payment time the liquor was as plenty as water, several Indians got Stabed but it is a wonder to me that they lived it through, you can have no Idea what a Miserable place this was Men & Women fighting and almost Killing each other during payment.

I will find out before long about geting away from this place, & if I cannot get help from this quarter I will let you know. This is all. Frances & the Children wish to be remembered to all the family. I have seen your great preacher as some of your La Pointe people called him. Joseph he is to work for Revd, Brecks at Gull Lake & some of the men that are there told me that he played cards with Stellman, poor Boy I am afraid he will be soon led astray entirely, Stellman he is a Hard case drinks & plays Cards & also, his wife went off to make rice & while she was gone he took another woman for wife & the other got back he put the other away & then took his own wife again, and so he does. Mi-ie-mi-nik. Bozho-ni-Ka-nis Ki do-no-mi Kon Ko Ki no go endo shi-ieg, Nin so Keget Ne ni Ka ni Si mig. Nin dau.

Henry Blatchford

I did as you said, in regard to the letter that you wrote to me and after he read the letter he told me that I ought to write to the Board about it, and another thing he wants me to hold on, till Spring to see how things will turn out, But I say that I dont want to stay in this contry at all, and another thing I dont see that I have anything to do with the Board I am just like any other man employed by the missionaries, and Mr Hall further remarked that he wants to translate more of the Bible, and I dont believe I can stand it as I have done, We have begun our reviewing and I dont Know how I shall get along in being Confine again, I have had but only few of them turns all summer. I I shall have to tell Mr Hall in the Spring that I am going away from this place right out, although I have told him very plainly last fall, even if the Mission should Continue at this place. I Can see that he wants me to stay and hold on to this Mission. But I tell you Mr Wheeler, I Cannot stay If I did it would be doing a thing against my Mind & if I do that I shall not do well, & if I leave this Mission & then if the other mission dont want to employ me any more, then I shall have to Hire out where I Can, I am not going to run away from Heardships as Mr Hall probbably will think of me, No Sir I would be the last one to do it, If I saw plainly that it was my duty to stay, and further more I dont see that why I should not by as useful in some other place than here and another thing I dont see that it is harder here for missionary labour than at Lapointe, to be sure Indians get drunk, but it is so almost every where but I dont want you to say anything to Mr Hall of what

Henry Blatchford
Rev. L. H. Wheeler
Crow Wing Nov 28
53
Recd Jan 2/54

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (13-[17])

Gilbert, Henry C .
  13. 24 April 1855
Hendricks, Thomas A.
  14. 16 April 1856
  15. 16 April 1856
Gilbert, Henry C.
  16. 18 August 1856
 [17.]

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

13

Copy.

Office Mich. Ind. Agency.
Detroit April 27. 1855.

Sir.

In reply to so much of your Letter of March 21. Ult. as relates to the expenditures of the Educational fund provided for the Chippewa's of Lake Superior by the treaty of the 30th. Sep. last and to matters connected, I beg leave respectfully to report.

That the Missionary Stations and Schools established among these Indians are as follows,

1st. A Methodist Mission at L'Anse on the east side of Ke,wa,we,naw Bay. At this point a Missionary is constantly employed. The School was formerly in a flourishing condition. but. owing to the unsettled state of the Indians it has been suffered to decline, although Still kept up for a portion of the year. The School house is old and dilapidated and should be replaced by a new one. The total number of Indians at this point is about 250.

2d. The Catholic Mission at L'Anse on the west side of the bay. The Indians here number about 350. Their School has not for a year or two been in a flourishing condition and the building occupied as a school house. is not suitable for that purpose. At both of these points the schools are taught by the Missionaries. At neither of them will the number of Indians ever be much increased by accessions from the interior.

3rd The Presbyterian Mission at LaPointe under the care of the Presbyterian Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. The School has been kept up at this Mission for many years. It was formerly located at the village of LaPointe on Madeline Island, but is now established at Bad river about 15. miles from LaPointe and in the midst of the Indian reservation. The location is a good one and a large improvement has been made and good buildings erected. Rev. L H Wheeler is Missionary in charge and with his family and one or two Assistants, has resided among the Indians for 13. years. Better and larger School houses are much needed. The Indians number at present about 1.000 and the number is constantly increased by accessions from the interior. The Lac De Flambeau & Lac Courteville Indians numbering about 1.500 will very likely all remove to this reservation.

4th The Catholic Mission near Grand Portage. The Mission and buildings are located on the British side of the line. The Grand Portage Band wish to establish a School at their village and insisted on having the controul of the educational fund themselves. The Chiefs and many of their head men are active and intelligent and will use their School money to educate their children as well without the interference of the government as with.

There is at present no other Missionary Stations or schools. At Fond Du Lac there was formerly a Mission under the charge of the Methodists, but it has been removed or abandoned. The interior Indians numbering about 1.500 never had any Schools or Missionaries among them and are as genuine Specimen of heathen as can be found in the world. I regard it impracticable to spend any portion of the educational fund among them at present and think it better to encourage them to come out and settle at Bad River. ———

You also require me to report a plan for the expenditure of the educational fund, that if adopted would (in my judgment) best promote the education of the children and the Civilization and christianization of the Indians &c &c.

It is my opinion that the government should have nothing to do with "christianizing" the Indians. That is a work, that should be left wholly to Missionary zeal & Enterprize and the expense attending it should be defrayed by the contributions of the benevolent. ———

The fund to be distributed amounts to $4.333. per annum and if judiciously expended can be made productive of vast good. To expend any portion of it on the adult Indians is very little use. Their habits are confirmed and their tastes vitiated. The main effort should be to educate the children and young people and this cannot be done with any prospect of success, except by the establishment of boarding schools on the manual labor plan. schools where the pupils shall be constantly under the charge of the teacher and entirely withdrawn from Indian influence and the effect of Indian habits and customs.

It is of no use to educate the mind of an Indian if his habits tastes and propensities are neglected. His wants should be increased and he should be so taught & educated that the conveniences and even some of the harmless luxuries of civilized life should become to him things of absolute necessity.

We have such a school now in operation among the Indians at Grand Traverse under the charge of the Rev. Mr. Dougherty and it is entirely successful. Such a school should be established at Bad River and a large portion of the educational fund should be devoted to its establishment and support. It is the principal point of rendezvous for the Indians and the place where they will ultimately settle in far greater numbers than at any other. A good beginning has already been made there and I am informed by Mr. Wheeler that the American Board will establish such a school without delay if a portion of the educational fund can be applied towards it. Other points of course should not be neglected. There should be school houses and teachers at L'Anse but necessarily on a much smaller scale and manual labor should be connected with them as far as practicable. I would not however advise the expenditure of any money at L'Anse for the present except for the payment of teachers, and nothing can at present be judiciously expended at Fond Du Lac except for the same purpose.

In my judgment the fund for the next two years may be expended as follows, not only with justice to all the Indians, but with well grounded hope, that full greater good will be accomplished than is shown by the results attained under any of the old systems of promoting Indian civilization.

Am^t due Grand Portage Band by Tr. Stip^n	$ 300.
For pay^t of Teach^{rs} at L'Anse to be divid^d equally between the 2 Missions	800.
For pay^t of teachers at Fond Du Lac.	600.
For building material^s & labor towards erecting a suitable building for Manual labor boarding school at Bad River.	1.500.
For pay^t teach^s & other necess^y exp^s necess^y incurred in sustaining the school	1.133.
	$ 4.333.

This will give in two years $3.000. towards the erection of the necessary buildings at Bad River and I think no further appropriation will be necessary for that purpose. After the buildings are erected $2.000 a year should be expended in sustaining this school and the remainder of the fund expended in building houses and paying teachers at other points as may be deemed most expedient.

The disbursement of this fund should be made through the Agency having charge of the Indians, and the Agent should be held responsible for its judicious expenditure. The Indians prefer that all monies due under the treaty should be expended directly for their benefit by the Govt. & the trust ought not to be transferred. I think it eminently proper however, that the society having charge of the Mission and the resident Missionaries should in all cases have entire charge of the schools and that they should be consulted by the Agent in regard to all expenditures and that the teachers employed and paid by Government should be only such persons as they recommend.

If the plan I recommend shall be adopted I have reason to believe that the American Board will at once enter upon the work of establishing the school at Bad River and will furnish all the additional funds that may be necessary.

Very Respectfully
Your Obedient Servant.
Henry C Gilbert.
Indian Agent.

Hon Geo. W. Manypenny
Comr of Indian Affairs.
Washington City
Dist. Col.

Agent to Comr.

Letter of April 27 1855

on Exp. Chipps. Sup. Educl. fund.

Copy.

For / Rev. L. H. Wheeler

Missionary.

Copy

General Land Office
April 16th 1856.

To the Register & Receiver
at Superior
Wis.

Gentlemen,

By the 10th article of the Chippewa Treaty of 30th Sept 1854 (Stat. at Large p. 219) it is provided that "All Missionaries, and teachers, and other persons of full age, residing in the territory hereby ceded, or upon any of the reservations hereby made by authority of law, shall be allowed to enter the land occupied by them at the minimum price whenever the surveys shall be completed to the amount of one quarter section each."

I herewith enclose a copy of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs' letter of the 10th instant with lists of tracts all situated in Township 48 N. Range 3 West of the 4th Prin. Meridian Wisconsin designated by Messrs. Leonard H. Wheeler and Henry Blatchford Missionaries and Miss Abby Spooner teacher as the lands which they desire to enter under the article of the treaty above quoted, and I have to request, that on the applications of the parties named, at your Office if there exists no legal objection or interference at the time, you will permit the entries for the purposes mentioned. But should there be existing objections you will first report them to this Office

I am your obt Servt.

Thos. A. Hendricks
Commissioner

Thomas A. Hendrick - commissioner
to the Register + Receiver, Wis.

Washington Apr. 16. 1856.

Rec'd. Apr. 19.

Dear Brother,

The enclosed has come to me from the Land Office at Washington.

I send a letter from Mr Kingsbury. That he will go off seems a settled thing. The Lord, I trust, will bring good out of it.

Geo. W. Wood.

S. B. Treat.

15

General Land Office
April 16th 1856.

o Geo. W. Wood
Secy A. B. C. F. M.
New York City

Sir,

For your information I erewith enclose a copy of my instruction of this date the Register and Receiver of the Land Office at Superior Wisconsin on the subject of certain Missionary entries, proposed to be made under the 10th Article of the Chippewa Treaty of 30th September 1854.

I am very respectfully
Your obt Servt
Thos A Hendricks
Commissioner

Thos A. Hendrick to G. W. Wood

Washington Apr. 16. 1856.

Rec'd. Apr. 19.

+ note from G. W. W. attached

16

Office Mich. Ind. Agency
Detroit Augt. 18, 1856.

Sir

In reply to yours of this date I have to say that the Educational Fund for the Chippewas of Lake Supr. can be so divided as to give the following appropriations for Bad River = 1st. For Buildings =

From 1st Instalment due after Ratify Sept 30 - 1854 - & which sum is now available	$1500.00
From 2d. Instalment = now available	1000.00
From 3d. " Available after July 1. 1857 =	500.00
Total for Buildings	$3000.00

2d. For Salaries of teachers the sum of $1800.00 per ann. can be appropriated to your School for the present - that is after your buildings are erected, & until they are finished & the School in operation $900 per annum = And I think the arrangement to pay $1800. per ann for the support of the School can be made a permanent one, but in order to that

Some action at Washington will be necessary - I think however there will be no difficulty in effecting it & that the payment of $1800 - from year to year may be relied on -

Very Respy

Your Obt Servt

Henry C Gilbert

Ind. Agt.

Rev. L. H. Wheeler

Detroit

Henry C. Gilbert to Rev. L. H. Wheeler

Detroit Aug. 18. 1856.

Rec'd. Sept. 2.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (18-23)

Manypenny, G. W.
  18. 14 November 1856
Clark, Seth G.
  19. 11 May 1858
  20. 13 May 1858
  21. 20 May 1858
  22. 5 June 1858
  23. 29 July 1858

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Department of the Interior,
Office Indian Affairs
November 14th. 1856.

Sir:

I have to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 11th. instant relative to your intended visit to this city between the 21st and 29th. of the present month upon business connected with this office.

In reply to your inquiry I have to state that I shall be in Washington during the period above mentioned - but I learn from inquiries at the Land office this day, that the plats of the surveys at Bad river, have not been returned to that office, and will not be for some time to come: you will therefore be unable to accomplish any thing in regard to obtaining a patent for the lands granted by the Government, at the present time.

Very respectfully
Your Obt. Servant
Geo. W. Manypenny
Commissioner

Geo. W. Wood. Esq.
Secy of the
Am. Bd. Com. For. Missions
New York

Hon. G. W. Manypenny

Washington Nov. 14. 56

Rec^d at Boston

Jan 30. 57

From Rev. Seth G. Clark,

of Brooklyn, Ohio,

touching the affairs of the Ojibwa Mission.

1858-1859.

Brooklyn Ohio May 11. 1858.

Rev S L Pomroy.

Dear Brother.

In a letter from Mr Gordon I have just learned that your health will prevent a meeting of the Dist Secretaries this Spring. I sincerely hope & trust your health may speedily be entirely restored, for it would seem that the present condition of the Board, according to your circular, demands firm health, as well as strong faith. I regret also the loss of the meeting, especially as I have somethings to say, respecting the Mission at Odanah, which I had much rather say than write. About a year since by request of Br Wheeler, & also by your request, (for I took the letters to Boston & showed them to you) I obtained a farmer & his family to go to that Mission. I also obtained a Mr A P Truesdell, & his family, to go as teacher. This teacher, I have every reason to believe, is just the man, needed at the Mission in every respect. He was a successful Teacher in an Academy, & commanded much higher wages, than I was authorized to offer him, yet he cheerfully gave up a good situation, & repaired at once to his field of labor among the Indians. He was even obliged to make some sacrifice in disposing of property to pay debts, & prepare to go. The farmer, I engaged with the express under standing that his time should begin, when he started for his field of labor. In reference to the Teacher Mr Truesdell, I made no such stipulation, for all our busineſs was transacted by letter. I, however, had no other idea than that his time would begin when he started for his field. When he arrived at Odanah, he had to prepare his house, & some other arrangements to make before the school commenced. Br Wheeler thinks his time should not begin till he *actually began* his school. He was not satisfied, & they agreed to leave the matter to me. I informed them that I had no *authority* to settle any such question, but had no doubt his time *ought* to begin when he started for his field. That was my expectation when I engaged him: Was I right in thinking his time should begin when he started for his field?

There are somethings in reference to that Miſsion that may need a little attention; at all events, I shall be doing what seems to me to be duty if I copy a part of several letters I have received from Br Truesdell, the teacher. Under date of Dec 16, 57, after speaking of the Miſsion & the school, he says; "Since my fathers arrival we have had a retrospecting of all our matters, & all has been arranged satisfactorally, with *one* exception, that is in regard to the *time* our services *commence*. Br W. said, that as he understood the matter our time did not commence until we had actually begun labor at the Miſsion Station.

My Father & I supposed that our time commenced when we received our appointments & left all other employ. This difference Br W said he must leave for your decision, as he was not certain in regard to it. As to myself, I made no small sacrifice in the hasty disposition of my things — leaving much behind, that I might & ought to have brought, on account of obeying your instructions to the letter, Still, notwithstanding my haste & economy of time, it was nearly four weeks from the time of my commencing service on account of the Mission, before I was actually in charge of the school. This 4 weeks includes nearly two weeks ~~that~~ spent in cleaning & fitting up a log house, that had been occupied for a Root-house, & diverse other purposes, before it was appointed us as a dwelling, & which, in consequence was somewhat "out of tune". If the A Board does not pay their employees, until their arrival at their fields of labor & actual commencement of their special vocation, as preaching or teaching, then of course I know how (or must learn) to submit to the loss of a months wages, with good grace. ... You are constituted the arbiter; we shall rest well satisfied in your decision, whether contrary or in accordance with our views of right in the case." After reviewing the above, I wrote him as I have stated above, that my understanding was that their time should begin when they started for their field of labor.

In a letter April 22. 58. He says Br W thinks you are wrong in your premises, in regard to the time of commencement &c. of those employd in the service of the Mission, & he awaits your reply to *his* epistle, before he can decide. & if *your* decision as the appointed arbitrator, should finally prove adverse to *his*. I judge that he will wish, (from what he has said of the Matter) to leave the matter again to the decision of the Board. So you see he is rather *a strange* business man. But we try to humor his peculiarities, as far as consistent with right". In an other letter enclosed in the same wrapper, he says, Mr & especially Mrs W are urgent in the request that you should pay the mission, an early visit in the spring, & wish me to write an appeal to that effect. I simply remark that a visit from one of whose direct business habits I have formed so high an opinion, could not prove otherwise than a blessing to this Mission, *pecuniarily* at least. Your advice & criticisms, financially considered might give increased direction, point, & efficiency to the proposed labors of the coming season; while your sympathy could but console & encourage those who have labored so long in an apparently lifeless field, judging from the effects of their labors.

It has been a matter of conscience with me, ever since my arrival at Odanah, whether I ought not to write my feelings (which may be wrong) to some member of the A Board, — in regard to the present plans, disposition of labor &c in the operation of this Mission. Here-to-fore I have refrained in part, from having no personal acquaintance with any of the Directors, or influential members of the Board.— In partly for fear that what I might suggest might prove an error of my own judgment & inexperience, or, perhaps, be construed into prejudice, envy, or a fault finding spirit. Now however, notwithstanding I have never stood face to face with Br Clark I feel from the communion & acquaintance which a kind Providence has permitted us to have, through the medium of written messengers— I know in whom I confide, & if I perform faithfully my seeming duty, I rest assured— from those principles & views often dropped in your letters, so congenial to my own sentiments, & bias— that my statements & suggestions will receive the kind consideration of an elder brother, & if in error, the firm, gentle rebuke of the father. The point to which I refer is this. Br W contends that the A Board requires of him the superintendence of every thing— the farm the school, the garden, the interpreter, the teachers &c. This superintendence he carries to such an extent, (as it seems to me) that his own legitimate labor,— the preaching of the word— visiting the sick. & general Pastoral duty, is so paralized as to become comparitively inert & inefficient. Br W orders the farming interests, & work from day to day – Sets the commencement of school terms, & their endings, & even arranges the hours & recesses of the school, – appoints examinations, exhibitions &c., – does all kinds of farm work, patching, mending & running from place to see that all secular matters are thriving according to his peculiar business notions. Now I cannot believe that Br W's views of these matters (not being posted in the modern improvements) are as good as those appointed to the immediate charge of them: nor can I believe it possible for him, though ever so well acquainted with these miner matters, to attend to them personally, & still discharge faithfully & efficiently those higher spiritual duties, without the performance of which we cannot expect refreshing from on High. Your own presence & examination will be the best guide to a decision" Mr I forgets, or does not know that I have nothing at all to do with it. In a letter April 2, he speaks of the influence of his situation on his health. "I would advise also that you make inquiries for a Male Teacher in case of my inability to continue in the school. This you could do without our troubling Br W with the anxiety which a possibility of my leaving would inflict. Then in case of my health not permitting me to remain a teacher would be in readiness, & in case of my ability to continue it would save Bro W all uneasineſs. And certain it is that he should be favored as far as poſsible for he has not the busineſs tact to get along with much secular busineſs to advantage. Instance of his deficiency in this respect - the timber & lumber for the school house as well as the money, have all been waiting his movements the entire winter, & three carpenters & joiners have been on the Miſsion ever since fall expecting the job, - doing comparitively nothing, & yet they have only just now commenced putting up a dry house to season the lumber preparatory to commencing the school house. When, at this rate, will the Boarding school be put in operation! At least half a dozen good mechanics have been idle the past winter, - all of whom would have bid eagerly & cheaply on the job of building the school house last fall. Now they say, it will cost Mr W at least $100, or 150, more than it would then, for spring busineſs will again offer them ~~busi~~ employment at increased wages. Please do not make these statements which I feel it my duty to make, (& duty alone would compel me to the expreſsion of facts so disagreeable) any basis of complaint to, or against Br W. who is overwhelmed with cares, & apparently inefficient anxiety about the matters, but rather save yourself & judge more correctly than I may be able to do. I will repeat, that I think it best to make anxious inquiry about a Male teacher, who might be in readiness in case I am compelled to abandon a post of labor which I so much desire to continue in, & which of course would be very greatly to the advantage of the school, as I am now fully acquainted with the habits & wants of the heathen children - which knowledge can only be obtained, by the intimate relation of the teacher & scholar, each to each." In another letter March 26. He says. "I ought perhaps, to remark something of the effects of crowding from 40 to 70 dirty vicious Indian children in so poor a school house, - both on the teacher & scholars, but I forbear as we hope to have a better building soon; I may say this much, however, my own health could not hold out much longer under past & present arrangements, of house filthy children &c. - & it is not impossible that I may be obliged to give up the school by the beginning of summer; although I shall be compelled to such a step only by unavoidable necessity." Another letter of April 23, contains the following. I leave today for the school, & will do the best I can to preserve my health, but under existing conveniences, or rather inconveniences, of school house & the filthy habits in which the children have been so long tolerated, I dare not promise myself too much hope. I will try to continue the correcting of heathen & filthy moral & physical habits so long as I may with safety, & justice to my health, but will still urge the necessity of being prepared with another teacher in case of my inability. I do not pen these lines on account of any trials, or disappointments which I find in my labors here; for if health was mine *nothing* should intimidate me from the path I have chosen, & it is only through the almost tearful pleadings of my wife, & my own consciousness of the danger to which I am ~~exposed~~ subjecting my health—perhaps my life, & consequently all future usefulness in any way, that I have been prevailed upon to write to you before an utter failure should obtain. I keep in view the expense to which I have subjected the Board in coming to the field, & should greatly regret the event I too much fear, & *particularly* as my resignation might be viewed by some in a false light. For, as my wife says, no one, but ourselves, knows how much I have suffered from the poisonous atmosphere of that wretched school room & its inmates. Br Wheeler, who can allow his own wife, to enslave herself to the very verge of the grave, by needless labors, imposed upon her by a wrong policy in allowing the house to be constantly filled with Indians & white traders & visitors, for *her* to wait upon, until she looks like a hospital ~~patient~~, invalid,— trusting all the while in Providence for the result,— would of course think it very wrong for any one else to leave the labors of the Mission while breath remained, & pulse beated. For this reason I have said nothing, & shall say nothing to him until necessity requires it; & as it is possible that with a good school room, & with care I might be able to remain, I communicate my thoughts freely where I may safely look for an unprejudiced hearing." In another part of his letter, he says "Br W has some original methods of reasoning about business matters, but is always open to discussion & conviction. Every thing has been conducted on the Mission this winter with as little friction as could be expected: & so far as the three families are concerned, Br W's, my Fathers, & my own, I think I may safely say, our relations are increasingly pleasant. Where we do not agree, we agree to disagree so that all moves on harmoniously & fraternally, as it always must do, if we expect the smiles of Providence on our labors." I would add in conclusion that Br Truesdell is a Physician, & perhapes that will account for some remarks about Mrs W. I do not know of any man in this region that could be found to fill the place of Br Truesdell, & it seems to me it would be economy to have him dismiss his school, till the school house is completed rather than have him ruin his health, & subject the mission to the trouble & expense of obtaining another teacher, with very little expectation of obtaining one that will make his place good.

I have just received letters from Br Wheeler, in which he says he has written to Br Treat insisting on his paying them a visit, but adds that in case he does not visit them, he is very desirous that I should. I hope Br Treat, or Dr Pomroy will go & see them.

I have just received Br Wheelers Bill for supplies. It calls for 10,000 feet of Flooring. 9,000 feet of Siding, plained & Matched — 33 doors, ~~sah~~ ~~sat~~ Sash & glass for 73 windows. 23 Kegs of Nails. 12,000 Brick, 30 bls lime. 600. lbs white lead, Barrel of Linseed oil, Turpentine, brushes, logchains & other things too numerous to mention, besides their provisions. I should think It would take $1500, or 2000, to fill the bill. He thinks the lumber already plained & matched by machinery will cost less here, or in Detroit than there & then pay for matching & plaining, & I think he is right. Matters in this region as regards collections remain much as they have been. Money is now as difficult to be obtained as it was last winter. I trust the day is coming when Cleveland will help the Board. The Lord has done a great & good work there, & in many other places in this region. Oberlin gives more this year than for 10 years put together. I will just add in conclusion that Br Truesdell evidently did not design to have me make the use of his letters that I have, but I feel that they are safe in your hands. I knew of nothing else that I could do. I have seen two others who have been at Odanah & they too, think Br Wheeler has entirely too much on his hands, one of them represents things very much worse than Br G does, but I think he is evidently prejudiced.

Yours fraternally

S G Clark.

P.S. There is another thing respecting which I wish advice. The time of sending supplies is spring & fall. Sometimes the farmer & teacher has a bill to be filled that exceeds his due at the last quarterly settlement. In that case shall I fill it, or shall I cut it down to the amount due on the last quarters settlement? Please let me know as soon as may be.

Rev. S. G. Clarke
Brooklyn, Wis
May 11. 1858.
Rec'd May 15.
Ans'd Jun 8
" 9

20

Brooklyn Ohio May 13. 1858.

Rev S. L. Pomroy.

Dear Brother.

Since sending my letter yesterday, I met Miſs Spooner, who has been so long in the Miſsion at Odanah. She is now at my house & by her permiſsion I write again. She feels, & has long felt, the evils of which Br Truesdell ~~complains~~ speaks, & thinks there is little hope that the Miſsion will accomplish what it was designed to accomplish, without a division of labor, by which Br W. & wife may be free from the overwhelming burden of secular cares that now oppreſs them, & have their time & strength of body & mind, for Pastoral duties & the care of their own family. Miſs S is a firm friend of Br W & family, & makes these statements only because in her opinion the interests of the Miſsion require it. & I think, also from all I can learn that many interests, in a pecuniary point of view are left to suffer, on account of the many cares of Br W. If by an investigation these facts can be ascertained, - if they are facts, - & the remedy applied without any allusion to what has been communicated, it would oblige those who have made them, for we are all the firm friends of Br W. & family; & would not for any thing do, or say any thing to injure his feelings, unnecessarily or in the least embarrass him in his very laborious & trying situation. In much haste

Yours fraternally

S. G. Clark.

P.S. Miss Spooner expects to be in Hartford Ct. about the first of June, & if it would seem desirable to write her she may be reached at by addressing her at that place, "in care of Lyman B Moody."

Rev. S. G. Clark

Brooklyn, O. May 13, 1858 –

Recd May 17.

Odanah }
Mission } ansd Jun 8
" 9o

Brooklyn Ohio May 20, 1858

Rev S B Treat.

Dear Br.

On my arrival home last evening I learned that you had been at our house & I was very sorry that I could not have been at home. I feel, that in the circumstances I ought to write a few words about the "Fishing business" into which Br Truesdell has entered, lest you may get an erroneous idea of it. His first letter to me on the subject, my wife had not seen, & I cannot do better than to copy that part of it that speaks on that subject. Instead of copying, I send the letter, requesting that it be returned. I wrote him, in reply that I had no means of judging of the merits of his scheme, but was willing to do any thing I could to promote it, if in their judgment it would further the cause they have in view. I have conferred with Messrs Bradburn & Fisher, wholesale Grocers & Forwarding Merchants, of Cleveland, who furnish most of our supplies for the Odanah Mission, & they think very well indeed of the project. In their opinion, besides being very beneficial to the Indians, if rightly managed, it will be more than self supporting, & they will gladly take all the fish in exchange for whatever may be wanting, at cash price. Br Trues-dell does not propose to attend to it in person & I cannot, from the facts I have, see the least objection to the project.

In reference to all other matters my letters to Dr Pomroy give all the information I have.

I have just received a letter which will make it necessary for me to go immediately & attend to a Legacy left the Board, where there is some danger that the will will be contested. It is one of which the Board, perhaps has not been apprised. I will report the facts as soon as I learn them.

In much haste

Yours fraternally

S G Clark.

The name is not in the letter as you will see. This may be accounted for by the fact that I received it in connection with other letters.

Rev. S. G. Clark

Brooklyn May 20. 1858.

Rec'd May 25.

ackd Jun 1,

Brooklyn Ohio June 5, 1858.

Rev S B Treat.

Dear Brother.

I have received your letter in reference to visiting the Mission at Odanah. In reply I can only say I am willing to go, if it is thought best. I would say however, I hope to have full instructions as to what I shall do, & how I shall do it. I suppose the object is a kind & friendly visit, with a view of ascertaining if some changes should not be made. But your letter I trust will give me full information. It will be for the interests of the Board, as far as collections on this field are concerned, if I go soon. I can spare the time this month much better than next.

Yours fraternally
S G Clark.

P.S. I have a large bill for the "Mission Boarding School," from Br Wheeler, consisting of Lumber doors, Sash nails &c. Every thing will amount to at least 2000. I wrote Dr Pomroy about it, but in his answer he says nothing on the subject. There are some things of which I stand in doubt. For instance, he proposes to have his "Siding Matched". It will look a little better but I find it will cost more than twice as much, & will not last as long. I have consulted Mr Handy & he advises to send common siding. Of course I shall be obliged to draw largely on the Treasurer to fill this large bill. If in your opinion I had better send "ceiling" {\$25} instead of "siding" {\$13} you had better telegraph to me at once, or at least write immediately. I am now getting things in readiness to send. If I hear nothing I shall send the siding. I presume Br W is not aware of the difference in cost, or durability.

S G Clark

Rev. S. G. Clark

Brooklyn Jun 5, '58

Rec^d Jun 7

Ans^d " 7

Brooklyn (Ohio) July 29. 1858

Rev S B Treat.

Dear Brother.

I expected, when I started for Odanah, to write to you at an earlier date, but in this I have been disappointed. I was detained at Odanah much longer than I anticipated, because Br Wheeler was unwilling to have me leave until the contract for building the Boarding house was given. I was absent from home a little more than four weeks, & while at Odanah every moment was occupied. When I returned I found my wife very sick, & besides a large amount of correspondence had accumulated, which seemed to demand my first attention.

In reference to my visit, I can say I was happily disappointed. I found things, on the whole in a better condition than I expected. The Indians have made more improvement than I had supposed, & are more accessible. There is more of worldly thrift & prosperity in the Mission than I was prepared to expect. Br Wheeler & wife appeared very glad to see me, & were very much pleased with your letter. Br W said it specified just the things to which he was anxious to have attention given.

And First let me say the letters I received from Dr Truesdell conveyed a wrong impression to my own mind, & I think they did to yours also. Dr T, I find, is not the man I thought he was. I can only account for the high recommendation given him by my class mate, who was preaching where Dr J taught in Michigan, by supposing that his acquaintance with him was short. Dr J is, I trust, a good man, & I hope he has acted honestly, still I think he lacks the discretion & perseverance necessary to render him permanently useful in such a station. I would say more were it not rendered unnecessary by the fact that his connection with the Mission had closed, by mutual consent, before I reached Odanah. I will say, however, that the *Fishing Speculation* was entirely his own - was engaged in contrary to the advice of Br W. & has turned out just as Br W & a number of others predicted. Instead of benefiting either the Indians or himself, it has only involved him in debt.

In reference to the first ~~point~~ item mentioned in your letter, *the health* of *the Missionaries*, I would say, I find them both severely taxed - laboring beyond their strength, & in my judgment, unable to sustain, for any great length of time, their present burden of care & toil. That their hearts are *really* in their work, I cannot doubt for a moment. Mrs W. has decided to take a vacation, & go with her children to her native place, & spend the winter, - perhaps a year with her relatives. In reference to Br W, I see no way of relieving him of any part of his burden till some time in the fall. For the present, for aught I can ~~say~~ see, he must continue to be farmer, physician, Lawyer, Merchant, Mechanic, & business man in general, as well as Missionary. An arrangement has been made however by which the farm will be cultivated on shares another year, beginning with the first of April next. The Mission is to furnish a yoke of cattle & a horse, to be kept from the common products of the farm — furnish farming tools, & half of the seed, & receive half of the products of the farm, ready for use. The farmer is to have the entire charge of the farm, & the care of the stock. This will be a great relief to Br W.

Another arrangement for his relief, is to have the buildings completed as soon as may be. While they are in process of erection more or less of his time & care will be necessary. This, of itself, I regard as a sufficient reason for prosecuting the work vigorously, even if it should cost a trifle more. But it will in fact cost less. Some of the material already purchased, will injure by delay, & work is now cheaper than it has ever been before on Lake Superior; & in all probability cheaper than it will be next spring. Material also is now comparatively cheap. A vigorous prosecution of almost any work, is most economical, & in all the circumstances I regard the completion of those buildings, at an early day, as being very important. The contract was made with a good Mechanic, as we think, & a good christian man, & is to be in readiness to plaster this fall. The contract contemplates the entire completion of the Building, except plastering, & painted throughout.

Again Henry Blatchford is to superintend the payment of the Indians & others, for their work from the provisions of the store house. By having a time set on Saturday of each week, for this business, it will be but little trouble to the interpreter, & essentially assist Br Wheeler.

With the farming interests off his hands— the buildings completed, & the settling with workman satisfactorally disposed of, Br W. will have his time & strength for Missionary work.

With regard to Economy, I would say, I think few families would be willing to practice more self denial than Br. Wheelers. I am sure in many things they go beyond what the Board could ask them to do. In reference to the School house & Boarding School, I think a true economy will require that they be built large enough for the purpose, & in a good, substantial manner. I like the plan of their buildings very much, (especially the Boarding house) & in all the circumstances I do not see how they could be made less expensive, without being seriously defective. The Boarding school, according to contract with Govt, must be large enough to accommodate 50 pupils. This makes it necessary to erect a large building, & it costs much more to build on Lake Superior than in Mass. or Ohio. We could not accurately estimate the cost, but I am ~~f~~ confident when ~~fully~~ completed, well & cistern dug, fenced, & barn erected, the cost will be very little, if any less than 6,000. Br W. thinks 800. more can be obtained from Govt. towards the school house, from an other fund. The Presbyterian & Methodists Boards, under similar circumstances have received that amount in addition.

In reference to the farm, ~~I would say I~~, a decided improvement I think might be made. The Board has a very fine farm, well fenced, & productive, & its products bringing the highest price, & yet hitherto. I am informed, it has cost nearly or quite the proceeds of the farm to pay the hired help. With the present arrangement, I think, the proceeds of the farm will exceed 500. a year if provisions retain their present prices. Hay is worth from 20. to 25 per ton, oats & potatoes 1,00 a bushel, & they can raise abundant crops. One great draw back to the profit of the farm, has been the keeping too much stock. || Their butter, pork & beef can be sent from Ohio at one half of the expense of making them there. It costs at least 50 dollars to winter a cow, & yet I can buy a cow & send her there for that money, & as much butter as she will make in a year for half of it, to say nothing about the trouble. They had, when I was there I think seven cows, seven or eight young cattle, two yoke of oxen & a horse. The working cattle have been needed, & will be till fall. || My advice to Br W. was to sell all the stock except a yoke of oxen, the horse, & three or four cows, to furnish milk for the farmer, Mission family & boarding school, & depend on Ohio for their butter & meat. They can keep ~~t~~ meat fresh all winter & it can be sent to them fresh, in any quantity, spring & fall. The farmer is anxious to have the stock reduced, & the contract says they will keep only from two to four cows.

There are 40 acres of the best land on the farm, partially cleared, & already fenced, as it is, yielding no profit, but which, with a small outlay, might be made very productive. The profit of the first crop would, probably, nearly or quite pay the expense. If the avails of the stock should be thus applied it would at once materially affect the productiveness of the farm. In fact, there are from 80 to 100 acres more land that could very easily & cheaply be prepared for meadow land, or for the plow. The farm, thus prepared, & well managed, might nearly or quite support the Mission. The argument for doing it, or a part of it this summer & fall is, that now they have an extra yoke of oxen, & labor is comparatively cheap, & there are enough who need the pay for it to keep them from suffering. They are also, really needing more cleared land to furnish the farmer what he needs, after reserving the amount necessary for their gardens, & the Boarding school.

The Boarding School is an other important item. We had so many other things to claim attention, we could give that but little ~~attention~~ thought. Very much will depend on getting the right man to take charge of it. I think it will require skillful management to bring the expenses within the amount allowed by Govt. (~~It be done possibly~~) But of this I need not speak. The Board has such schools already in operation, & I presume they have well matured plans for carrying them forward in the best manner. The children are not as far advanced in their studies as I expected to find them. In Summer especially, they are very irregular in their attendance, & only a few of them can converse in English. These are great obstacles in the way of improvement. It seems to me that vigorous efforts should be made to have them learn to talk the English language.

The Indians are, to some extent, improving their lands & some of them have comfortable houses. The Chiefs, & many others, took pains to make me an early call, & seemed very friendly.

some of them repeated much of the good advice Br Treat gave them when there, & told me the promises they made him. They wished me to aſsure you, that they still remembered your visit with deep interest, & that they are now even more determined to adopt the religion & the customs of the whites than when you were there. I think I preached to them seven times, & also spoke to them several times at their feast, & in their council. While there, we formed a Temperance Society, and about 30 joined it. All the Chiefs who identify themselves with the christian party were among the number. The Indians seem much attached to the Miſsion family, but Black Bird, the head Chief, in one of his speeches, expreſsed his regret that ~~his~~ Br W's time should be so much occupied with things aside from his appropriate Miſsion work.

I am very much pleased with Henry Blatchford, the Interpreter. He is a very discreet, good man, & seems to be exerting a happy influence.

In conclusion let me say, Br W occupies a very difficult position. He has of neceſsity many bargains to make, & almost every man in the region regards the A Board as lawful plunder. It is not then very strange that he sometimes has difficulty in his deal, or, with the multiplicity of his cares & toils, that some interests should suffer. I think the true policy is to let him have his time for Miſsionary labor strictly — have the farm cultivated on shares, & have a good secular man to manage the Boarding school & in fact attend to all the secularities of the Mission. With an arrangement that shall relieve Br W of all secular care & responsibility, ~~I believe~~ & all the untoward influences arising from these things, I think the Odanah Mission may, under his ministry, become a fruitful field, & amply repay all the expenditures that have been, or shall be ~~expended~~ made on it. If any point has been omitted, on which you desire information, I will be happy to reply to any questions you may propose~~d~~. While at Odanah, I gave my whole attention to the work, & it was in fact among the most busy & laborious weeks of my life.

Yours fraternally S. G. Clark.

Rev S. G. Clark
Brooklyn Aug 29, '58
Recd Sep 2
ans " 16

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (24-29)

Clark, Seth G.
  24. 25 August 1859
Ayer, Frederic
  25. 24 June 1844
  26. 12 January 1845
  27. 4 October 1845
  28. 2 January 1846
  29. 10 March 1846

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Letters from

Rev. Frederic Ayer.

1844 — 1848.

Brooklyn Ohio Aug 25. 1859.

Rev S B Treat.

Dear Brother.

I presume you will be anxious to hear of the welfare of Br Wheeler, & hence I embrace the first opportunity to write. Before I reached Odanah, Br W had so far recovered as to be able to take boat & go to Marquette to consult Dr Hewitt of that place. I learned that he & Mrs W were at L M, & went immediately to see them. They seemed very glad to see me, but as some matters of business had been left in an unsettled condition, Br W was anxious that I should go immediately to the Mission station. I was partially reconciled to adopt his plan because Br W could then converse but little, & Dr Hewitt wanted a week to form an intelligent opinion of his condition. I found the Boarding house nearly completed. There is every prospect that it will be entirely finished by the first of Oct. It is all that could be desired. Well planed, & finished in a neat, substantial manner throughout. It has a pleasant location & a little pains taken in grading, setting out trees & arranging walks will a delightful spot.

The spring flood, has done some damage to the farm for this year, & yet the chief damage will consist in making it necessary to build an embankment 25 rods long to prevent another rise of water from making a channel through the farm. It must be done before the fall rains set in, & will not cost less than 200. I went to see Dr Ellis, who wrote you concerning Br Wheeler. He regards his condition as very critical indeed; thought he had not more than one chance in a hundred. Dr Ellis had not given Br Wheelers lungs an examination. His lungs have been thoroughly examined by three physicians & they all regard his case as far more hopeful. Dr Hall, formerly of Boston, but now Superintendent in the Lunatic Asylum, ~~of~~ in Auburn N.Y. was on the Boat with Br Wheeler in going from Marquette to La Pointe, & we also returned together to Marquette. He gave Br W's lungs a thorough examination, enquired into his history & habits, & at my request has agreed to write me a letter to be forwarded to you. I have no doubt he will give you information that will be more serviceable than any thing I can say. But since his letter may not reach me in time to forward with this, I will say, he is fully of the opinion that he may recover & yet remain at his post for years if he will take a year to do it in, & take the right course during that time. His nervous system is completely prostrated, & it is indispensable that he ~~must~~ give up all study & speaking for a year. He should spend half of his time for a month, in taking short trips on the lake, – have a nourishing diet, & as much exercise as he can take without producing exhaustion. [illegible] Air, exercise, & diet, with a little medicine, & freedom from study, speaking, & all perplexing care will, in his opinion, make him a well man again. But if he does not give up all his missionary labors & cares, he cannot live. It would be well for him to manage the farm, – take care of the stock, & the like, but nothing more.

Br Wr was not at the Mission Station while I was there. His physicians & others thought he had better remain away for the present. After much reflection I concluded to read your letter to Mrs Wheeler, as the best method of introducing the topics you proposed. She seemed much pleased with the letter, but there was evidently a feeling of preference that the Board would wait a little before incurring the expense of sending a man, even for a year, to their assistance. She thought Br Wheelers plan was to give all up to the Henry Blatchford, for the present, & when winter set in he thought he would be able to write a short sermon a week, & have H interpret it. She spoke of Br Hall in the highest terms. In her opinion, he made a mistake in opposing the removal of the Indians from La Pointe to Odanah - Said he had written them a letter in which he acknowledged the mistake. Mrs Hall, she thought, never liked the Indians very much. ~~The~~ Mrs W prefered that I should say nothing to her husband, at present, about Br Hall's returning. When he was better she would talk with him & get his views on the subject. Without intimating that there was a thought, or a possibility of his returning I spoke of Br H to some of the old settlers at La Pointe, & Bayfield. All were united in honoring him. Said a merchant at Bayfield, "he was one of the few men that every body liked - That he had never heard a word spoken against him by Indian or White man." And here let me say, I think there is no doubt but that he would be glad to return if it was thought best. + He has a son at Odanah, - has recently lost a son at Sauk Rapids - & is entirely alone. He is getting a very slim support where he is, & does not like the country, ~~where~~ ~~he~~ ~~is~~, & is talking of making an effort to find him a place on Lake Superior. In all the circumstances, unless there are valid objections to him, it would seem that it would be best for him & also for the Mission to have him return. There are some objections in the minds of the brethren & Sisters of the Mission to getting a man for a year. ~~The~~ Br Blatchford would find it difficult to interpret for

24a

for a new beginner, & would be under the necessity of going with him whenever he visited. He has his hands full & more than full now. It is questionable whether a new man, for a single year, would diminish his labor much, but there is no doubt but the amount of Pastoral labor would be much increased & its quality improved. If however, Br Wheelers health, from any cause, should not rapidly improve, & he be able to resume his accustomed labors, there would be a decided gain in having a man on the ground at once. Mr Blatchford is doing a good work, & is doing all he can, & I fear more than he ought, yet he cannot make the Missionarys place good. There is some expectation that he will be ordained this fall.

Mr Miner & wife appear very well. He appears to be a modest retiring man, & if there is any lack I think it is in energy. The farm looks as well, as I expected. There will be but little hay on account of the flood. They will be obliged to sell off the stock, & this, in my opinion will more than compensate for the damage done to the farm. I am more than ever convinced that it is poor economy to keep any more stock than is absolutely necessary.

The Indians are cutting the hay, & they are doing very well. They have a white man to work on the farm by the day, but I found that the Indians were not altogether pleased with his management. There was other work that he could do better than they could, & it was thought best to take him from the hay field, & let a converted Indian, who united with the church, while I was at the station, take the charge of the hay field. He is a faithful, trusty man & an exemplary christian. I think it would be well to have some change in the management of the farm. It needs a man whose heart is in the Missionary work. I think a man might be obtained, who would go as a Missionary. Or if this cannot be done, I believe the time is near when the work may be done by the Indians, with benefit to themselves & the Mission. ~~A part of the farm might be~~ The man who has been on the Mission farm has had a son who has not been all that could be desired. I found Br Wheelers family very much exposed in health, on account of the very bad condition of a part of their house. A part of it is frame, & a part of logs. The log part is in such a state of decay that it is impossible to repair it, & as it is, in my judgment, entirely unfit for well persons, much less for a sick man. It was Br Wheelers intention to build an addition this season, but when he learned of the embarrassed condition of the Board, he changed his mind. I felt that it would not do to have things remain as they were, & urged that the addition be put up at once, & told them I would agree to take the responsibility. There were two reasons

Please say to Mr & Gordon, I gave a draft of 600 to Mr A J Steadman, because Mr Wheeler was unable to do it. It is to pay the carpenter who is building the Boarding house.

for doing it now, either of which I thought sufficient. First the health of the family, & second, the fact that it can be done from $50 to 100, dollars cheaper now than at any future time. The timber & most of the lumber ~~are~~ is on hand & is in a better condition than it will be in, another year. The carpenter & Mason are now on the ground, & can do it much cheaper than they could be induced to come & do it another year. Moreover the new stove, given them by Mr Stuart of Troy, will be entirely ruined in a year as things now are. And then they have not room enough for the family, poor as it is. I need not say the carpenter is at his work, & will have it ready to plaster by the time the boarding house is completed. There was not time to await a letter from Boston, & I felt that I should be deserving censure to leave without doing as I did. I think I can see improvement in the Indians. They are better clad, & are improving generally. There was a communion season whilst I was there & one man united with the church, & one infant was baptized. There is a marked change in the man who has just united with the church. It is the man who had stabbed his wife just before Br Treat made a visit at the station.. ~~He~~ He was a terror to many formerly, but now he can bear insult & maintain a meek & gentle spirit. Kind in his family, & an example to all. What a change! There has been an improvement in the school in punctuality & in the interest manifested. Br Wheeler

Please say to Mr Gordon, I gave a draft of 600 to Mr A J Steadman, because Mr Wheeler was unable to do it. It is to pay the carpenter who is building the Boarding house.

wished me to say that he would not make his yearly report, & wished me to give as full an account of their present condition as I could. There have been two additions to the church within the year. There was another who designed to unite, but has recently been tempted to take a drink of whiskey. He felt very penitent for his fault, & hoped he had obtained the Divine forgiveness, still he thought he had better try himself longer before uniting with the church.

I have given now all the facts that I think of, in reference to Br Wheeler & the Mission, & still I am in doubt what had better be done in the premises. I think they will be better satisfied (I refer to Mr & Mrs W) if no change is made at present. I think Henry Blatchford would prefer not to have a new Missionary sent, but would be very glad to have Dr Hall come back. I think there is a fair chance for Br Wheeler's recovery, if he will do as Dr Hall directs, but I very much question whether *he will do it* unless there is some one to take his place. While there is so much to be done, & much that must necessarily be left undone, if he has no assistance, I fear he will go to work before he is able, & thus cut off all hopes of recovery. But I must close my long letter, I must leave home this evening or I cannot reach my field in Michigan before the Sabbath. I have written a long letter because I have not had time to make it shorter. I have endeavored to be careful in all my intercourse with them & have no reason to think their feelings have been injured in the least.

Yours fraternally S G Clark.

Rev. S. G. Clark
Brooklyn Aug. 25 1859
Rec'd. Aug. 29.

done

Red Lake June 24. 1844

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir

Yours of Jan 19th came to hand a few days since I had just written you and sent the letter on to LaPoint P.O.

You request me to go more into detail on some subjects when I write again — In my last I stated some facts relating to Red River Settlement, with which I became acquainted during my visit there last winter — I do not recollect whether I gave more than a general outline At some future time I purpose giving more particulars of that interesting spot —

We are from 300 to 350 miles (by the usual route) E. S. East from the Colony — The distance is much greater by water — The Indians visiting there from this place are usually 10 days in descendinding the River — This Lake empties its waters into Red River 4 days travel from here — The current of the River is strong and its course is quite serpentine — The Indians of this place who go to the Colony in their Canoes, leave them there and return by land on account of the tediousness of ascending the long ~~water~~ course

Two days march from the Lake, westward commences a vast Prairie Country stretching off W. far beyond the Colony

Across the intermediate space (in dry seasons) is an excellent road for Carts — There are but 2 or 3 hills difficult of ascent, the whole distance, and the Rivers are easily forded Eight hundred or 1000 pounds is considered a cart load for an ox or horse across the Prairies.

LaPointe is nearly E. S. East, from here. It is about 400 miles by the winter route, and probably 600 by the water route

St Peters is S. S. East and probably 400 miles by the nearest winter route and 7 or 800 by water

This place is difficult of access from the East and South on account of navigating some of the Rivers and the numerous Portages. — Between here and the Mississippi are 5 portages (15 miles in all) and between the Missi & Lake Superior are 4 (17 miles in all) — In low stages of water there are more portages as the Voyageurs are obliged occasionally to take a part of the load from the Canoe and carry it round shallow places in the River

The St Louis River emptying into the head of Lake Supr and the Mississippi are the only streams of note on the route between here and L. Supr The St Louis has many very strong Rapids and on this account is in high water, dangerous of navigation None but those accustomed to rapids can ascend them in a Canoe — Indeed they are so powerful in many places that the hands are obliged to drop their setting poles and getting down from their Canoe into the River lay hold (one at the bow the other at the stern) of it with both hands and by main strength force it up the opposing stream —

The small Rivers are "Great and Little Savanne" connecting St Louis and Mississippi Rivers by a Portage of 7 miles and "Turtle River" flowing from "Turtle Lake the Northern headwaters of the Mississippi — A narrow ridge, less than a mile in width, seperates ~~the~~ the head waters of "Turtle Lake" and waters flowing north into Red Lake, and thence to "Hudsons Bay" — But a small portion of these waters are navigable — the Rivers being small and having many obstructions

I think the average cost of transportation from LaPointe would be $5. per cwt. Last Fall it cost us 6.25 — per cwt I was obliged however to hire hands under great disadvantages and we were 2 week longer on the way than is usual

The Am Fur Co will transport our things from LaPointe this year. We bring nothing from LaPointe of the provision kind, unless it be dried fruit &C — We do not use Pork or much animal food of any kind — What we do, we can easily procure here — We can purchase Flour at the Colony for $5. per bbl. or procure it delivered here for $10. — Whereas Flour delivered here from LaPointe costs about $20. per Bbl — Cattle and grain of all kinds are of about the same price as in the U. States. Beef is 3-4 cents per lb and tallow 4 cents — Oxen $50-70 per yoke, Cows 9-14 Dols

For the present we shall obtain our provisions, purchased from abroad at the Colony. Ere long we expect to raise all our bread stuffs. The land is very fertile and well adapted all productions grain of nothern latitude

We have sown Wheat, Barley, Oats & Peas. All of these Crops look very flourishing— With proper cultivation 50 bushels of corn to the acre may be easily raised

We can procure all the Corn we need of the Indians in exchange for goods— They prefer Blankets, Coarse brd Cloths and net Thread— but if we had a sufficient supply of Calico, Shirting, Flannel, Shirts &c— they would answer— These Indians are poor and so far from any market that they are glad to get any thing of the Clothing Kind— The rate of exchange is a Shirt or 3 yds of Calico or Cot Sheeting and 4 of Shirting for a bushe Potatoes are 1/3 the price of Corn

I do not expect to cultivate much ground myself— I find it necessary for my health to exercise some on the Farm. Over and above what I do not wish to cultivate for healths sake the brethren will for me— They wish me to devote all my time to the spiritual welfare of the Indians

My stock will probably consist of 2 Cows and a yoke of Oxen or a single ox The Cattle run at large in the Summer— We cut wild grass for their fodder in winter— Should I remain here for years to come I should not have much property of any Kind on hand— I intend to be at but little expense in building, and possess no other property but such as I could readily dispose of or take away with me at little expense

You say in your last letter. "I am not sufficently informed of the facts in detail, to enable me to have a very definite idea of the Cause which led you to change your field of labor, or select the place to which you have removed; in preference to Leech Lake or many other places, where large bands of the Ojibues may be found; and which are far less remote and difficult of access than Red Lake"—

I regret that I have not written you more in detail on this and some other subjects mentioned in your letter— I had relied on Br Hall by writing and orally to give all the particulars the Board would desire At the meeting of the Missionaries at Pokegoma winter before last - Br H drafted the general letter to the Board, giving the minutes of the meeting &c and also some account of my tour - I put some papers in his hands and gave him - such other information concerning my late tour as was wanted for the occasion. I left P before br H finished the letter and did not know definitely the contents -

Again as br Hall has been familiar with all my movements, and with the whys & wherefores since I started to come here - I had expected when he saw you, he would sit down and give you a full account of every thing relating to our operations, you would desire, and you would be better satisfied with facts from his lips, than with half a dozen letters from me - I would here remark that from the first I have not made a single important movement in this quarter but with the advice and approbation of the other brethren of the mission - particularly the La P brethren - This field of labor is not of *my own selection or choice*. I proposed returning to P, *my home*, and having Br B come into this region but he wished to remain there -

The following I believe to be the principle reasons for the "change of my field of labor" When I returned into the country Fall before last, the Pokegoma Indians had not yet resettled at P. but were scattered in different places

Mr Stewart, Supt of Ind affairs had ordered the removal of Mr Rupel (the Farmer) and the Blacksmith from P - He told Mrs A that he doubted whether the Indians there would again have a quiet home -

Under these circumstances the brethren at La Pointe thought and felt with Br Ely and myself that one or two of the three Pokegoma brethren - might be more profitably employed in some other field - It was therefore suggested that Leech Lake should be visited and this place and the surrounding country explored to ascertain whether a more encouraging field, opened to missionary enterprise

I will now state the reasons why I came here in preference to going to Leech Lake or many other places" &c

The Indians here were more favorably disposed to educate their children, were more agricultural and stationary in their habits, and less savage in disposition than the Indians at L. Lake — There was therefore a prospect of more immediate good resulting from labors among them —

A station here could be sustained as at little expense as at Leech Lake. Provisions from the Colony could be purchased and brought here, cheaper than, purchased at LaPointe and brought to Leech Lake

Transportation from LaPt here would be about 1/5 more than to L. Lake — This is the only item in favor of L. L on the score of expenses

As to "many other places where large bands are to be found" you seem to have been misinformed —

Leech & Red Lake Band are by far the largest west of Lake Superior or Pokegoma. Fon du Lac is the first band west of LaPointe, Sandy Lake the second, Both these are occupied by Methodist Missionaries, Leech Lake is the 3rd band — Lake Winnipeg band are contiguous It is small and scattered There are about 40 men. Red Cedar Lake lies between here and Leech Lake There are about 20 men — West of Pokegoma is Mill Lac Band not large and subject to the same evils as Pokegoma Therefore no attempts have been made (although they have solicited teachers) within 2 or 3 years to locate there — Furthermore the Methodist brethren have visited them and at Lake Winnipeg with a view to establish a mission if expedient — They have perhaps a prior claim — There are but 2 or 3 other very small bands (~~[illegible]~~ being parts of other bands) west of Lake Superior

If it was best under ~~the~~ existing circumstances to open a new station west of LaPointe — there is no doubt in my own or the minds of the brethren that it should be at L. L or here

The reasons in favor of L. L is that it is more accessible and less remote and a mission there would have been more contiguous to the other stations of the Board

It is without doubt very desirable that the operations of the Board should be as connected as circumstances will allow — When it was decided that this place should first be occupied — it was suggested that Providence might open a way ere long for the reoccupancy of L. Lake — Should Pokegoma be abandoned (as there was then a prospect it must be) then a Missionary or two from there might remove to L. L; or when Br Hall returned from the east Br Wheeler might be spared from L.Pt Station if the condition of that people remained the same

Furthermore we had just received letters from Ohio from several Individuals (some of whom are now in the field) expressing their readiness to come to our help — stating also that they purposed bearing their own expences — Had there been but a doubtful prospect as to the future occupancy of L. L I should not have located here as I did — I supposed that when L. Lake was occupied it would be under the supervision of the Am. Board; and that this therefore would be but as a continued link in the Chain —

As things have turned out I do not expect that Missionaries of the Am Bd will be any nearer me than La Point for years to come

If the Board think I am too remote from their other missionaries, or a Station at this distance in the interior is too expensive and they apprehend I should be more useful in some other field already occupied, and they therefore deem it inexpedient that I continue here, I shall submit to their decision & dictation — Should I remain, I do not expect that any other Missy of the Bd will be associated with me — But I see no reason now why I may not labor as successfully with my present associates as others of the Am B.

I suppose by strict economy we could live on $300. per year and possibly 250 I am willing to be limited to this amount or even less, if necessary — A school house is completed, our dwelling house is in the course of completion — Shall therefore expend but little more for building — We have now all the stock we need — I feel at home and happy in my masters work here, though we are so remote from the civilized world that we very seldom hear from home —

If I should be called from this field it would not be left destitute I presume the Missy Society of Ohio would supply the field with all the laborers required — I have felt very desirous that their views

(In times of sickness our trials are much augmented (having no medical adviser) for want of suitable medical text books and medicines — Heretofore our children have enjoyed good health)

The health of our children is now nearly restored — We need very much a variety (small in quanti
[illegible] adapted to [illegible] I have ordered the more common medicines Cathart

fields should be occupied and if I can see this done by others who are men of God I can leave rejoicing

Whoever will come and labor among these poor outcasts in the Spirit of his Master to to save them from present and eternal wretchedness, and elevate them to intelligence & happiness shall have my heart, my head and hand

Vast numbers are yet "sitting in darkness and the shadow of death" who will ~~never~~ in all probability enter upon the awful retribution of Eternity without having once heard that their "Redeemer liveth" Said an old Indian whose head was whitening for the grave to me "If it is true that the Son of God came into the world long ago and died for all, and if all who do not believe in him will be miserable for ever Why have not those who have the bible and who know these things told us before" – Why? Let the Church of God answer –

In my letter already alluded to I wrote you with reference to the prospects of this mission – Nothing of particular importance has transpired among them since – Their fields promise a ver[illegible]dant harvest. Almost the whole Band have been absent 40 days in a Buffalo Hunt They have just returned loaded with meat & tallow –

3d The Lord has recently been trying us in the furnace of affliction. About 6 weeks since our oldest son had a severe *attack of the Scarlet Fever. As he began to recover the youngest was struck down – From their symptoms we thought them convalescent when about the 20th day from their first attack, swellings indicating Dropsy made their appearance – About ten days after, the oldest was attacked with convulsive fits which continued 3 days – He had probably 30 or 40 in all – They were so violent at first we had but little expectation he would live through the day – We knelt at his side and in the interval of his paroxysms commended his soul to him with whom are the issues of life" – By the grace of God we could cheerfully say "not my will but thine be done" The poor Heathen flocked in to view – We rejoiced in the opportunity of showing them that the Christian tho far alone in the land of heathen strangers, has a "God near at hand and not afar off" in the day of trouble – I improved the opportunity to point them to him "who bore our sins and carried our sorrows"

The health of our children is now nearly restored – We need very much a variety (small in quant
of medicines adapted to Fevers and sundry diseases – I have ordered the more common medicines Cathart
emetics &c – We have no medical work but a borrowed one – Perhaps you could send us Dewe's Practi
or some other good medical work *

The things I ordered from Boston last Summer (by Dr Hall) had not reached LaPointe a few weeks since — As things are so long in reaching us I must order them a year in advance — No boxes of donations have been received — There were 5 or 6 Boxes on their way last summer from the East — We are now much in need of some things — For instance I have only a change of shirts — also of Pantaloons one and 3 years old in good deal the worse for wear — I have one old pair of shoes the boys for a long time have had none — Mr Hill may send us (of donations) as many shirts of all sizes, shirting, Calicos, Flannel, wool socks, Yarn, Thread, needles, Combs Pantaloons, Vest, & Frock coats as he pleases — also coarse boots & shoes for men & Boys &

Rev. Fred^k Ayer
Red Lake, June 24
& Augt 8. 1844
Rec^d Sept. 24.
Purchasing
Ans^d Dec. 25.
85

Lapointe Aug 16th 1844 50

Rev. David Greene
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass

If practicable I wish the following may be put up and forwarded as far as Sault St Maries the coming Fall

15 or 20 yds of dark Sattinett or fulled cloth
2 pieces of dark calico
1 " " light " variety of colors } About 10 cts per yd
2 or 3 pieces cot shirting
1 do of sheeting
1/4 " cot thd
1/4 " Linnen do
1 doz Combs

1 pr Coarse Boots no 8
1 " ~~Shoes~~ Shoes " 8
2 pr Shoes for boys 12 years of age and
2 pr do. for boys 10 years old
1 pr com shoes no 6 } for Mrs A — }

We shall probably want an additional supply of cathartic medicines as the Indians resort to us very much for them — Such as Oil, Salts Rhubarb & Magnesia &c &c

Mrs A & Children wish to be affectionately remembered to you
Affectionately yours
F. Ayer

done

Red Lake 12th January 1845

Revd David Greene

Very Dear Sir

Yours of July was recd about three months since. The goods also sent us from Boston were recd at the same time, all in good order except the medicine, several vials being broken and wasted. Many thanks for the valuable and seasonable supply of ready made clothing— The donations too were well adapted to our wants— We received valuable boxes of donations from Utica, Rochester, & Pulaski— Our every want is supplied and we say with Paul "I have all and abound"

The appropriation of \$250. annually for the support of my family is satisfactory— I do not say it is enough, alone, for our support. Did not the Board send us some donations and also our friends, we must (with only this sum) suffer for want of the common necessaries of life— This will be at once seen when understood that \$100 in the States will purchase more goods or provisions, or hire more labor than \$250. will here— For instance flour is from \$10. to 15. per bbl, Corn from 1.50 to 2. per bushel— and goods & labor proportionably high. Aside from our own personal support we must of necessity often supply the sick with medicine, food and sometimes clothing— Also the unfortunate and infirm, and aged have a claim upon our charities— We must aid the poor people in agriculture and building &c— I shall draw on the Treasury of the Board for only \$150. for the present year as I have unexpectedly \$100. on hand for which Br Hall gave a draft last Fall on the Board payable to Am. F. Co— It is not necessary for me to state how this occurred— The mistake did not however originate with me— In my last I specified some articles which I wished sent us from Boston— I have in the present order added others If that order has not been put up the following one may be substituted in its place— If it has, only articles not included in the former may be added— I wish my order limited in amount to \$70. leaving a ballance of \$80 for which I shall be at liberty to draw on the Board. Should my order exceed \$70. you will please cut it down by deducting— Cot Shirting, Vest 1 pr Pants— and medicines most seldom used— If less than 70 calicos may be added

20 Yds mixd hom Cloth of a firm texture
2 ps dark blue Prints
1 " Shirting
1 " Sheeting
2 Pocket Silk Hdkfs
1 lb spotted linen Thd
1 " " Cotton "
2 doz Horn Combs (fine)
1 " ivory " (small)
1 pr fine Shoes No 8
1 " Coarse do " "
1 " " Boot " "
1 " high quarter Ladies shoes No 6
2 pr Childrens shoes of Nos
2 pr boys boots
2 pr pantaloons for self
1 good wool vest
1 Box coat or Pilot Coat if strong and durable
1 lb Candle wicking

6 lb Glauber Salts
4 " Epsom "
2 qts Castor oil
1 lb Liquorice root
1/2 " Extract
1 bot sweet oil
1/2 doz Br Oil
1/3 " Opodeldoc
4 oz Peppermint
1/4 doz Cough medicine
1 lb Alum
1/2 " Copperas
1 lb Soda
1 Bot Alcohol
1/2 lb Magnesia
1/4 " Rhubarb
Syrup of Squills
Bristols Extract of Sarsaparilla
Gum Arabic
Purple Fox Glove leaves
Common broome
2 Papers Ink Powder
Blue & Red Ink Powder
Blank account book 2 qr
2 Penknives
1 Jack Knife
Leads for Pencils

I would suggest that all Liquids and pulverized medicine be put up in very good tin boxes or thick glass Vials & and be packed in a strong oak Keg holding 8 or 10 Gals It is almost impossible to get anything of the Glass Kind safely across the Portage to this place — unless very strong

Should you please to send us more donations the following will probably be as much needed as any Flannel Cloth & Sheets, wool blankets, wool coverlets — in fact woollen goods of almost any description — Partially worn Overcoats, Frock Coats & Pantaloons — Coarse Shirts for men & boys, Coarse Shoes, Childrens Shoes of a good size Plain Calico Dresses for Girls of different ages Remnants of Calico & Cotton — Thd — needles — Stocking Yarn Cot Hdkfs Remnants of goods of any kind we can appropriate to a good use — Coarse Cloths and Blankets are in great demand — and such is the demand for warm woollen goods that we could exchange almost any quantity for provision or labor —

I commenced this letter last Fall soon after the receipt of yours— but having had no opportunity of forwarding letter to the P.O. it has lain by unfinished until now—

On the 10th of Oct Mr Coe & Wife from "Ohio" joined the Mission He acts in Capacity of Farmer & Secular laborer, You will recognize in him the individual who was converted at Pokegoma a few years since through the instrumentality of Missionaries. He left P— with a view to obtain an education that he might be better qualified as a Missionary among the Ojibwes— Ever since his conversion he has sustained a ~~[illegible]~~ Christian character— I think he will be very useful in his Station

There are now 5 individuals attached to this Station who are sustained by the Evan^{c} Miss^{ry} B^{d} of Ohio— viz Mr Barnard & Wife, Mr C & Wife and Mr Wright

I had charge of the School until the Close of the past year— Mrs A has usually assisted me— Mrs B was also in the School the latter part of the term— My time has the past year been spent principally in Preaching and teaching— Br B & wife took charge of the School at the Commencement of the Year They expect to be permanent teachers— They are well qualified and Efficient No Missionary of my acquaintance has made more rapid progress in learning the language than Br B— Mr W has also acquired a good knowledge for the time being and is a well qualified teacher—

The present year Mr W is more immediately associated with me, as an arrangement has been made for him to do such secular labor as would devolve on me to do for myself and for the Indians— I am thus relieved from a burden of secular care and am enabled to devote my time more exclusively to the spiritual good of the Indians— Thus far all expenses accruing in aiding the Indians has been equally shared by the 2 Boards under which we respectively labor—

Hitherto we have prosecuted our labors together as efficiently and harmoniously as tho under one Board It is with much pleasure that I bear testimony to the Christian and true Missionary Character of my Associates

We have increasing encouragement to prosecute our toilsome work among these degraded heathen

We feel fully satisfied that God has directed us to this field, and that our "labor will not be in vain in the Lord" He is "prospering the work of our hands", and we trust he will ere long establish it - A spirit of improvement is developing itself - which betokens the future elevation of this ignorant, poverty stricken, sin ruined people to the social blessings of civil life

Spirited efforts were made last Spring, by almost the entire band, in agriculture - Some had never before planted them; others had for one, two or more years entirely neglected their fields and depended upon the chase - Those who had regularly planted their fields, enlarged their limits. We ploughed lots or parts thereof for about 30 families - which was mostly new ground not before cultivated - which had grown up to briars and noxious weeds

The Chief with a laudable ambition chopped and cleared about an acre of dense woodland - We assisted him 2 or 3 days in this new and (to him) laborious work It was to us a pleasing and encouraging sight to witness this man whose life has been spent in hunting, war, or busy idleness - swing hour after hour an american axe whose blows told well ~~upon~~ for the muscular power of the user, while a profuse sweat coursed its way down his naked body -

The result of these efforts has been an abundant harvest and the influence therefrom most salutary on the minds of the Indians

Several families have raised from 20 to 50 bushels of corn; and one residing near us an hundred - They are enabled to sell 3 or 400 bushels in exchange for goods - and reserve to themselves a comfortable supply for the winter - A Trader is here now ready to depart on the morrow with 16 trains or sledges loaded with corn, which he takes to his "Post" distant 8 days march. Indians from other bands in considerable numbers - starving at home come here to winter and live upon the hard earned fruits of this peoples industry -

This Band had very good success in fishing last Fall - Some families hung up for the winter 2000 others even 3.000 and more This additional supply of food to their stock of Corn and Potatoes enables most of the men to leave their families at the Lake while they are off upon their hunts

Smith

They now experience the benefit of providing for the future — The Sioux in a spirit of revenge last Spring fired the Praries where this band had usually hunted the Buffalo — The Plains were devastated to a great extent — The Buffalo finding but little to subsist upon, have for the present deserted that section of country retiring far to the south and west beyond the reach of these Indians — They are accordingly cut off from one great source of winter supply. Had they, therefore not "gathered in summer, they must not only have begged but starved in winter — This providence impressed them with the importance of renewing their labors upon their fields the approaching season

Not only in the cultivation of the field has the Chief set a good example and exerted thereby a good influence, but also in working with us to build himself a good log house — His example was followed by 2 others, last Fall, one of which we aided considerably The other built almost entirely without our aid farther than the loan of a team to draw the timber and a few boards and nails

Thus 3 families are in snug winter quarters, their warm houses forming a striking contrast to the cold, dark, smoky, bark lodges around

Others seeing their greatly improved circumstances, are requesting us to assist them next Spring to build — We purpose aiding 2 or 3 and more if we can. Our means are so limited we cannot hire, and dare not therefore pledge ourselves, to do more, than we are sure we can accomplish with our own hands. At the same time we feel no little solicitude lest the spirit of improvement now aroused, should for want of sufficient encouragement on our part, grow cool, and fall back again into death slumbers

We feel sometimes as tho we wanted to bring, those who aid us by their contributions, on to the ground, to witness just the position we stand in to this poor people — beginning to emerge from a dark savage state, to feel after the blessings, enjoyed to surfeiting in our favored land — I am sure I should not need to urge reasons, and press home arguments — to arouse their benevolent feelings — as I took them from one abode of filth, cold and wretchedness to another — to the comparatively clean, warm — log house — where the inmates look almost like another race of beings —

As a natural consequence the habits of those residing in houses are undergoing a change. It is not unusual for the Chief to chop wood for his fire and aid in drawing it. As I am writing he is standing upon the butt of an Oak 2 feet in diameter plying his Axe like an old chopper. Others are following on in the wake. One young man who is intending to build next Spring has recently chopped 10. cords of wood for me.

Heretofore the poor women have cut and brought to the lodge on their backs all their wood. Recently several of the men have chopped a part of ~~their fire wood~~ it and loaned a team of us to draw it home. This is considered by the women a most blessed improvement in their circumstances, upon former times. We have pledged ourselves to aid the Chief and his Band in the erection of a "Council House" The timber is now ready. He is about starting off on a hunt to be absent two months. On his return he intends calling to his assistance a few of his select men to cut the timber when we shall draw it together.

There is one deadly influence which if not stayed will I fear eventually roll in the wave of ruin upon this poor people. Even here in this far distant region that deadly foe to the Indians happiness and life has found its way. Some Indian Traders on the Mississippi above St Peters are "~~Spreading~~ Scattering fire brands arrows & death" far and near among the Indians. Individuals from this Band occasionally take down a few furs and return with whiskey. Drunken frolicks quarrels, sickness & death their attendant evils follow.

We have endeavored (but with little success) to persuade the Indians to let alone the poison. The Chief is opening his eyes to the evil and has just now employed me as his amanuensis to write a letter to the Indian Agent, Mr Hayes of La Pointe to exert his authority to remove the evil from the country. He stated to the agent that so long as the whites on the Mississippi above mentioned sold liquor to the Indians some of his people would when they got a few furs go there and procure liquor. He did not wish to drink any more himself and wished it might be kept from his people. He was fearful they would murder each other and also do violence to the Teachers whom he wishes to be unmolested. I have used (among other means) I think with good effect Dr Sewalls drawing of the human stomach presenting it as a Mirror for the Drunkard, and Debauchee to view themselves in

Our School has been in a flourishing state through the winter There are 15 regular Scholars and ~~4~~ or 5 occasional ones — The Scholars are mostly very constant in their attendance — and make good proficiency in reading their own language — The girls are taught to Knit and sew, to the great gratification of their mothers — The Children are very fond of music, in which they have been instructed by Mr Barnard — twice a week — The Chief sends 3 Children to school two of whom are our best scholars — There have been 9 families by us all winter — Some from each have attended school — Many more would attend were their parents located sufficiently near — But being 2 miles distant at the Village they seldom ~~attend~~ — There are a great number of Children at the village above mentioned — whom we are desirous to have in a course of instruction — but cannot unless we establish a school among them — Perhaps we shall do this next spring if we can spare one from our number here — The other side of the Lake nearly opposite to us are about 20 families — They have but little communication with the Indians on this side on account of the difficulty of crossing the Lake in summer in their little Craft — The distance is from 8 to 10 miles — This portion of the Band cultivate good gardens and are well disposed toward us — and have several of them expressed a wish for us to locate among them

We are not yet permitted to rejoice over Souls converted unto God — We have however pleasing evidence that gospel light is irradiating some dark minds and that a few ~~[illegible]~~ are seriously affected by the power of divine truth; so much so as to feel a conviction of their sinfulness and the worthlessness of their system of religion — Fear of ridicule and persecution no doubt deter them from, declaring publickly their convictions and renouncing their pagan rites — During the winter we have held a morning and evening service in Indian and an Eng service in the Afternoon — Our room is often filled with seriously attentive listeners — One year since there was often so much noise and disturbance that it seemed almost impossible at times to hold the attention of the people a minute Now there is seldom any conversation, laughing, or running out of meeting &c — ~~An~~ orderly behaviour characterizes our meetings — The conviction is evidently gaining ground in the minds of many that — we declare unto them the truth and that they are personally interested in ~~them~~ it —

Some of the adults and several of the children dared to kneel in meeting though it exposes them to much ridicule — and the danger of being branded "Praying Indian"

One man has attended every meeting for some time past, and frequently conversed with me in private, declaring his belief in the truths he hears — and confesses himself a sinner — He remarked to me some time since — "I am so strongly attached to one bad habit that I dont know as I can ever forsake it — I know I cant without God's help" — again The Indians call me a good Indian — and I appear so to them But ah! no one knows how bad Indians are — When I look back upon my life I see a great deal that I have done that is very wicked"

A short time since he said to Br Wright — I love to hear

Mr A. talk and preach and when I hear him my heart is full of truth — but when I mingle with the Indians I see and hear so much that is bad that I lose it all" — No one not intimately acquainted with facts in the case can form any just idea of the numerous and powerful obstacles in the way of the conversion of one of these, ignorant, depraved souls to God

Were there one thing in the universe too hard for God it seems to me it must be the turning of a sin polluted heathen Indian to be holy and pure in heart and life

On the 2nd of Jany of the present year a church was organized here consisting of 7 members all members of the mission

The following Sabbath we celebrated the dying love of our Saviour, in the presence of several Indian Spectators who for the first time witnessed this solemn and affecting ordinance —

Rev. Fred. Ayer
Red Lake, 12th Jan. 1845.
Recd March 17.

(Pembina)

Ackd May 9. D.G.
June 14. D.G.

Rev David Greene
Boston
Mass

Fort Snelling
Feby 19

I have recently received some interesting letters from brethren at the Red River Settlement — I have not room for any extracts —

The Governor Mr Alexr Christie wrote us, very politely and kindly tendering his services in aiding us in any business matter at the Colony — We have already received many favors from that quarter — We recently had an opportunity of reciprocating in part his kindness — An Indian of the place — broken open the deposite of the "Hudsons Bay Co" and took thence £400. Sterling and fled to this place with his booty — He was pursued and overtaken here. The Chief — brought the rogue before his band — when we assisted in his examination &c — All the money was secured and taken back in safety to the Gov.

He wrote a letter of thanks to us and also to the Chief — and generously gave the Chief goods to the value of $50. —

We need temperance tracts, addresses &c — to send to our friends at the Colony — They are destitute

Mrs A — & children wish to be remembered to Mr G —

Affectionately yours
F. Ayer

27

Red Lake Oct 4. 1845

To Rev David Greene

Dear Sir

Yours of May & June are now before me — I have not replied for want of opportunity to forward letters to the P. O. — and the present one gives me so little time for writing I can sketch but an outline of what I had purposed writing hoping another will soon occur when I can write in full —

We are making a steady (tho it may be a slow advance) in our labours of civilizing and evangelizing this people — I think our prospects are more incouraging — and I believe their confidence in us is increasing — Several families are now fixing down by us for a Fall and perhaps winters stay — Our School and religious meetings are consequently increasing in numbers and I am glad to say in interest — One individual appears to be under the awakening influences of the Spirit — I mentioned his case in my last — as being in an enquiring state of mind last winter — He has been absent all summer exposed to many temptations — Recently almost all the Indians here had a drunken frolick in which he was ~~[illegible]~~ strongly urged to take a part — but he manfully resisted every allurement I trust he will "be a brand plucked from the burning"

Rev Mr Bardwell the Agent of the Ohio Board of Missions is now on a visit here - He recommends the establishment of a Station on the opposite side of the Lake - and arrangements are about making to commence it the next Spring - Mr Barnard and wife and Mr Spencer who are now associates with us here are designated as the individuals to commence operations - Dr Lewis recently of the "Leech Lake Station" and Mr Coe with their wives and Mr Wright will remain here - I am happy to say that nothing has yet occurred to disturb the harmony that has ever reigned between all these brethren and ourselves - It will ~~no~~ no doubt be very gratifying to you to learn this fact -

I trust it is the prominent aim of us all to save souls - We all feel happy in our work and trust that God will make us humble instruments of winning many of the poor Indians around us to him -

During the absence of the Indians last Summer on their Buffaloe hunt - Br Spencer and I went to Red River Settlement - Our object was two fold - A renewal of our acquaintance with Christians there, and the procuring of Flour and some other necessaries - The blessing of the Lord attended our visit, in a temporal point of view in a very gratifying degree - I can but hope too that good to the cause of Missions and also to ~~private~~ individual souls will be the result -

We were treated with great kindneſs and attention by all Claſses— They showed a lively interest in our operations here and most liberally supplied our wants for Flour and some other articles— I was in part prepared for the liberality shown us—by a letter received from Rev Mr Macallum of that place—wherein he expreſsed a wish we would inform them if we were in want of any thing they could supply— To be brief I will here barely say that he himself gave us a load of flour (4 bbls) and an ox to draw it home— He also gave me an excellent Cow and Calf and a Steer— In addition were many other little Comforts &c The Govr, Mr Alexr Christie—gave us another superior Ox. Fifteen or 20 other Individuals principally the Scotch friends gave us 20 bags or about 14 barrels of Flour—

I was invited by Mr Macallum to preach in his church It is large and was well filled with an intelligent looking and seriously attentive audience— Mr M was ordained last Spring by the Episcopal Bishop from Montreal He alternates with Revd Mr Cochran in the Church Services— Both are truly excellent men— Mr C— has labored at the Colony 15 years— His labors are now confined to the White Settlers— We spent two Sabbaths at the Colony in the Afternoon of which we preached to the Scotch by special request— We had a deeply interesting audience— Many expreſsed a wish for a renewal of our visit—signifying their desire to supply us with all the Flour we needed

We returned home laden with 28 bags of Flour all a free gift— Though far from native home and friends—we felt as if we had found a new home and sincere new friends amongst these Eng & Scotch Christians

I must here close this account — but shall probably enlarge in my next — on this and various other topics — The Goods sent us from the Board have arrived in good order at La Pointe and the Medicines and a few other things here —

There is a prospect of a good supply of Donations — from friends in the States —

Rev. Fred. Ayer,
Red Lake, 4 Nov. 1845
Recd Dec 9.
Ans'd April 18/46.
D.G.

X

Rev. David Greene
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass.

OBERLIN O.
DEC 2

The Lord is blessing us abundantly with every needed temporal blessing and we are looking for the richer manifestation of his grace in our own souls and upon this people —

Mrs A— request to be remembered affectionately to yourself and Boston friends

Most affectionately
F. Ayer

Red Lake 2 Jany 1846

Revd David Greene

Very dear Sir

Some time in Oct I wrote you a hasty letter, stating at the time my intention of writing again and more in detail the first opportunity. None has presented till the present. Being a great distance from a P.O (500 miles) and there being no mode of conveyance except by Traders and then even it sometimes happens that for months we have no opportunity of sending off letters

In my last I gave a brief account of my visit to the Red River Settlement, and the very kind reception we met with there. The Colonists in general are but a little acquainted with the Missionary Enterprizes of American Christians But a few comparatively are well acquainted with Missionary operations of British Christians having little or no access to Missionary periodicals. In view of the dearth of missionary intelligence and their liberal benefactions to us I ventured to promise them that I would procure and send them the "Missionary Herald" and "Day Spring."

Will You therefore please send on a Copy of each for them The Herald Commencing 1845 and the Day Spring from its Commencement. I had thot of soliciting a Copy of the latter for ourselves. A few ~~Copies~~ numbers have incidentally fallen in our way, with which we have been highly interested

I had hoped when I wrote again to have more cheering intelligence to communicate than has been my privilege in former letters I had hoped to tell you that "Songs of Salvation" were echoed in this dark corner of the Earth by some of this most degraded of our race But I am not thus privileged to write. I can tell of convicted Sinners and of those who are enquiring without sincerity — What they shall do to be saved, I can tell of marked solemnity occasionally at religious meetings indicating deep thoughtfulness and the application of truth to the Conscience by the Holy Spirit I can tell of other things that encourage our hearts and inspire us with hope that the redemption of ~~this~~ a portion of this poor people is not far distant — but I cannot tell of one Soul that furnishes perfectly satisfactory evidence of having been made by the grace of God a "new Creature in Christ Jesus"

There are two individuals a man and his wife who are undoubtedly under the convicting and awakening, if not the Sanctifying influences of the Spirit and we ~~will~~ fondly hope that they will be "brands plucked from the burning and yet prove burning lights in this dark land

But while we hope it is with trembling — as there are so many obstacles and counteracting influences in the way of of their conversion and final Salvation — But with God all things are possible therefore will we not despair — Help is laid on one mighty to save — and redeem — One of the convicted above I have mentioned in former communications — He has for some time past been fully convinced of the folly of the Indian system of religion, and has intellectually believed in the truths of Revelation — Has also had seasons of convictions and seriousness — which ~~[illegible]~~ have been repeated oftner of late until New Years when God humbled him with his afflicting rod cutting down in death a twin daughter 2 years of age —

He sent for us to attend the funeral and wished us to give the Child a Christian burial — We accordingly repaired to his house — where were assembled a number of relatives and neighbors — We spoke to them of Death, the resurrection of the Judgement, of Heaven and Hell and a Saviour from the terrors of Death and from Sin and Eternal woe — and Concluded with singing and prayer — It seemed to all a solemn season — To us it was deeply interesting A new moral as well as civil era had commenced — the results of which Eternity only would fully unfold — A heathen Father & mother request Christian burial for their Child — They and many relatives and friends and neighbors sit in silence and listen attentively and seriously during the exercises preceding the burial — ~~They~~ mourners follow in procession in regular order the Corpse to the grave and witness in almost silent grief the last act of kindness to their dead —

No discordant sounds are heard on the occasion from the ~~the~~ noisy, drums & rattles and harsh voices of the Musicians ~~em~~ employed at such seasons — No wailing rends the air — No blood flows from lacerated arms and legs — Here was witnessed a triumph of truth over error, Christianity over Paganism — The Pagans felt it — and from that time have no longer recognized these parents as of their community — They have taken a step which they cannot well retrace — nor do they desire to — They express a desire to be instructed in the way of righteousness — On the way to the grave the man was overheard to remark to his wife "now let us turn to God, will you help me, if you will I think I shall be able to live better than I have done", On the morning subsequent to the funeral he sent a request for me to go over "and read the word of God to him" ~~and~~ I went over at once, and found a number of the relatives collected to whom I preached an hour after which I prayed with them — The visit I thought resulted in good — They have been constant attendants at all our meetings — and as far as we can judge — are resolved to forsake not only Paganism — but Sin and the Service of the Devil and serve the living God — Another case of some interest is that of a young man who has been sick the past year. He voluntarily expressed a desire that we would instruct him, and as often as his health would admit has attended meeting. He is considered by his friends as a "praying Indian" tho we consider him only as in a teachable, or enquiring state of mind

Our religious meetings both on the Sabbath and week day are generally well attended considering the circumstances of the people and their adherence still to Paganism

Our room is often filled, Last Evening it was crowded with a very solemn audience — There are a few young women who by their constant attendance at meetings and fixed attention to preaching, show that they are not in an altogether careless state of mind —

I have during the past two months spent considerable time preaching from house to house and lodge to lodge — Tho this is a very unpleasant, yet it is a necessary mode of Missionary labor among wild Pagan Indians

In no other way can the Gospel be made to reach all Classes — Many would never make their appearance at a public meeting, unless first influenced some by truth at their firesides — Again we improve opportunities of personal instruction and conversation as they visit us — These are of frequent occurrence — In the winter season particularly there is an almost continual coming and going so that our room resembles in one thing more a village bar room than a quiet dwelling place — There is an increased willingness if not desire among the people generally to listen to us We feel confident that we are acquiring more and more influence over their minds — and that their confidence in us is increasing — Without this confidence we should almost despair of being instrumental of their salvation — Owing to an unusual sickness through the whole winter and which is still on the increase — we have been almost every hour of the day applied to for medicine, or for some little comfort or article of food for the sick, or for administering medicine to them

Our sympathies have been much elicited in their behalf and many seem to appreciate kindnesses bestowed upon them

The mumps and measles have extended thro the whole Country but have proved fatal in comparatively few cases. Our religious meetings and the School have had fewer attendans on account thereof — The School however has been in a highly prosperous state aside from the irregularities occasioned by sickness — Mr Wright and Mrs Lewis have taught it and have spared no pains to make it pleasant and profitable — Several of the Children read quite intelligibly in the Testament and three or four that live in our families are making good proficiency in English — There are 5 promising Children living in our families — We have the Youngest son of the Chief (by a former wife) in ours — He is a good schollar and a pleasant good natured lad of 15 years —

We are solicited every month by parents to take children to bring up — Was it expedient to take them and had we the means we could have in a short time 40 or 50 sprightly childr

I have not of late heard of ~~the~~ opposition from any quarter to the education of the rising generation — tho the Indians must see most plainly that if it prevails universally among them their system of religion must soon fall into utter ruin — They must come to this conclusion — in witnessing the great change of the children in our school —

The Indians around us are improving state in their circumstances — and the spirit of improvement does not yet tire — We aided 2 families in building each a good log house last Fall — We also assisted the Chief and some of his men in nearly enclosing the Council House — It is to be completed next Spring One other has applied to us to help him put up a house next Spring — Quite a number of Indians who have been located by us this winter — have chopped wood for us Some Chop for Goods and others for Corn & potatoes, two one bags. Some have chopped 1 others 4, 6, 10 and one nearly 20 cords One man and woman of 75 years of age chopped 6 — This is an indication of good and we feel thankful that we have the means to pay them for work They have already cut about 50 cords for me and considerable for the brethren and would continue to chop all winter if we would buy the wood —

I had intended to have written further details but it is now Saturday night and my letter must soon be carried to the Trader in order to go by the present opportunity as he leaves tomorrow morning for La Pointe

Mr Barnard and Mr Spencer of this Mission contemplate opening a Station at "Red Cedar Lake" 2 days march South of us next Spring — We had supposed they would locate on the opposite side of this Lake — but for some special reasons they have about concluded to go to R. C. Lake

The Indians there have given them several pressing invitations within a year and their Trader Mr Fairbanks who was here to day renewed in the name of the Chief the request — Dr Lewis, formerly stationed at Leech Lake is to remain here — He is a useful man particularly as a Physician — Mr Wright expects to be the permanent Teacher of the school — Mr Lee still continues as former

The ballance of my goods from Boston a Bale and Box arrived yesterday — We are bountifully supplied the present year with articles of Clothing and goods adapted to our wants — I acknowledged in my last donations from Watertown, Jeff Co, Cleveland Ohio and some other places — By yesterday's arrival we received letters from Donors in Watertown & Cleveland — They ~~still~~ express a growing interest in our operation and intend to continue their benefactions — May we prove worthy of the trust —

I received also the Board's Circular but have had but just time to glance my eye over it — I shall give it due attention — I had intended to have made out a Report of my expenditures &c the last year but it is impossible at this time Perhaps the Board will think me delinquent in this thing — I expect another opportunity of sending letters to the P.O will occur in March — I intend without fail to give them a full report —

This people are very destitute of some very necessary articles not brought in by their Traders and which they often plead with us to sell them — viz — Tin dishes, Spoons, ~~Small~~ Combs

To accommodate them and promote cleanliness and decency I have concluded to order a quantity of these to exchange with them for corn, Sugar &c and pay them for work — and order a less quantity of Cotton goods —

Will the Board please send the following

viz 1 Gross Good horn Combs
4 doz Ivory Do
6 " Spoons (iron)
4 doz Tin Dishes holding about a quart
4 " " " 1 Qt
4 " " " 3 pints
1 " " " 2 qts
1 " " pans 3 a 4 qts
1 lb assorted Linnen Thread
2 lb Do Cotton Do
2 pieces dark blue Calico
2 " Cotton Shirting
2 doz Cotton Handkfs (large)
1 ps of Strong Black Sattinette } or black fulled Cloth — }
2 pr dark Sattinette Pants
2 doz plain Knives & forks

1 pr Coarse boots No 9
1 " " " No 4 boys
1 " " " " 3 "
1 " boys Shoes " 4
1 " " " " 3
1 " Ladies " " 6
1 " Mens " " 8
1 lb Wicking
2 silk Handkerchiefs
1 doz good Lead Pencils
2 — red Lead Do
1/4 doz Ink Powder
1 bund medium quality quills
1 Jack Knife 1 Penknife
2 Strong, plain door locks
2 " — " Pad Locks
3 pr 3 in butts
2 Door handles

10^{lb} Epsom Salts	1/2 doz bot Br Oil
2 Qts Castor Oil	1 Bot Syrup Squills
1/2 doz boxes Superior, billious pills —	"Lee's" pills have no power on an Ind^n Stomach
1 bot of Rhubarb	1^{lb} ~~Alum~~ Alum
1 do " Magnesia	1^{lb} Copperas
2^{lb} Liquorice Root	1/2^{lb} Calomile Flowers 1/2^{lb} Senna

Lapointe Feby 19th 1846 —

10

Rev. David Greene
Missionary Rooms
Pemberton Square
Boston

Rev. Frederic Ayer
Red Lake, 27 Jan. 1846
Rec'd April 3.
✓ Purchases ✓
Ans'd July 17. D.G.

1/2 doz Axes 3 and 4 lbs weight
1 doz strong hoes —
1 doz Clasp knives

Should there be Donations on hand to spare — shirts, socks sheets, blankets &c &c will be acceptable

Affectionately Yours
F. Ayer

Mrs A wishes an affectionate remembrance

29 vol 42 pp 282-3 1

Red Lake March 10. 1846

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir

Yesterday was our communion season, when by the grace of God we were permitted to welcome to the table of the Lord ten of these poor outcasts and also our two sons. It was a deeply interesting and joyful occasion. With grateful emotions of soul we said "the Lord hath done great things for us whereof we are glad"

We should doubtless have reapt an earlier harvest had we always "sowed in tears" and labored in faith.

We have felt it meet to lie very low in the dust before God on account of our unbelief and slothfulness. The Lord has wrought here "for his own name's sake" "not for our sakes be it known unto us". We say therefore "not unto us O Lord but unto thy name be the praise" I stated in my last that "New Years day" seemed to give birth to a new moral era among this people. It has proved even so. The death of an infant, and the religious exercises attending its burial gave a powerful impulse to serious feelings previously existing in a few minds, These terminated we trust in sound conversion but a few days after. The work thus begun among the immediate relatives of the child has extended ~~among them~~ until 8 are its hopeful subjects. This number includes the Grand Mother, the Father, mother and one sister & ~~brother~~ Also four cousins, all belonging to one family between the ages of 10 and 18. The mother of the 4 last mentioned gives some evidence of conversion and would gladly unite with the church would we receive her but we cannot consistently so long as her marriage relation continues with her present husband ~~He~~ He has lived the two past years with another woman neglecting almost entirely his own family. So long as she acknowledges him as her husband his influence over her must be diametrically opposed to a godly life.

The "Grandmother" is about 80 years of age. She was the wife of an English Trader who removed 15 or 20 years from Red River Settlement to this place— He soon left his family and went South to reside with a son in law a Trader on the Mississippi and eventually at St Peters— Now the old man died a few years since— One of the daughters residing here is married to an Indian. Two others are connected with French Half breeds They have all lived as Indians and when we arrived were not distinguishable by their customs and habits from pure blooded natives— The old woman has long been a leading character in Medicine Dances and drunken frolicks — On the very floor where she now kneels with the people of God in prayer— and in the very room where she yesterday partook of the pledges of a Saviours dying love— One year since she fought like a tiger contending with a drunken Indian for a little whiskey— On asking her a few days since if she was conscious of love to God she replied with great earnestness "Yes I do love God I loved Whiskey more than my children, but now I hate it. I love God and his word now

At another time when I remarked to her your love for whiskey is so great that you may be tempted to drink when you have opportunity She answered "No I shall drink no more— it will be brought here in a few days, and then it will be seen whether I am strong minded to let it alone". It came to her door, but she heeded it not.— On another occasion she remarked "since I have received God's word I have been happy and sleep well. Formerly when my relations died I lay awake all night weeping, I was so sad—. But since the death of my last Grandchild it has not been so tho' I loved it very much— I now look up and my sorrow leaves me, and I sleep all night

She possesses great native energy of character and a strong masculine constitution, but her habits of intoxication for 2 years past and carrying heavy burdens in former life have very much impaired her constitution and she apprehends she shall not live long

The ~~Father and mother~~ Parents of the Child that died were the first that came out decidedly on the Lord's side The Father is the one of whom I wrote you recently as saying to me, "There is one sin I cannot put away I know I cant unless God helps me" with the help of God ~~he~~ he has we hope forever abandoned it. He said to me some weeks since I have now no inclination to gamble. I sometimes pass when the Indians are playing but I hate to see it and turn away from it" Soon after the death of his Child a number of men had assembled at his house during the absence of himself and wife and sat down to Gamble They were busily engaged as he entered. He soon addressed them saying, "I have put away this sin and you will do me a favor, if you want to Gamble to go elsewhere - They rose and departed and he has not been troubled with gamblers since.

Like other Indians he was addicted to drinking whiskey when he had opportunity - He has been strongly solicited ~~t~~ two or three times of late to drink - but he stood firm

He is a French Half breed and has been baptized by a Catholic Priest - as have also most of his children - He has however been an Indian in all his feelings and habits He possesses a very discriminating mind and has remarkably clear views of the Atonement and Justification by faith - Several of his relatives here are Catholicks (in name) He has had several discussions with them on the doctrines of Salvation by grace and "the new birth" He always puts his adversaries to silence - and has induced some of them to come occasionally to listen to the ~~tr~~ truth - He has a good memory and treasures up the instructions he receives and being communicative imparts to others – We trust if his life is spared he will prove an efficient helper in bringing his people to a knowledge of the truth.

Br. Wright is about leaving on a visit to the States Francis (the Indian mentioned above) expects to accompany him – He is greatly desirous to become personally acquainted with the arts, customs &c. of the whites He has ~~an~~ very interesting family of Children and a large circle of influential relatives –

One of his daughters 12 years of age was admitted yesterday to the Church – His wife is more civilized in her habits than any woman in the band

The work of grace appears to have been deep on her heart. Previous to her conversion she was in the habit (a universal one among Indian women) of speaking petulently to her children when they disobeyed or troubled her – She saw this was wrong and tried to overcome the habit but still found "Old Adam too strong for young Melancthon"

Yesterday morning as Br Wright called at her house to invite to a special meeting – she was sitting pensively on some wood near the door She addressed him saying I shall not join the church to day I am too unworthy to go with the people of God, but I wish my husband and daughter may be received – Br W. enquiring the cause of her feelings – She replied "I this morning spoke angrily to my child – I am overcome of this sin again" – Do you watch against it and hate it? rejoined Br W – "Yes was the reply I do hate it and try to put it away but before I think I speak wrong"

Another interesting case is a young married woman Grand daughter of Eunice (the old woman already mentioned) Her husband is a Catholic, a Half Breed – He tried various ways to induce her to cease listening to our instructions, and forbid her attending our meetings. He urged her to consent to go with him to La Pointe and be baptized by the Catholic Priest – She almost yielded to his solicitations – About this time he left home and she being sick came to reside with her mother, near by us— She was quite sick for a time We conversed with her and God blessed the truth and caused it to take hold ~~with~~ of her mind with renewed power She resolved to obey God— Neither threats nor ridicule moved her from her purpose— She told her husband that she had determined to unite with the Church Seeing her decided he gave his consent, but soon regretted it and broke out in reproaches saying "Our Priest says we ought not to listen to them folks any more than to the whining of Dogs

His brother, a lad of 10, gives delightful evidence of the Spirits work upon his heart— Though so young He is as decided in obeying God as those much older His father is a noted Gambler— and he himself tho so young was extravagantly fond of it and very much addicted to it— The love of it seems annihilated and he says he has no wish to play— He thirsts for instruction and appears to love prayer— At school Mr Wright his Teacher often found him reading in the "Peep of Day" a description of Heaven and the account of the "good angels" The story always seemed new to him

Mr W— conversing with him one day said, James perhaps you will not always feel as you do now— When you get with wicked boys you will forget these things Looking full in Mr Wrights face he replied very seriously, "No Mr W I never shall, I shall pray as long as I live"— When examining him for admission to the Church I said to him, James what if your father should tell you to work on the Sabbath? I should not obey him Why? Because I should break God's Command This morning as he was starting to go off to the Sugar Camp 5 miles distant I said to him James always remember God "Yes he at once responded "I remember him almost every time I breathe— I always pray to him that I may not sin" "He seems happy in bearing "reproach for the sake of Christ" We named him Jas. W. Taylor

Two other sisters of this lad were received to the Church One of 16 appears to have the Elements of decided Christian Character on the first page

Another of 14 lives in the family of Dr Lewis and is an intelligent sprightly girl —

The Mother has expressed her determination to serve God — and would have gladly come forward yesterday with her Children — had we ~~not~~ deemed it expedient — The circumstances of her marriage relations are such that we shall not probably receive her until her connexion with her husband is dissolved

Another woman who united with us was baptized 2 years since by the C. Priest at LaPointe — She states that the Priest baptized her child and then insisted on baptizing her — She reluctantly consented She did not attend upon his instructions. She has been sick all winter, with the liver Complaint, and will not probably recover — whenever she attends meeting she is brought on a sled — She appears to love the truth — We hope she is a brand plucked from the burning — As far as we can learn she lives up to the light she has —

One other individual received is a woman of 40 She has Children residing at Red River Settlement from whence she last summer eloped with an Indian residing here who has a wife and several Children — She has been considerably under Catholic influence — Her Children were baptized by the Priest at R. R. S. When she first began to listen to our instructions she was full of Catholic notions and Pharisaical Righteousness. According to her own Confession she has been addicted to theft, drinking, and gambling — About two weeks since a radical change seemed to have been wrought upon her heart. She has abandoned the man just mentioned — and exhibits as far as we can learn a Christian Character — While I am writing she is thus remarking to Mrs A "before coming here I resolved I would never pray but follow the ways of the Indians but after hearing the word of God I could not help thinking of my soul. It seemed as tho something was always drawing my heart there — and pulling me to meetings

We have great occasion for gratitude to God that he has led our own two Sons ~~—~~ (of 10 and 12 years of age) to take a decided stand on the Lords side

We hope they may yet take the places of their parents as Missionaries – When they shall be dead or worn out – They are already useful as Interpreters Tho young they interpret readily and correctly any thing about the common affairs of life – And Mrs A employs them to interpret at female meetings &c – They are acquiring a more correct knowledge of the language than adult foreigners –

I could give many interesting particulars concerning the work but my limits forbid – We feel Assured it is of God and will not come to nought

Two or three others are still under the convicting influences of the Spirit – They are members of the School – One a lad of 15 living with Mr Coe was desirous of uniting with the Church – but we thought it best to wait for further development of Character

Two Girls of 14 who were giddy and wild have undergone a transformation of character in many respects – The Parents of one prohibited her from having any religious intercourse with us – She has however of late returned to School and steals in occasionally to ~~a~~ meetings – She told Mrs A this morning she wished to listen to us – but her parents forbid it –

The other one has been quite constant at meetings and manifested at times much concern of mind

Her Parents manifest a determined opposition to the humbling doctrines of the Cross – They have however been the subjects of deep conviction – and the woman recently said to her Sister (a member of the Church) "I almost go with you – but my husband holds on to me" – She will not serve God and she finds it hard to serve the ~~Dev~~ Devil – There has been but little excitement and very little open opposition to our labours – The work has moved silently and irresistably forward

For some time past we have held a prayer meeting at 1/2 past 5 in the morning — Weekly female meetings have also been held with the natives in which several of them have taken a part — For a few weeks past Mrs A has met with the children one evening in the week — There are quite a number who still remain in the ranks of Paganism who have been "almost persuaded to be Christians" They are ready to acknowledge the falsity of their system but the fear of ridicule deters them from openly avowing and renouncing it — The public mind has the past winter from various causes been much diverted from the truth During the winter months the mumps and measles have extensively prevailed Scarcely any individual has escaped the latter — On one occasion I called at a house where of a family of 6 All but the Mother were stretched upon the bed and floor sick with the measles I went thence to an adjoining lodge where were 5 persons — Every one was wrapped in his blanket sick enough to need a nurse — Owing to the sickness there have been 8 or 10 Special medicine Dances These have tended to keep the minds of the Indians in almost perpetual agitation and to turn off their attention from the truth — At these Dances leading men have sought by addresses and ridicule to strengthen their cause confirm the wavering — and reproach those who were disposed to listen to us —

I have witnessed more distressing and loathsome scenes of sickness and poverty the past winter than in all my past life — For three months past we have been applied to daily for medicine — provisions and other comforts for the sick. Dr Lewis has been attentive to the sick, and been successful in almost every case when he has undertaken — There has been but one death in the neighborhood — Fifteen or twenty have died, within the circuit of the Lake — About half have been very old people — The unusual distress, that has prevailed has given us daily opportunity of exhibiting the benevolent Spirit of the Gospel — and I think I may add with good effect upon the minds of the Heathen

We are encouraged to prosecute our labors with renewed zeal — We feel confident that the "Lord of Hosts is with us" and that if we are faithful to him he will "establish the work of our hands" he will carry forward the work of grace begun here, and we shall witness still "greater displays of his Almighty grace in the salvation of many now perishing in sin —

This Band are gradually improving in their temporal circumstances and manifest an increasing spirit of industry and improvement —

They have chopped about 150 cords of wood for the Mission the past winter — We have just assisted another enterprising family in getting out timber for a dwelling house —

The Indians are now moving to their sugar Camps — The Christian Indians will be near each other and within 5 miles of us I purpose holding meetings at their Camp on the Sabbath

Our School is suspended during the season of sugar making — It has prospered very much the past winter under the united labors of Mr Wright and Mrs Lewis — It is assuming the appearance of an Eng School —

Brs Barnard and Spencer are establishing a Station at Red Cedar Lake 2 days march distant

Br S you will recollect "broke ground" with me here — Br B came on the 6 or 8 months after They are under the patronage of the ~~[illegible]~~ "Evan Miss So of Ohio" Br B has acquired so good a knowledge of the language during his short residence in the Country — as will enable him to preach without an Interpreter — Br B will probably depart with his family within a few days for his new Station — He goes with our prayers and warmest sympathies — They all "have a heart to the work"

These brethren have been with us a part of the winter and shared in our labors and joys

The following is an outline of our expenses for 1845 Schedule of Mission property &c

Transportation Expenses	91.03	Dwelling House	250.
Building Expenses	75.06	Barn	50.
Building for Indians	55.24	School House	50.
Aiding them in Agriculture	25.00	Cattle	130.
Donation clothing to Sick & infirm	35.17	Farm Utensils	43.
Do to very needy School child	20.35	Carpenters Tools	18.75
Medicines ———	10.00	Kitchen & Table Furniture	33.25
Expenses incurred in burying the dead	15.50	Clock	10.
Kitchen furniture Clock &c	22.78	Corn Mill	8.
Provisions of Indians	75.	Canoes	8.
Repairing School House	15.	Books, Paper & Stationery	20.
Sundry incidentals	23.	Bedding 61. ~~Goods on hand 155~~	61
	$443.13	Goods on hand —	155
			$837.00

Amount of disbursements in Cash and goods $443.13
Amount drawn on the treasury of the Board by Mr Hall La Pointe in my name 157.27
Amt of purchas by Board at Boston 109 $266.27

Donation from Red River Settlement in flour 30.
Do " ——— " " Cattle 46

In addition to my recent order on Boston for goods &c I would desire the following
Viz 2 good pen knives
Blank book for Church Records
2 papers Ink Powder Blk & Blue
Webster Dictionary Octavo form —
Drawing Paper for maps and aparatus for drawing

Our boys have about $20. which they wish to lay out to the best advantage in books — They have had the "Youths Companion" sent them for a few years past and esteem it very highly — They have requested me to send for the work (well bound) from the commencement — You will confer a very great favor if you will forward the work or some other excellent moral and religious works for youth — to the amount of their funds —

We think highly of Abbotts works for children and youth — Our Oldest Son has quite a taste for farming — And wants some scientific and practical work on the subject — Our Sons have a taste for good reading and we feel it important to cultivate it and feel it more as they advance in years —

Mrs Hall's letter enclosing yours has just come to hand — Time fails for writing in reply this opportunity — In the meantime we tender Sister H, our most hearty thanks for her interesting Epistle — It is as "cold waters to a thirsty soul" thus to receive tokens of Christian sympathy from our native land.

I must close as the boat is expected ~~today~~ to call for our mail — I must add one word more however — You may think we have been precipitate in admitting persons to the Church

The subject was considerably discussed among us — and we came to this conclusion That when we were satisfied that an individual had undergone a radical change of heart we ought not to reject them or defer their admission if they desired it — All the persons received were Examined 2 or 3 times — and after discussion, counsel and much prayer for direction we were unanimous in voting their reception

We may have erred in reference to some — Time will determine — I feel my responsibilities greatly increased — "These native Christians ~~[illegible]~~ are truly as lambs among wolves —

Mrs A ~~sends~~ and boys wish to be affectionately remembered to yourself and other friends in Boston

Affectionately Yours
F. Ayer

Some would term necessaries of life — This was the result of our own choice — or owing to peculiar circumstances — ——— F. A

P. S. — I had purposed in my last correcting some misapprehensions that have arisen with reference to certain information rec'd from Ohio that it is understood "that the Am Board do not give me and my family a comfortable support &c — and it is supposed that my correspondents there have understood this from my communications to them — —

Rev. Fred.c Ayer
Red Lake, 10 Mar, 1846.
Rec'd May 1.
Ans'd July 17.'46.
– Punchan

Fort Snelling
April 8 – 25

Rev David Green D. D.
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass

This news was not only very surprising but somewhat amusing to me — As I have written but one letter (I think) and that to Messrs Cowles &c of Oberlin — three years since in which — I am sure there was nothing touching the subject in question — I wish all the world to know that if we have ever suffered for the comforts of life — it cannot be chargeable to our Board — Far from it — We have been desirous in every possible way to avoiding expense and — have occasionally been in want of comforts or what

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (30-36)

Ayer, Frederic
30. 2 January 1847
31. 12 April 1847
32. 27 July 1847
33. 24 November 1847
34. 1 June 1848
35. 28 August 1848
36. 5 October 1848

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Red Lake 2 January 1847

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir

Yours of July was received yesterday. The gratifying intelligence of the prosperity of many of the missions under the "Am Board" was cheering to our souls. From previous accounts which had reached us in the "Herald" we were led to anticipate such as your letter brought us—

You rejoice with us in the manifestations of Gods saving power ~~in~~ the dark ends of the earth. It is to us often a most animating consideration that our patrons and many of our fellow christians in the land of our nativity do most heartily sympathize with us in times of sorrow and joy adversity and prosperity. Your letters ~~letters~~ have always inspired us with fresh zeal and hope. Our requests for favors have always met a ready response and our wants anticipated and supplied—

Since our residence here you have two or three times kindly informed us that if necessary, we may draw upon the treasury of the Board for some more than the stipulated sum; and in your last reiterate the same sentiment. You speak with approbation of the course we are pursuing in attempts to civilize the Indians and express a confidence that we will not misappropriate means for the bringing about of this very important end—

My prayer is that the Great Head of the Church may so inspire me with wisdom and discretion and sound judgement that I may not expend a solitary cent as a distributor of the Churchs bounty injudiciously. I have been desirous of living economically in my family and being economical in all the various expenditures of the mission in order that something might be saved to the general fund of missions ~~also~~ that some worthy fellow laborers in other fields who had a ripening harvest before them and who were sinking in despondency because they had not the means to gather it in, might in part be relieved. I may "withold more than is meet" and it may tend to the "poverty" of their people of my charge— By withholding aid from one desirous of building and adopting habits of civilized life I may indirectly cut him and family off from those very means which would eventually result in their salvation—

Long experience and observation confirm me in the opinion that (among roving Indians) the most speedy and economical plan of benefiting them is to aid them to build a permanent dwelling and cultivate sufficient ground to supply most of their food, particularly for the winter. All their habits attendant on a roving life are diametrically opposed to the genius of the religion of the gospel and growth of grace in the heart

I am gratified that your views so fully coincide with mine as to the importance of inducing Indians to fix down permanently or nearly so, and adopting as far as circumstances will allow civilized habits

The past year we have aided two families in building We have also assisted the Chief in nearly completing the "Council House" It is so far done that the Indians meet in it for council

In connexion with this subject I would say that the faithful preaching of the Gospel on the Sabbath and at other times in the week, frequent visitations at the lodges in order to carry the Gospel to many who would otherwise never hear it, and also preaching to visitors daily at our fireside is of vast and prime importance

The school too should be considered as a field of great promise and usefulness — I conceive that in order for a Mission among roving Indians to prosper, the agricultural and building interests of the people should never be lost sight of, but be made a powerful auxiliary to preaching & Education

Previous to receiving your last letter I was contriving how to reduce our expenses so as ~~to~~ draw on the treasury of the Board for only $200. and I hope to do it ~~with~~ the present year without any drawback upon the building and agricultural interests of our people. I may however be disappointed in this as I was last year in trying to limit my ~~expen~~ drafts upon the Treasury ~~ses~~ to $250 I should have succeeded had not our transportation bill been ~~about~~ twice as much as I anticipated It was over $100 in cash — Unforeseen events and circumstances may make it necessary for me to overrun my allowance instead of fulfilling my present purpose —

It is a good maxim "Strike while the iron is hot". This axiom holds good in all its force with reference to benefiting this people. Favorable indications must be noticed, and when a desire for improvement develops itself in one or a dozen cases it must be encouraged and kept alive by all the means in our power—

Our place has been to watch and follow the leadings of Providence and expend, our strength & means when and where and as much as it seemed duty to at that juncture. We have felt that God would "supply all our need" that he would furnish all the pecuniary means that could be wisely committed to our trust

And it is even so. The two past years our "lap has been filled with plenty" Our "bread has been sure" Strangers have, unsolicited, supplied our table with "the finest of the wheat" Almost every article of apparel needed by us has been sent us from distant friends, and many who have never seen our faces have blessed us with their gifts—

Although we have not yet received a single article of the goods put up for us at Boston last Summer or from friends in the State sent us last year, yet we have not suffered for want of any thing to wear neither have we been straitened for means to purchase of the Indians all the Rice, Corn &c &c we need and also to pay the Indians for chopping and drawing to my door all my firewood

Our School has never been so flourishing and met so near our wishes. Tho the number is not much greater than at some former periods—yet there is a much greater proportion of Youth ~~than~~ An interesting class of large girls from 14 to 18 years have been induced to attend school this winter and almost without exception are very much engaged in learning to read and are making rapid progress— There are about 20 scholars mostly girls who are most of them quite regular in attendance—

Mr Wright has charge of the School assisted by Mrs W. Mrs W. is a "Bostonian" She was Emeline Farnsworth We consider her a valuable acquisition to our Mission She is one of a few who preferr~~ing~~ wearing to rusting out

As a mission we have been very much prospered in our secular affairs, "our garners have been filled" with such fruits of the earth as we cultivate. The Earth yielding abundantly. I myself cultivated nothing but Potatoes and garden vegetables. From a small piece of ground and with little labor I raised 500 bushels of Potatoes [illegible] very fine quality. One Indian family near us raised 200 and [illegible] 150 The Indians crop of Corn was larger than ever before tho ~~the~~ it ~~crop~~ suff[illegible] the drouth

We "have enjoyed unusual health in our families and "peace in our borders" We are suffered to prosecute our labors unmolested, and without any savage outbreaks, as at some other stations among the Ojibwes and also among the Sioux

The church appears now in a thriving state We have felt it necessary to its prosperity to suspend 2 native members. Both are females. One of them is the individual mentioned in my letter of March who eloped from R. R. Settlement with an Indian of this place who was connected with another woman. She is now living with another Indian who also has another wife.

This is the principal offence for which she is suspended The other individual referred to above being very sick last Fall was induced by her numerous Pagan relatives to unite in a Medicine Dance got up as it stated for her benefit. She affirms that it was at the earnest intreaty of her friends that she consented to this thing. Tho she seems to regret having taken the step — yet we have not satisfactory evidence that she exercises godly sorrow for it

While we mourn over the two fallen, we rejoice greatly over the remainder all of whom furnish increasing evidence of having become indeed "new Creatures in Christ Jesus". "who walk not after the flesh but after the "Spirit" It is a matter of devout thanksgiving to God that he has so signally preserved the Native Converts from yielding to the many pressing temptation that assail them at almost every step

Their relatives and old associates in sin, not unfrequently vex and tempt them and try to turn them away from listening to the truth. An instance of the kind occurred a few days since which I will briefly relate

By a preconcerted plan three Indians met ~~at~~ the house of our native brother Francis and brought forth all their "strong arguments" to induce him [illegible] to his old faith. The chief speaker is a very [illegible] man and used all his art to shake the confidence of F. in the Missionaries, among other things stating that we were influenced only by ~~secular~~ sinister motives in inducing the Indians to pray. that the Preacher had a salary from Government of $1000. per annum and the other male Missionaries $600. each. that the goods we annually received were designed by the contributors as a free gift not to the Teachers alone but to the "Praying Indians" and the Teachers dealt hardly with them requiring work or some other equivalent for what clothing and food they obtained of them ~~Missionaries~~.

They remained till midnight "laboring in vain and spending their strength for nought" as far as ~~far as~~ the object of their visit was concerned.

F remarked to me next morning that "the Devil had worked hard all night" in trying to shake his Confidence in God, but it did not move him at ~~all~~ from his purpose — he pitied them on account of their ignorance and blindness, and after they left he kneeled down and prayed for them." This combination was excited to this act no doubt by his zeal in attempting to convert them and others from the error of their ways.

He has "awaked to newness of life" of late and has warned his relatives and many others as they have fallen in his way of their danger, and entreated them to listen to the word of God.

The young converts take a very decided stand on the side of Christ. ~~Of late~~ they have been much reviled and an unusual spirit of "grace and supplication for the unconverted rests upon them The following incidents will illustrate the general state of mind

A young woman of 16 wishing to converse with her young associate on the subject of religion, invited 10 of them (5 or 6 of whom were without hope) to her house After partaking of a repast supplied for the occasion she requested her sister to read a portion in the Often testament. She then knelt in prayer - praying for those present - Being all seated again she stood up and in the Spirit of Joshua declared to her young Companions that she was on the Lords side - and requested all who were of her mind to rise

Two young women (her cousins) immediately arose thus signifying their intention henceforth to serve God. The minds of these two had been in a serious attitude for some days previous - but they did not till now take a decided stand upon the Lords side They ~~all~~ appear well and we hope they have chosen the Lord Jehovah to be their God - On the same day an incident occurred which presents christian character in another light On the afternoon 4 or 5 of the school Children entered the school house about the same time Three of them were members of the Church One ~~other~~ was a lad of 16 and another a young woman of 18 - The latter had recently began to attend school - and still in the pagan ranks - At the instigation of ~~Lucy~~ a girl of 15, the lad above named violently put the young woman out of doors and fastened the door She in a rage broke ~~some~~ windows and despoiled other property about the school house. The children alarmed at the mischief that ~~Lucy~~s indiscretion had ~~occ~~ occasioned - stealthily got themselves home L went upon her knees to confess her folly to God - the injured Girl had returned home. Being sent for by Mr W the Teacher - she came to see him - L - learning that she was on the way went to meet her Confessing her great folly and intreating her forgiveness - She accompanied into the house and there before a dozen or more acknowledged without reserve her fault and begged forgiveness of the abused person – It had a very happy effect upon the mind of the young woman and she appears to be fully reconciled to L– She has of late listened with awakened interest to religious instruction and has declared that were she not prevented by her relatives she should take her lot with the people of God There are a few other Young persons attending our school – who appear at times much wrought upon by the truth – but who through fear of persecution dare not seperate themselves from the ungodly

The line of demarkation is drawing closer and closer between the righteous and the wicked and "he that is after the flesh persecutes him that is after the Spirit" But a few now attend our meetings except those who are willing to be reproached as "praying Indians" We therefore carry the message of God to their dwellings and daily preach to them at our fire-side – – Tho it is the expressed resolution of many not to bow to the authority of the Gospel Yet these very individuals show that their minds are ill at ease – In private conversations with me one remarked – "Did I know that your religion is the best (or strongest as he expressed it) I would throw away my own – but my forefathers were of this way – and I follow their examples". I remarked to him it is clear that the religion we teach is the best (or strongest) because it makes the Indians who embrace it better but your religion does not – Your forefather were Murderers, Thieves, Liars, Adulterers &c and You are so and your children – and you are not growing better but worse according to your own confession – You allow Murderers, Thieves and the very worst of characters to belong to your sacred institution – yea they are the prominent actors and you never think of casting one out of your society on account of his wickedness – ~~[illegible]~~

He replied "You speak the truth (or our true) "We love our Children, our animals our gardens and other things but I believe You love God more than all" "I watch You and think about your conduct very often"— Were there room I could mention facts illustrating the truth ~~that~~ of the above assertion— that many minds are ill at ease—

There have been indications of another "refreshing from the presence of the Lord— and we have been hoping to see another of the days of the right hand of our God From some preceding remarks you will perhaps Conclude that God has in very deed began a work of grace among us. Thus far it has been Confined principally to the Church— The 1st Monday in Jany was observed as a day of fasting and prayer by the Mission families— It was a profitable season to most of us A new impulse was felt at the time and we trust has been growing gradually since that the Lord would turn the Captivity of Zion

Prayer meetings have been frequent. In them the native converts take a part "praying in the Spirit". For a few weeks past our meeting have been characterized by solemnity and close attention to the preached word Four profess to have come out on the Lord's side— Time must test the sincerity of their profession— Others have been considerably alarmed and more or less convicted of Guilt— but the fear of man predominating they are still "halting between two opinions"

When our hopes were the most sanguine that God was about to do an extensive work among us— an Indian arrived from the Prairies bringing intelligence that great herds of Buffalo were within a few days march of here— Immediately every family set about making preparations to go out on a grand Hunt and for a week past— they have been moving off to the Plains till the place is almost deserted— But a few scattering individuals remain They are principally old people and the Children of our school

Such occurrences are a most serious evil to our operations and disheartening to the Missionary. They serve to test his resignation to the Providence of God and try his faith. A Missionary among these roving Indians while he seeks great things, must be content and not despise the day of small things. He must bend to circumstances and be thankful for the least success

We have great cause of gratitude for a single mercy drop. Were there not a single case of hopeful conversion We ~~shall~~ have cause for thanksgiving and praise for the reviving influences of the Holy Spirit shed recently upon the church. The anointing oil is still upon her and the native converts appear to be going from strength to strength. The present refreshing therefore is of incalculable worth. though it extend not beyond the limits of Zion. Its influence has however been felt and acknowledged by several, tho ~~their~~ hollow hearts still resist it. It is most evident that truth and light are triumphing over error and darkness, and tho "the Kingdom of God come not with observation" it is working in an under current the ruin of Satan's Kingdom

Great political changes have taken place within a few years among all the Eastern bands of the tribe, and we are ~~apprehending~~ anticipating them here ere long. It was rumored last year that a proposition was about to be made to the Leech Lake, Lake Winnipeg, Red Cedar Lake & Red Lake bands to permit some other bands of Ojibwes who have sold their lands (which are now rapidly settling by whites) to reside among them.

Intelligence has just reached us from "Crow Wing River" ~~there~~ on the Mississippi that an Agent of Government had just concluded a treaty with the Ojibwes of that region for a tract of land in the vicinity for the settlement of the "Winnebagoes" and that some of them will be removed thither next Spring— Whether the Ojibwes of that section are to fall back upon their neighbors at Leech Lake or at this place we have not learned— A proposition was made last year by their chief the "Hole in the Sky" (a day) to the chiefs of this band to locate here—on the opposite side of the Lake—

Mr Hill will please forward us the following goods viz

1 Ps Blue Sattinette, good for service
1 " Calico (blue Prints) Merrimack
1 " Shirting heavy
1 pr Sattinette mens Pants stout.
2 pr do boys " for 12 & 14 years stout
1/2 lb Cotton Thread (assorted)
1/2 lb " " White
1 lb Black linen Thd
1 lb Wicking
2 Gross Horn Combs
1/4 " Fine do
1 " Iron table Spoons
1 doz Tin pans 4 qt.
1 " " " 3 "
2 " " " 2 "
2 " " " 3 pt.
3 " " " 2 "
2 " " Plates (deep)
2 " " dishes (about 1/2 pt)
1 Tin wash dish

2 good penknives
1/2 doz good black lead Pencils
100 good Quills
2 pkgs Supr Ink Powder
1 door Lock, plain but strong
1 pr mens Calf Shoes No 8
2 pr boys do stout No 8 & 9
1 small bottle varnish, for varnishing maps &c

My Order is less than heretofore — I presume it will be enough to meet all our wants — added to a good supply of Donations from friends in different parts — which donations we shall receive the present winter and next Spring

We have received letters from friends in Watertown Jeff Co. N.Y. Ogden, and Agusta N.Y. and from Danby informing us that boxes of goods were forwarded from these places for us — They have been received at La Pointe. We know not the value of any of the boxes except the one from Danby, which has been acknowledged in the Herald — Some other goods have been received by Dr Hall for us — but, he knows not whence they came. Have also received a box from Rochester also from "Brick Church"

Appended is a Schedule of Mission property now on hand and an outline of expenditure for 1846

		Cash expenditures—	
Dwelling house	250.	Transportation	110.
School house	50.	Aiding Indians in building	
Out buildings	50.	Agriculture &c	80.
Cattle	80.	Expenses for School	20.
Farming Utensils	55.	Farming Expenses	40.
Carpenter Tools	20.	Repairing house	4.50
Kitchen & Table Furniture	40	Sundry Goods at Boston	127.24
Books, Paper & Stationary	30.		$ 381.74
Bedding	55.	N.B. This difference	305.38 $ 76.36
Goods (various kinds	40.	in drafts and Cash.	

I have met by sale of sundry goods to the Traders by special request from them and for beef &c—

Amount assumed by Mr Hall for which he drew on Mr Hill in my name $ 178.14
Amount from Board at Boston—2 bills— 127.24
$ 305.38

Note My Cash Expenses for inland Transportation, Building and agriculture for the Indians has been much greater the past year than heretofore—from the fact that I have been enabled formerly to pay voyagers and laborers a considerable portion of their pay in goods— On the farm too I have labored less myself—having hired my hay ~~cut~~ made and drawn—and some ground cleared for a pasture.

In addition to these cash expenses we have paid bills principally from Donations which friends have sent us to a considerable amount for Transportation of Flour from Colony for chopping and drawing fire wood, for cutting brush, digging potatoes &c— Also for inland provisions such as Corn, Rice, Sugar &c—for my family—

Added to this we expend during the year quite a sum in goods to the extreme aged, sick, infirm—School Children

It will be remembered that ~~no~~ none of the goods ordered last year from Boston—or Donations from friends have yet been received— They may therefore be considered as on hand

Feby 11th There was a new case of awakening in the School yesterday – One or two other (young women) who are members of the School are still seriously disposed and ~~xxx~~ exhibit at times considerable feeling Fear of Parents and near Relatives prevent their fully committing themselves – as they were strictly charged by them as they left recently for the "Plains" "not to pray" –.

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake, Jan. 2 –
Feb. 11. 1847

Recd April 23.
Ansd May 14

Falls St Croix W T
March 26th — 20

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Boston
Mass

The young woman who was yesterday reawakened was during the revival last winter powerfully convicted and resolved to obey God, but her Father opposed her so decidedly that she obeyd him rather than God

Recently – her father on leaving for the Plains – ~~charged~~ forbade her "praying during his absence" She remarked yesterday to a companion that she would pray if her father turned her out of doors

Respects to Mrs Hill I had purposed writing her this opportunity

Most Affectionately yours
F. Ayer

31

Red Lake April 12. 1847

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir

Two months this day I addressed you by letter sending it to La Pointe P. O. Presuming it has reached you or will soon — I shall not make particular reference to the contents — farther than saying that in case the goods I ordered ^shall^ have not already been packed on the receipt of this — the following article may be added Viz — 2 doz 5 qt Tin Pans 2 doz 2 or 3 qt do 2/12 doz 6 Qt 2 doz 3 pt
1 Boyers French Dictionary — or some other author if more approved
1 "French without a master" 2 "New English Spelling books", published by a Society for the diffusion of Useful Knowledge" — "Dr Scudder's address to Children and Youth — embellished with engravings — 2 Copies

When Mr Ely was in Boston last summer he gave my name as a subscriber to the "Am" Penny Magazine" edited by T. Dwight, N. Y. — I learned from him (Mr E) that Mr Hill had or would pay the subscription for the current year — We are much pleased with the work and desire it particularly on our Sons' account — Will Mr. H. please pay the subscription for the present year — I perceive by the "Prospectus" that it is $2.

Nothing of special moment of a religious character has occurred here since I last wrote you — The Indians returned in March from their "Buffalo Hunt" tarried by us but a short time, and then moved to their Sugar Camps The Christian Indians who went out on to the "Plains" were absent 9 weeks — They always rested upon the Sabbath tho' it subjected them to the most trying ridicule and contempt — They appear to have endured reproach as Christians

There are 8 Indians now in regular standing in the Church. All these appear to be rooted and grounded in the truth— Still I should not be surprized if in an evil hour they should be overcome by some of the powerful temptations that assail them on every side

There have been no additions to the Church within the past year— Two or three individuals last winter were the subjects of conviction and we hope of saving conversion

I think it probable they will ere long be admitted as members of the church— Some circumstances have made it expedient to wait for some further developement of Christian Character.

We deem it important to bring those who furnish satisfactory evidence of being regenerated at once under the watch and care of the church— When this evidence is not clear we deem it prudent to wait a season— We prefer a pure church tho small to one less pure and of greater numerical strength

The anticipated sale of their lands is agitating the public mind more and more— It will doubtless be so until the event takes place— Most of the Indians express a readiness to sell their lands on favorable terms— Some however do not They dread the too near approach of the "Big Knives" They prefer to be Lords of their own soil and masters of themselves

We have not learnt what object the U. States have in view in purchasing this far North Western inhospitable country— but presume— It is the design of Government to preserve it as Indian territory— on which to locate other Indians as shall hereafter seem best— No minerals have yet been discovered in the Country— and most of it is altogether for unsuitable for agricultural purposes— Except small tracts about Lakes and the Prairies that lie to the westward of us—

Our School closed about a month since – owing to the scattering of the Children to the sugar Camps of their parents – They will probably return in about 20 days when it will be at once resumed – There is a prospect that it will larger than any previous summer – as more families will locate in the immediate neighborhood for making gardens (or planting) –

When we located here there were but 2 families who cultivate field ~~here~~ or made it their home – The main settlement is 4 miles west of us – Another neighborhood of a few families is 2 miles East in the vicinity of the trading house – Between these two and us there are no ~~locations~~ families located except for a few weeks at the fishing season in the Fall – We are too remote from the settlements east and west of us to secure the attendance of the Children at school – There are several families at both places who would send their Children to school if they were in calling distance.

The question will naturally arise in your mind why did you not locate near one of these villages – It is simply this – The land in the vicinity of the trading Post is rather inferior in quality – and unsuitable in other respects to locate Indians upon – Again we could get a grant of none – except a small broken tract and too contiguous ~~near~~ the trading Post – on account of the immoral influence always emanating from these establishments in this Country

We were very desirous of locating near the village ~~west of~~ us but as all the ground (except what the Indians cultivate) was divided off into sugar bushes which the Indians of this place regard as some of their most valuable private property – we could not get a location without exciting the ill will of some individuals—

This spot was offered us—without any objection on the part of any one—We accordingly accepted it—hoping in time to draw the Indians around us and thus build up almost entirely a new settlement—We have succeeded in this as well as we anticipated—There are 5 or 6 families by us who have moved from the village west and the chief and 3 or 4 families from the village East.

St Paul M.T.
May ~~10~~ 21 1849
10

Rev. David Greene,
Missionary Rooms, 33 Pemberton Square
Boston

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake April 12, 1849
Rec. June 8.

We have assisted in building 7 log dwelling houses and a Council house for the Indians—These with our own buildings give the place quite a village aspect—others are wishing to build—Some from the Band the opposite side of the Lake—are coming over every spring and locating on this side on account of the superior advantages enjoyed here— Our situation is healthful and very pleasant—being at the mouth of a small River of excellent water—which is favorable for water works—if ever called for—

Affectionately Yours

F. Ayer

Mrs A. requests an affectionate remembrance—

Red Lake July 27 - 1847

Rev S. B. Treat

Very Dear Sir

Yours of May 14th came to hand a few days since - I can reply to it but briefly - by the present opportunity —

I trust ere this our dear brother and fellow laborer Mr Greene is restored to health - and permitted in the kind providence of God to resume at home his very important duties - You remark we are all afflicted in his affliction - Our hearts reecho the sentiment - To no one individual of the "Board" do we feel so lively and close attachment - For near 20 years of missionary toil - he has been our guide and counsellor - Has shared with us in our hopes and fears, joys and sorrows - How can we too but be "afflicted in his affliction" — —

We all feel as tho we could not spare such men as Armstrong and Greene - But our divine Master has all along taught us that we can - As he takes away an Elijah - he raises up an Elisha to fill his place thus teaching us to live by faith on him and not trust in an arm of flesh —

We thank you dear brother for tendering us your sympathies in our work - We need very much your prayers that we may be thoroughly furnished for our great business of winning these lost heathen to Christ

For a few months past our Zion has passed through trying and adverse scenes – The spirit of war has extensively prevailed around us – The Demon – has invaded the church and – torn from it one whom we hoped would pass the firy ordeal – and be a standing rebuke to those whose "feet are swift to shed blood"

The individual in question is the only native adult male member of the Church – He united with the Church a year ago last March – – We have flattered ourselves that his influence – would be salutary upon his poor Countrymen – He is an Indian of unusual sagacity and intelligence, quick of comprehension and Capabable of doing much good – At times since his Connexion with the Church – he has appeared to feel a lively interest in the spiritual welfare of his people and warned them and intreated them to flee from the wrath to come – Considering his former vicious life and the many temptations to apostacy – he has constantly endured – since he came out from the heathen – he has done remarkably well in general – tho within this period he has three or four times – acted quite inconsistent with his high professions – When convinced of his sin he has seemed to turn from it unto God – and be more watchful and prayerful –

He has once gloried in war and counted himself in the formost ranks of the brave – On the getting up of a large war party here this summer – he caught the spirit and neither intreaties, remonstrances [illegible] the most solemn warnings – seemed to have the least influence in staying his downward course

On his return from the war excursion he voluntarily confessed that he had had no rest day nor night – and he repeatedly told his associates that he and they were all doing wrong &c He says he is wretched and has no peace – Still he does not return to the Lord – Last Sabbath he spent in gambling a vice to which he was formerly extravagantly addicted

He urges his wife and family to persevere in the ways of well doing and tells them he has destroyed himself, but he hopes they will not follow his example – His wife and mother in law (both members of the church) appear deeply afflicted – He says his wife entreats him to turn again to the Lord but he has no heart to – Thus the poor mans case stands

This my brother is a mournful page in the brief history of this little Zion – But it is true and must be told tho our hearts bleed in the recital –

Tho such defections deeply sadden our hearts it they do not sink them in despondency and discouragement

Thanks to God the anchor of hope still clings to the Rock of ages – and the eye of faith reads undimmed the immutable promises of God relating to the certain triumphs of the Gospel in every heathen land –

Our "Redeemer is mighty" Stronger than the "strong man armed" – and he will yet subdue by his grace this wretched, perverse people to himself –

Our hearts are gladdened on every arrival of the "Herald" by the cheering intelligence from Missionary fields in various parts of the world – The interesting fact your letter furnishes of the consecration to the Missionary work of several young men in N. Y. Th Seminary is truly very animating

Our School under the care of Mr Wright and wife has been larger and more regular than in any former summer — The agricultural interests of the Indians are demanding yearly an increased amount of labor on our part — Quite a number of families clear off every spring new ground for planting — all of which they expect us to aid in logging (if timbered land) and ploughing — Br Lad the Farmer, worked with his team ~~for~~ the Indians about 3 weeks last spring — Almost all of the men who have families — assisted in their fields — I presume more corn will be raised by this Band this season than by all the other Bands in the nation united — Several families also will probably have one ~~or~~ two hundred bushels of potatoes — Indians are applying to us at a Village 4 miles from us to aid them in building houses — We have aided this Village yearly in the ploughing of their fields —

It is confidently expected that a treaty will be held within a few days, with these Indians and several neighboring Bands for the Cession of their Country to the U. S. for the purpose of settling upon it the Ojibwe ~~about~~ ~~who have~~ in the vicinity of Lake Supr and South of them — who have already sold their lands to the U. S. I understand that some of those Bands will be removed ere long — I suppose the Country will be considered an Indian Reservation — and that Whites and Whiskey — will be excluded — If so I shall hope that the anticipated measures will not prove unfavorable to Missionary operations here —

If Mr G is at Boston please remember me affectionately to him

Yours truly

F. Ayer

P. S — I have just heard of the arrival at L. Pt of a box for me from Boston —

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake July 12 1847
Rec'd Sept 24
Ans'd Apr. 2 D.G.

33

Red Lake Nov 24. 1847

To Rev David Greene

Very Dear Sir

My last letter to the Board I think was written in August and directed to Mr Treat I have had no opportunity since while at home of sending letters to the P.O

About the 1st of Sept I started on a journey to Red River Settlement accompanied by Mrs A and boys — With the exception of two days by Canoe Mrs A travelled the whole distance in an ox cart — Her health was much improved by this mode of travelling and walking occasionally by the way — We took our sons to the "Colony" with the hope of getting them into Mr Macallums school for the winter — Before leaving home we conceived the plan of Mrs A remaining with the boys and taking care of them in case we found no suitable home for them — She felt as tho her health required a release for a season of the many pressing and corroding cares which were wearing her out — On making application to Mr M for the admittance of the lads to his school we found they could not be received unless they become members of his family subject to the payment of £20. per annum for each for tuition and board — As we had no means to defray such an expense — we concluded it best for Mrs A to take a room — and take the boys under her own charge and secure to them 2 or 3 lessons daily from a teacher of a neighboring Common school — We made an arrangement with a young man — accordingly — and I rented a room for the winter at a low price — for my family who commenced keeping house the day before I left for home

My Drafts on the Treasury of the Board will not be increased at all by this new arrangement for my family.

The education of the Boys has devolved almost exclusively on Mrs A to the present time – Her health, their advanced age and attainments in knowledge – seem to imperiously demand a change in the mode of education.

As is the case in many Countries where Missionaries rear families – there are no schools here at all suitable for them – We feel that they have been too long perhaps already in heathen society – Duty to God, the Church and them demand, now, we feel, some favorable change – We had thought that a winters stay at the Colony would serve as a good preparatory step to entering some school or institution in the States – next year – We have had three places more particularly in view – Quincy, Oberlin and Galesburg I am acquainted with the two first named institutions but not with the latter – With the Projectors of it however Messrs Gale & Kellogg I was acquainted in Oneida County and known them to be most excellent men and well qualified for teachers of youth – and for conducting an institution on the manual labor system –

We wish our sons trained rather to be useful than great & learned men – We wish them educated where the piety of the Institution is of an high order – and where due attention is paid to physiological habits

We wish them so educated that if called of God, into the Mission service – they will be prepared to "endure hardness as good soldiers of Jesus Christ" –

I have recently written Messrs G & K making inquiries concerning their institution &c and whether the lads can secure a good home among them if it should be deemed best to send them or take them to Galesburg next summer

It may be that we are laying and carrying out plans for our sons education which the Board will not approve - If so You will please chide us and set us right - We suppose the Board are not particular as to the course individual Missionaries pursue in educating their Children or disposing of them if they do not overdraw on the Treasury of the Board for their support - or if they do not expend too much time from their appropriate fields of labor in attending to their Children - We should be sorry to pursue any measures of which the Board would disapprove

Our solicitude for the future welfare of our sons and our desire that they may be fitted to be useful to this wretched ruined world - may lead us to act unwisely in securing a foreign home for them - We feel that we have some responsibilities ~~in~~ relation to them which none can assume but ourselves -

We feel that a parents responsibilities are not easily nor often safely imposed on others - We cannot, we dare not turn our Children over into the hands of strangers to educate until we feel satisfied that they would be as well off in their hands as our own - -

The pecuniary provision the Board have made for Missionaries Children we deem amply sufficient - we hope we may find a situation for our sons where they can in part support themselves, particularly the oldest who is 13 and who is robust and active -

I hope should we send our sons to the States as is Contemplated that we shall not be obliged to draw on the Board for 1848 for any more than our annual allowance

We may however if we receive nothing as donations from our private friends or the Board We have not received (I think) a single article from any quarter in the shape of donations during 1847 — neither have we heard that we may in 1848 — Br Hall writes me "Nothing at all has arrived from any quarter for you this summer — Have your friends all forgotten your wants — or do you neglect to apprize them of them?' In my last letter or the one immediately preceding it — I wrote that I hoped to limit our drafts on the Treasury of the Board to $200. for 1847 This I have done notwithstanding — we have failed of receiving aid as usual from the friends of missions in various parts It may be our friends think we are doing as little apparent good — that they had better turn their offerings into another Channel — — And it may be a trial of our faith — It gives us no uneasiness — The God of missions lives and will fulfil his promises to us if we are in the path of duty — We have food and raiment enough yet and we expect to have so long as our Master wills our stay in the field — We recently received a part of the things I last ordered from Boston — The remainder will be brought in the coming winter — We have but a little other goods of any Kind on hand except what is in daily use — —

For about a year past there have been indications that I should not long need the benefactions of the Church in this land — but that my health would demand a change of Climate and occupation — I have been troubled with a bronchial affection — and for some weeks past have suffered considerable at times when conversing at much length or preaching — The exercises of the Sabbath have been very prostrating — I am much better now and anticipate no serious sickness immediately if I do not expose myself too much

57

Writing a letter of a single sheet generally occasions a severe pain in the Chest — I am not able to think intensely speak or write protractedly — without suffering from it

Yet I can work out of doors, or travel all day almost as well as I ever could — and indeed nothing but exercise seems to do me much good —

You are doubtless wishing to hear of the state of this Mission — To the eye of sense almost all is dismal and disheartening For six months past Satan seems to have been let lose among this people, exciting them to war abroad and mischief at home # During the Summer a very large war party was raised, including almost every man of the Band, and also all the lads large enough to learn the art of war — They were joined by about 50 from other Bands Their object was to take vengeance on the Sioux of the Plains, who, a little more than a year previously had killed 6 of this Band # when out on a buffalo hunt — They had referred the case to our Government, but as they took no notice was taken of it, they were determined to obtain redress in their own way —

After working themselves up to a high pitch of military ardor by dances, feasts &c they went to seek the enemy — Sickness and hunger thinned their ranks considerably and several soon returned # the greater part, however traversed the plains to a great distance, thirsting for the blood of their foes — They saw them, but always in too large parties to warrant success in attacking them They all returned in about a month, empty handed, disappointed and somewhat chagrined & many of them in a state of mind which was naturally generous. Many of them (mostly young men and lads) were full of a spirit of mischief manifesting it by clubbing, stoning shooting our cattle and throwing axes at them and thus laming them and endangering their lives

Great depradations were committed upon our fields of Potatoes and Corn — Fences were torn down — Our Cattle turned out of the yards in the night time and driven away or suffered to roam about at large ; while the Indians fields not being fenced were exposed to their depredations. Our patience was thus often put to the severest test and we found it necessary to keep a guard upon our spirits — lest we be "overcome of evil" — One instance will show the ungrateful and abusive spirit manifested by some — One afternoon a young man called at my house and said to me "wont you pity me, and give me something that will answer for leggins — I am going on to the plains hunting my legs are naked — and I can procure nothing elsewhere" I granted his request — he seemed pleased and returned home — A few hours after — he came and ground his axe on our Grindstone and on his way home crossed a pasture where my cattle were — He hurled his axe with great force at one of them — It struck the animal just above the gambrel joint and penetrated some distance into the bone — Had it hit her in the side it must have proved fatal —

Our rights have been trampled upon more, and we have been subjected to more trying abuse the last Summer and Fall, than during all the preceding time we have been here — We see the Devil's own foul hand and malicious heart in all this — He is determined to oust us from his strong hold and old domain,

Not satisfied with shooting his malicious darts at us he has thrust sore at all the native members of this little Zion — and seduced the only adult male member from his allegiance to Christ and is making him his active though unhappy accomplice in his hellish plots — He caught the war mania last Summer and ~~he~~ fell under ~~th~~its withering power — We warned and entreated but all in vain — On his return from the war excursion he confessed that he had been a most unhappy man but still he would not "return unto the most High"; but abandoned himself to gambling and its accompanying vices — He has been absent about 3 months on the Plains in pursuit of Buffaloe —

Another member of the Church has been convicted of Adultery — She has resided in one of the Mission families about 2 years past — She is a lady about 16 years of age and bid fair to be useful to her people —

She has not exhibited that Godly Contrition for her sin which we have desired to see and such as we think would warrant restoring her to the fellowship of the Church —

The Grandmother of this youth died recently in the triumphs of Christian faith — She died of bronchitis Her name was Eunice. I gave you some 18 months since a brief Sketch of her Character and experience

She was naturally of an irascible temperament and arbitrary in the government of her numerous Children and Grand Children and when excited by liquor was a perfect tigress — But a few weeks before her Conversion — She had a pitched battle under our roof with a stout Indian as drunk as herself — It was with difficulty we could induce her to relinquish her firm two handed hold of his long hair — Two of her prominent faults were a tenacious adherence to her own notions and speaking harshly and pettishly to her family — For some time after her conversion her old habits of speaking seemed but partially renounced — and they were an occasion of grief to the members of her family — who with her had dedicated themselves to the Lord

During her last illness which lasted about 6 weeks she appeared to have obtained a complete victory over these habits

~~so that there was a~~

She was docile and tractable & contented under her trying circumstances — She was not heard to utter a complaint or peevish word — She talked of her anticipated death with perfect composure and seemed more than willing to depart and be with Christ — She remarked thus to her Children "Dont be sad on my account, I shall be far better off after death than I am now — I am not at all afraid to die"

To a daughter who is an obstinate heathen she said "My daughter do pray — give up your sins, and obey God If you do we shall meet again; But if you do not we shall always be seperated" She often prayed aloud in the night for the conversion of her impenitent Children and grand Children ~~On~~ One night she appeared to be much exercised ~~about~~ in mind about them and at three different times ~~during the night~~ was heard interceding for them — She was charged with being deranged but she replied ~~that~~ ~~she~~ "I know well what ~~she was~~ I am about" The last words she was heard to utter were addressed to her affectionate grand daughter — who sat by her side day and night anticipating every want and promptly and in a most lovely Christian spirit ~~satisfying~~ meeting them to the extent of her ability — She said "Let us go, let us go up the hill" doubtless having the hill of Zion in mind

When she could no longer speak she stretched her arms towards heaven pointing the way while her happy spirit ~~was~~ about to soar

Our School is still under the care of Mr & Mrs Wright — But a few new schollars have been added the present year — Most who have hitherto attended do still when here — The settlement is now almost entirely deserted of inhabitants — most of whom have left to be absent the whole winter — accordingly the school is small having but 10 or 12 regular schollars — Three causes have conspired to induce the Indians to leave in so unusual a number — First — Their corn was very much injured by an early frost in the fall — and their potatoes by drouth ~~and~~ grasshoppers and early frost — 2nd They had very ill success in fishing not taking one 1/4 the usual quantity — and again the wild rice was wholly destroyed by the early frosts — 3rd There are two Traders ~~at~~ the place this season in opposition to each other — Therefore plenty of goods and good prices for furs excite the Indians to hunt much more than under other circumstances

Though the greater portion are almost wholly unaffected by the truths of the gospel; still there are a few on whose consciences it exerts a silent influence ~~s~~ and we expect ere long it will prove the power of God to their salvation

Though darkness cover the land, and gross darkness the people — the glorious light of the Gospel is dispelling gradually the thick darkness and irradiating a few dark minds, leading them to seek after the true God — The Lord (we believe) has a "remnant here according to the election of grace" who will be gathered in to his Kingdom, tho it may be we shall labor years still "hoping against hope" while the blessing is ~~with~~ delayed —

Dec 10 [illegible] Since writing the preceding pages and while waiting an opportunity to forward to the P.O. I have twice received letters from Mrs A — To day I received one dated Nov 3d — She and the boys are highly favored of the Lord — Friends are raised up ~~to be~~ sympathizing with them. and who are ready to furnish any thing they need for their comfort — Rev Mr Macallum — thus remarked to my wife "whenever you want any thing come to me for it and if I can spare it I will not say no" — A Mr Angus Mathison another generous Scotchman and warm hearted Christian remarked also to her — "while we have a mouthful ourselves — you shall share in it" — The Board will not understand from this that my family are thrown upon the Charities of Christians at the Colony — I made provision for their wants — before I left them — I believe Mrs A is doing good in the neighborhood where she is, and is attaching friends to her — The boys are doing well in their studies — and appear to be growing in grace and ripening for future usefulness — It is no small self denial to be separated from them — but I prefer it — on account of the future well being and usefulness of our sons —

~~December 22~~ January 3. 1848 Since writing the foregoing pages there have been some indications of a special work of grace amongus — We are however so often disappointed — at such times in the realization of our fond hopes that this notice may prove to be premature. It may be well however for me to apprize you that every individual member of the Mission and also every native member of the Church are awaking to newness of Spiritual life — and whatever may be the immediate result in saving efficacy, on other minds I feel sure that Christians — are now being so annointed with the influences of the Holy Spirit that its savor will long be felt — and I cannot but hope that God will ere long "shine out of Zion" upon the dark minds around — and that these Gentiles will come to the brightness of her rising — With all humility and gratitude I would remark — that I have of late enjoyed some melting visitations of the blessed Spirit to my own soul — and that I have been aided in an unusual manner from on high in my public ministrations — Truth is taking effect on a few minds — One young Woman — remarked recently to her Mother thus — "I dream almost every night that I have renounced my wicked ways and have joined the praying Indians" — Her mind we find from conversation with her is unusually exercised

Her Mother too — who is a daughter of the deceased Eunice — the obstinate heathen alluded to on a previous page — Said to us a few evenings since — I remember what my deceased mother said to me and now I am determined to listen to God's word although my

Husband should beat me and turn me out of doors" This man is most violently opposed to religion — and will doubtless persecute his family if they embrace the Gospel — He has had many seasons of Conviction — but rebel against the truth —

I wish dear sir you would write me soon as convenient on the receipt of this and give me your views with reference to the course I am now pursuing and propose to pursue in reference to the Education of my Children —

I trust I sincerely desire to be directed in the way that will redound ultimately to the glory of God and a world lying in wickedness

I would remark that I have just received a letter from a lady in Adams Jeff Co N. Y informing us that — a box of Clothing &c is on the way for us — —

In your communications to me hereafter please direct to St Peter P. O. care of Sibley & Rice St Peter. Will you please order the youths Companion and Herald. Please also request the Publisher of the N. Y. Observer and also of Dwights American Magazine to direct in the same manner — I would thank Mr Hill to pay the subscription for the latter for me for the current year — I esteem it highly for my boys —

My affectionate regards to Mr Treat & Mrs Hill who have favored me with a letter each

Very affectionately
Yours
F. Ayer —

P. S — My health is much better than when I commenced these sheets ——

Rev. Frederic Ayer
Red Lake, 24 Nov. 1847
Recd Mar. 1. 1847

Ackd Apr. 21. D.G.

PRAIRIE DU CHIEN
FEB
14
WIS.

10

Rev David Greene
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass

Red Lake June 1. 1848

Rev David Green

Dear Sir

My last letter addressed to you I sent off the beginning of Jany I then stated that there was an increased state of spiritual feeling in the church and that a few among the impenitent were more thoughtful and serious

This continued to increase for some weeks. until every member of the mission families - seemed awaked to newness of life and to have girded on afresh their armor to go up to the "help of the Lord against the mighty"

All the native members of the church also walked in the light of God's countenance, ~~and~~ and prayed in the spirit for their perishing fellow beings - Almost all around us appeared to be somewhat affected by what they heard and saw. and a few among the "stout hearted" began to tremble under the influence of divine truth although they studiously stood aloof from direct contact with it absenting themselves from religious meetings although in many instances invited and urged to attend. It seemed the fixed determination of the great mass to resist the truth. and the only way we could get it before their minds was to visit them at their dwellings, and there press ~~th~~ upon their attention. We improved opportunities too of frequently addressing them as they visited us. Some prominent individuals whose minds had often been awakened to a sense of their danger and in a slight degree to a sense of their guilt. were again ~~now~~ aroused - but their minds soon assumed an attitude of hostility to the Gospel. A few declared it to be their fixed purpose of their souls to live and die Pagans. There was for a short season an evident conflict between the Kingdom of light and the powers of darkness with reference to souls around us. The Lord brought a few to professed submission to his authority — and we were fondly hoping that he would "subdue his enemies under him" and do a great work of his grace among us

At this juncture intelligence was received of the massacre of two young men of the band by the Sioux. One was an individual of note, belonging to our immediate neighborhood & a son of the chief. His death caused a great sensation among all classes. The cry of revenge and war was heard from every quarter, and reiterated loud and long. Public attention was soon almost wholly diverted from the interests of the soul. A common reply of the men, when appealed to on the subject of religion, was "we can't pray now; we must go to war next summer, and we can't fight and pray too" — Satan triumphed. convictions left the people, and a few who had ostensibly renounced his cause turned again to their wicked ways — But two came fully on to the Lords side. — These were received into the church in March — One is a mother of a large family, three of whose children are members of the church. The other is a young woman of a family two of which are professing Christians. Both have appeared well, and continue to give fair evidence of a work of grace in their hearts. There is now a total indifference manifested by all the ungodly on the subject of our instructions. There is a studied neglect of all religious meetings, and the sabbath is despised, and wholly disregarded by almost all. We have but a very few hearers on the sabbath ~~but~~ except those styled "praying Indians" The people as a Band seem resolved to pursue their present course of life. To the eye of sense their ruin is certain. The spirit of war is rife and preparations are now making for a summer campaign. A party with the Chief at their head are about to leave for "Crow Wing River" on the Mississippi to obtain Ammunition and whiskey — A storm is gathering, in some of the effects of which we shall doubtless participate — In my last

I informed you of the aggressive spirit manifested toward us last summer, growing out of the war. We anticipate a reacting of the tumultuous and to us soul trying scenes of the past. We do not feel anxious as to the result or in prospect of them, committing ourselves and cause to him who is "Governor among the nations" and who can easily restrain the rage of the Heathen. It is not for ourselves we care. We are sadly apprehensive that this poor people will ere long complete the work of self destruction. that their wilful rejection of the Gospel will provoke the "Most High" to give them up "to work iniquity with greediness" to war and rapine — to famine and pestilence. A few restless spirits are growing more and more daring and abusive in their treatment of us and I should not be surprized if we should be obliged to report to the Indian Agent and request the interposition of his authority to check the lawlessness of some wild spirits —

On complaining to the chief yesterday of the breaking open of doors and the destruction of our poultry by some boys, and the breaking thru of Mr Coe's dwelling house the night before by some unknown burglars he remarked that "the people were becoming very wicked. that they treated us far worse than they did the Traders. They were afraid of them because they would resent injuries, but we were so forbearing that they imposed upon us and abused us"

This is literally true. Selfish ~~in~~ interest leads them to treat the Traders comparatively well. They are dependent to a great extent on them for a means of subsistence —

There is no prospect of a cessation of hostilities for years to come between this Band and the Sioux. The breach is growing wider yearly Did we not anticipate some political changes in the condition of this people which would result in the interposition of our Government to stop the war — we should feel as tho there was too little ~~encouragement~~ ground to hope for the improvement of their social and spiritual condition to authorize — our much longer stay among them —

The lawless band is composed of young men and boys. tho the older classes of men take no active part in their mischievous practices—yet we have good reason to believe that some of them wink at them—as no effort is made to suppress them—

I would not have you suppose, on reading this tale of grievances, that we are disheartened and want to abandon the field at once No Sir—With the help of God we are resolved to breast the storm & to proclaim the Gospel (the only remedy for these disorders) with increased fidelity & to continue to "overcome evil with good" and leave the result with the Most High—who can bring good out of evil and order out of confusion."

We have aided the Indians as much as usual this Spring in their fields and some 15 or 20 are enlarging them—Some two or three families more are settling down by us—These are the usual tokens of agricultural prosperity—None however request us to aid them in building—While war continues—of course but little advance can be expected in their social condition

My family returned from R. R. settlement two months since We retain our two sons with us this summer—tho we had ~~then~~ intended to send them to the "States" to school—

Mrs A's health is better than it has been for some years past Mine is much better than it was when I wrote last winter

I have ordered nothing from Boston for the present year. owing to the uncertainty whether my family would be here, and also to the great difficulty of getting things transported from La Pointe here—Under these circumstances I thought I would purchase some necessary things the present year at R. River and some of the Trader of this place who offers them at cost as a matter of accommodation to us

Affectionately Yours
F. Ayer

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake, June 1, 1862
Rec'd July 2, '62

Red Lake 28. August 1848

Rev S. B. Treat

Dear Sir

A few days since I received a letter from Mr Green in which he directs me to address my communications to the Board to yourself

In taking leave of Mr Green as a correspondent I cannot forbear remarking that his kind and sympathising manner, & entering so fully into my missionary trials, as he has ever done has very much endeared him to my heart. I have ever found him a very judicious Councillor. a faithful friend. My prayer is that the "mantle of Elijah may fall on Elisha" —

The religious aspect of things around us is well calculated to depress the soul of him who walks not by faith

The Chief with a part of his band, have recently returned from another war expedition against the "Sioux of the "Plains" Tho they were absent several weeks and traversed the country to a great distance they did not fall in with the Enemy

I had hoped that this second fruitless attempt upon the foe would cool their zeal — and they would remain quiet until some new aggressive act of the Sioux should rouse anew their vindictive passions and excite them to revenge, but the Indian true to his old character will not rest until he has "eye for Eye tooth for tooth" and Scalp for Scalp. Another small party is already forming. for a desperate effort — Within two years eight of this band have been waylaid and Killed by the Sioux

No reasonable hope can be entertained that these hostile feelings will ever subside unless our Indians discontinue their far off wanderings on the "Plains" The Sioux of the "Plains" is a lawless savage being whose "hand is against every man", whose "feet are swift to shed blood. The U. States Government can exercise no mor control over them than over the Buffaloe his fellow rover of the almost illimitable Prairies. The "Buffaloe hunting ground" of this Band of Indians is from five to 7 or 8 days travel from here. Partie generally go out in the beginning of summer and again in Jany or Feby for hunting the Buffaloe. The Sioux anticipating the time of their visiting the region lay in wait & surprise small parties sometimes killing five or six. Such is the love of the Indian for Buffaloe meat that he will thus annually risk his life to obtain it

We have tried to induce them to cultivate the ground for a subsistence and no longer expose their lives thus on the plains but one may as well reason with the wind — With a plenty of vegetable food before him the Indian says "I am hungry" — if he has no animal food — Meat he must have — His belly is his God — He has no idea of any possible higher enjoyment than to revel in Buffaloe meat and Grease. In addition to the demoralizing influence of war there are many other unfriendly ~~cau~~ influences at work which retard greatly the work of civi-zing and bringing them permanently under the influence of the Gospel. Quite a number of the Indians have relati living at "Red River Settlement" and Pambina 70 miles South of R.R.S. on R.R. and about 225 miles from here, nearly west — To these places they go and visit and are absent two or three months in summer and frequently all winter. Another portio of the Band. (the men) go three or four times a year to a Trading Post on the Mississippi 6 days march from here when they drink whiskey to their fill and often bring consider-able home with them— They are generally absent 2 or 3 weeks at this gateway to hell. There is now a new attraction in that vicinity. About a thousand Winnebagoes who are friendly to the Ojibues have just arrived. They treat the Ojibues very generously which draws many of them as visitors. I have already mentioned their going out semiannually to hunt the Buffaloe, Others immediately after they have planted their corn & potatoes start off for Red River Settlement to barter their sugar for goods & horses Others carry there and beyond large quantities of medicinal roots to exchange with the Indians of those regions for horses of which they are very fond— Again, the great mass of able bodied men spend almost all the winter when they are not hunting Buffaloe in hunting animals for their furs. This is particularly so when there are (as there was last winter and will be this) competitors in the Trade

I know of no Band in the Nation where the men (and perhaps I may say too families) are more continually upon the move than this— And yet when I came here it was represented to me that but a few were more permanently at home

Until their roving habits are broken up (partially at least) they will probably be continually involved in war with their old Enemy We entertain some hope of a change in their circumstances in this respect for the better through some political causes It is rumored that the Govt of the U. S. contemplate establishing a Military Post on the Red River somewhere in the vicinity of the "Buffaloe hunting ground" of this Band Should this take place it is hoped that the troops would prove a safe guard to our Indians in awing the Sioux to keep on their own territories— and preventing hostile collisions

It is also rumored that the U. S. Govt contemplate ~~establishing~~ removing purchasing this region of country and removing the Ojibwes of Lake Superior and South of that Lake, on to it The plan of Govt will be then to induce the Indians to cultivate the ground, for which means will be furnished

Though there are so many things unfavorable to the progress of the Gospel here. We do not feel discouraged. We believe that the cause of holiness will ultimately triumph, and that it is gradually gaining ground even now with so many counteracting obstacles— The leaven of truth is gradually spreading Many acknowledge the superiority of the religion we teach to theirs and say they would renounce their own did they not fear ridicule & persecution Others say they "can't pray & fight too" and they must go to war" We are exerting considerable influence in our School over the rising generation

The old Indians often remark "our children will all pray but we are too old to change and become good"

As the bearer of this is ready to start I must hasten to a close. I must first however present one more subject to you for consideration concerning which I wish you would write me ere long— My health seems to be growing poorer from year to year and on this account I sometimes think that I had better ask dismission from the service of the Board and make room for a more efficient laborer. I have suffered of late from a bronchial affection which at times has almost laid me aside for a season from publick teaching. I am obliged to exercise a great deal in the open air to keep up ~~a broken~~ my present state of health. I am able to work upon a farm almost constantly— and by taking care and not over working I find it improves my health more than any other means

Another reason (though a subordinate one) is in relation to the welfare of our two sons. They are now 12 & 14 years of age. We feel at times that we cannot keep them longer in almost entire pagan, savage society. There are no white children in the mission or elsewhere with whom to associate and there is no society of adult whites except the Mission families

Again they are now so far advanced in age that, they ought to be in a good school. We have so many cares we feel that we can devote but little time to their instruction and the school of pure Indian children is not the place adapted for them —

They have good minds and we hope are pious, and we are very desirous they should be training for extensive usefulness in the Church and world — Considering my health and the circumstances of my family — I have thought I might with them be more useful in some new place where — our chi would enjoy the means of education, ~~and~~

I have not yet come to a conclusion in my own mind to leave the field — I do not yet see my way clear so to do — My wife is quite reluctant to send the boys abroad — not knowing what hands they may fall into — We may however conclude so to do ere long — What is the rule of the Board with regard to missionary children — sent ~~[illegible]~~ to educate — Would our oldest son come under the rule — and how long

My warmest regards to Mr Green

Affectionately Yours

F. Ayer

P. S. Should I leave this field — Would the Board send another preacher to fill my place — or let the station be sustained — wholly by the "Am — Miss'y Society"

Lapointe 14th Sept. 48 10

Rev. S. B. Treat

Missionary House

Boston

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake Aug. 25. 1848
Rec'd Oct. 7.

Red Lake 5. October 1848

Revd S. B. Treat

Dear Sir

In writing you recently I remarked that my health was poor, owing principally to a bronchial affection and on that account I might, ere long, ask a dismission from the service of the "Board". The disease has been gradually increasing since I wrote you. and I have no hope that I shall be permanently better so long as I attempt public speaking or engage in protracted conversations writing or studying; and it therefore seems to me duty to engage in some other sphere of useful labor, better adapted to the exercise of my physical powers. Labor upon a farm, travelling, and exercise of almost any kind in the open air, indulged in moderately- improves my health It appears to me that I can be of comparatively little service in the station I now occupy- The exercises of the sabbath usually prostrate me. and studying or writing half an hour increase very much the almost constant pain in my breast- I have not for some months past attempted study and, have written only what it seemed absolutely necessary to do. My lungs have been diseased, for many years past- I think therefore. I shall never be able for any length of time to engage in an employment that will require- considerable exercise of the vocal powers, or exercise in writing & close application of the mental faculties. From henceforth it would seem I must be useful principally in some secular employment, of rather an active kind in the open air. I presume it would not be thought best that I should remain here as a secular laborer or go to LaPointe or Bad River in that capacity- At LaPointe- a secular laborer is not needed as -the Indians are assisted by a Farmer and Carpenter employed by the U. S. Government— There are two secular laborers now at the Station — Mr Coe the farmer and Doct Lewis who is a mechanic and acts mainly in a secular capacity.

I feel reluctant to leave the country so long as I can be of any particular service to the Ojibwes. I have been now about 18 years among them in various parts and I feel no common interest in their temporal and Spiritual welfare. and feel strongly desirous of promoting it in every way I can. I have therefore sometimes thought (in case my direct missionary labors should cease) I would offer myself as a Govt farmer or Carpenter and lend in this way my influence to the Missionary Cause— The principal objection in my own mind to this is— my general health is so impaired that I I could not act so efficiently in the station as is desirable one should State I think I could accomplish more (poor as my health now is) ~~than~~ for the permanent good of the Indians than some who are now ostensibly their helpers but who do but a little for their temporal good and an incalculable injury to their souls by their ungodly ~~ex~~ example. All the Offices of the Kind specified above are now filled and there will not probably soon be a vacancy I doubt therefore (even were there no objection on account of my ill health) whether I should serve in the capacity of farmer or Carpenter to the Indians. I have also thought of locating as a farmer at some point adjacent to the Ojibwes where settlements of whites are already beginning to form — where men of religious principle are very much needed to stay the progress of vice among the whites — and arrest the pestiferous influence that will go forth from such places to waste and ruin the Indians — and counteract and retard greatly the consummation of the missionaries hopes — There are two places I have now more particularly in mind. Pokegoma where I formerly resided and "Crow Wing River" or the vicinity— This place is on the Mississippi some six days travel above St Peters. The country between this and the Soux line (on the East of the Mississippi) was ceded to the U. S at the time Pokegoma and the surrounding Country was. It will soon be offered for sale and will probably fill up with "the offscouring of all things" unless some Christians of weight of Character and active benevolence can be induced to plant themselves there. A trading house or houses have been in operation at this place for 5 or 6 years past—from whence have issued (not streams of Salvation, but damnation, appropriately styled by the Indians "The Devils broth" — Scores of barrels (and probably hundreds) of whiskey have been sold and given to the poor Indians at C. W. River— Numerous murders traced directly to the whiskey dealt out here—have occurred there and at other places whither the poison was taken— I have heard too of several burning to death during a drunken frolick— A Great many Indians from this and all the surrounding Bands have gone three or four times a year to C. W. R. to get the accursed thing— On their return home they would bring all they could to treat their friends— The place is becoming one of great resort by all the northern Indians and will be so more than heretofore on account of some local causes

A military post is now establishing in the immediate vicinity to keep the peace between the Ojibwey Winebagos and Soux Indians—and the new settlers— About 1000 Winebagoes settled in the region—about two days travel south last summer—

It is anticipated that the Ojibwey of the Mississippi will be paid their annuities at C. W. R—

A temporary stop has been put to the sale and giving of liquor to the Indians—by the officers of Govt recently arrived in the region—but if the surrounding country settles by—

masses of vicious and intemperate men alone — they will elude Government laws and officers — On the other hand if a few only of Staunch temperance principles and warm benevolence and fearless courage plant themselves down here they will sustain Gov^t Agents — and Government Agents will sustain them — and vast good will thereby result to to the Indians and also it is to be hoped to the new Settlers themselves. I am extensively acquainted in the Ojibwe Country both with the natives, halfbreeds, and Traders, I think ~~we~~ am favorably regarded by most, and being well acquainted with the general views & feelings ~~of ar du~~ customs & habits of the people I think we might exert a greater influence over many in the country than strangers of much more extensive ability & talent than ourselves. under the same circumstances

At Pokegoma is the remnant of the little church once so dear to our hearts — with no one to care for their souls — A devourer of Souls is there also, "scattering Firebrands arrows and death." and wasting the poor people, by his traffick in the curse of the Indian

There seem two considerable objections to my settling down in this country as proposed above First we are both, wife and myself, in rather feeble health, and with this are too poor to begin in a new place and at our age in life. We have commenced three new Stations since our first residence in the Country and are pretty well "used up" We have no friend to help us with a penny

Another objection is the want of suitable society and advantages of intellectual improvement for our two sons who thus far have enjoyed ~~more~~ much, beyond their parents, soof

And I would take this occasion to express our filial affection toward the A. B. C. F. M and Mr G in particular. Though I do not fully approve of all the doings of the Board on the subject of Slavery, and a recent act of theirs in relation to Mr Caswell and Doct Bradley. yet I do still greatly revere and confide in very many of its members and do not feel disposed to withdraw confidence from them because they differ in judgement from me. Should I labor through life as a Missionary. I do not apprehend I should wish to transfer my connexion to another Board

In my last letter to you I mentioned that the Band were still engaged in war; soon after writing you a party of 70 warriors started out on another war expedition — but meeting an Indian from Pembenaw with a Sioux scalp which he was bringing to this Band — they all returned home to rejoice over a fallen enemy whom another Band had killed. Several days have been spent in the "scalp dance" since their return and the spirit of war seems still rife. An almost perfect indifference prevails (with a few exceptions) to the momentous subjects of Gospel truth The judgements of God are abroad among them. yet will they not acknowledge his hand — but are hardening under them. slighting all the means of grace. Deaths are frequent averaging more than two a month two hundred per cent, a mon exceeding the number of births and this too in the absence of epidemics — or prevailing fevers

Pulmonary diseases are prevalent — Bleeding at the lungs is very common. Their extreme licentious & filthy habits aggravate their disorders — Naught but the Gospel can save them: and this they virtually reject and cast it behind their backs —

A remnant we trust will be saved from the present generation and we may hope a goodly number from the next if faithful persevering efforts continue to be made by the Church for them

We have an Ox a Cow and yearling heifer in our possession. If they cannot be disposed of to advantage, and the Board see fit to loan them to us for a year or two we will endeavor to make use of them as a loan from the Lord.

I have hesitated some in penning several of the preceding lines for "to beg I am ashamed"; but feeling assured you will appreciate my views of feeling and circumstances. I thought it best to be frank and speak out. I feel ~~thus~~ that the Board under which we have served almost 20 years are the Lord's almoners, and that peradventure they will fell it a privilege to help ~~an~~ almost worn out servants if ever they can do it and not increase their pecuniary liabilities. But enough on this point.

I would thank you to give me definite instructions with regard to the disposal of all of the property enumerated. It will be my pleasure to conform to your wishes with regard to it. Some of the property (unsalable) might be taken to LePoint, but it is not at all needed there and some of it would hardly pay transportation. or it might be given to the Christian Indians here or the Mission to use or dispose of as they could. Shall I appropriate any of it, and if so, how much to our use. When I left the mission at Mackinaw and stepped on board a "Mackinaw boat" for LePointe in 1831 it was remarked of me by one of the sisters of the family "He can say as Paul I have coveted no man's silver or gold or apparel" I feel that I can in all sincerity say the same of myself with regard to every thing in my trust ostensibly the property of the Board.

"The blessing of the Lord it maketh rich" Conscious of professing this I have enough tho destitute as Lazarus

Thus far in life I have had food and raiment and expect to have (if I trust in the Lord) so long as my Heavenly Father feeds the fowls of the air and arrays the lillies of the field. I expect to be no less the Lord's when off what is termed missionary ground than when I first set my foot upon it. I expect to spend my wasting energies for the glory of God and the good of my perishing fellow men— The world is my field. The missionary is still my coworker— and I am his— and I do without an anxious thought about the future cast all my care upon him— who has ever cared for me and mine.

Should I leave the Country— you doubtless wish to know whether I shall need means to bear my expenses out, and if so how much. This question I cannot now determine for the following reasons— I do not know when I may leave whether in the Spring or next autumn. Again I have now no place in view And it is altogether uncertain whether I return to the States to N. England or N. York or Ohio or Continue in some part of this Country as I have suggested. Again My bills for the present year have not come in from La Point and some other quarters. and therefore I cannot determine the Amount of funds I should probably have on hand from the present years Salary next Spring or Autumn. I hope I shall not be obliged to draw much on the Treasury of the Board for travelling expenses. I think I should none at all if the Board should permit me to appropriate the saleable property to my own use

My drafts on the treasury of the Board last year were $200. They will be $250 the current one, the full amt of my Salary Having received no donations from abroad the last and thus far the present year— my outlays in Cash are greater than usual—

The property I have valued in accordance with the prices of the country. These it will be remembered are generally one hundred percent in advance of the prices in the U. States—

It may be matter of surprise to the Board that the total amount of the property is no greater. I might increase this amount $150. if I should add seven or eight acres of land that we have cleared and is used principally for pasturage. But as this kind of property is altogether unsaleable here I have not brought it into account

I would here remark that I have from the first purposely avoided accumulating property— for various reasons. First I thought in view of the changing state of affairs in the Indian country that the station might not be permanent. I have also wished my hands unencumbered with everything not absolutely necessary. The brethren associated with me have for the last two or three years been furnishing their part of the mission with a good supply of various articles of use in agriculture and building &c for their own and the Indians use— so that there has been ~~but~~ less ~~little~~ need of my replenishing my stock than formerly— Again I have tried to practice economy in all my affairs. avoiding needless expense in our household arrangements, travelling &c &c

Our food is almost entirely vegetable, We make no use of Tea, Coffee &c &c— Our furniture is all of my own manufacture, And every thing is of wood color pertaining to the house— We have sought comfort just so far as it was compatible with usefulness and economy and no farther— We have sympathized with the Board in their pecuniary embarrassments and sought to lighten their burden by reducing our expenses— While we have felt happy in doing this. the Board have from time to time through their beloved Secretary Mr G expressed their sympathy with us, and ~~directed~~ permitted us to increase ~~same~~ our drafts on the treasury if necessary to our comfort and usefulness

We have no definite plan for the future. We cast ourselves wholly upon God, committing our way to him, feeling confident he will direct our steps. We are not yet fully satisfied that it is our duty to leave this field. The state of my health the coming winter will probably decide the question. Presuming my health will grow worse, and that I shall be unfit for any active service thereafter, as a preacher and if so shall leave the field, it seems fit that I should take some preliminary steps that way. The difficulty of communicating with the "Board" on account of the length of time required for letters to pass between us, is so great that I feel it important to take an early opportunity to inform you of my situation and request a dismission on the supposition ~~on the ground~~ of anticipated increased disability for missionary service. I feel assured the "Board" would not wish to retain me in the field, disabled in a great degree from service or contrary to my own convictions of duty —

I suppose the operations of Your Board of Missions will be discontinued here if I leave. The mission however may be carried on efficiently by those now associated with me under the direction of the American Missy Society —

Mr Wright the Teacher is qualified to preach to the people. He has been here almost from the commencement of the Station and has acquired a pretty good knowledge of the language. My Associates here commenced their labors under the patronage of the "Evangelical Missy Board" formed a few years since in "Ohio" At the time of the formation of the "American Missionary Society" it was merged in it or became Auxiliary to it. Their Missionaries therefore here and at "Red Cedar Lake" (70 miles south of us) were transferred to their care —

I have just remarked that I suppose your Board will discontinue their operations here if I leave — I have thus concluded for the following reasons —

First I believe they prefer in most cases to have their Missionaries labor in fields or at Stations by themselves and furthermore that they would not deem it expedient to have their missionaries in any case labor under their direction at the same station with those of the "A. M. M. Society"

~~If this be the case then they will I suppose leave the Station to the sole occupancy of the A. M. Mi. So, —~~

Again I suppose the Board do not particularly desire continuing their labors here at an isolated station so far in advance of their other stations in the country — while this may be occupied by missionaries of another Board and the intervening ground is occupied by other "Boards".

Presuming the A. B. C. F. M. would close up their labors at this station if I should leave — I have made out an inventory of their property here to transmit to you requesting your direction as to the disposal of it

I give the total value of the different kinds of property under their different heads without enumerating every article

I think it is about two years since I sent in a report to the Board including a schedule of the property of the Station — By comparing that with the present You will perceive the sum total to have been much larger than the amt now rendered

The reasons for this are the following First — For two years past some kinds of property has worn out by use or broken or been lost or spoilt by the Indians to whom it has been lent or it has been stolen by them — These losses have not been supplied by purchases or otherwise — This is particularly the case with regard to farming and building tools. With regard to the former a part were old and worn when I took them 5 years ago at PoKegoma or LaPoint Missions. With regard to the latter with two or three exceptions all were the refuse of tools at these places. But one or two would be deemed fit for use by a workman in the States—

The Stock of Cattle is not so great by two or three head. Buildings have undergone but trifling repairs and no improvements made They are log built of pine logs with bark roofs and go rapidly to decay Though it costs considerable in this country to build comfortable log houses, on account of the high price of labor particularly the sawing of lumber all of which is done by hand (it costs $30 per thousand) yet the buildings have no monied value even when new as there are no purchasers for such property. All the whites and most of the half breeds being transient residents employed by Fur Companies— Two years ago I reported a considerable amount of goods on hand principally donations We have not received a single article of donations since and what we then had on hand—has been appropriated some to trade with the Indians others to our own personal use &c

All has disappeared and we have scarcely any thing now on hand but what is in daily use or will soon be—

Medicines reported two years ago have mostly been given out to the Indians— Books & Stationary reported last are mostly on hand,— I have but a very few books in my case belonging to the Board except in the Ojibue language I have no property in common with the bretheren of the Station— except a plough The School house is considered as belonging equally to ~~each~~ both parts of the Mission— It is a small log building worth 40 — 50 dols It will ere long need greatly repairing or rebuilding

Schedule of the property of the Board at this Station

Dwelling house	200	Unsaleable property and I doubt whether 20 dol. in money could be realized for it
Barn & School do	50	
Cattle	75	Valuable cash property
Farming Utensils	27	Only a plough & one or two other articles saleable
Carpenter Tools	13	Of but very little cash value
Kitchen & table Furniture	25	Except cooking utensils, mostly tin
Bedding	30	Barely enough for two beds in winter
Medicine	,05	
Clock	10	A saleable article
Sandry small articles	7	Not enumerated under above heads
Books & Stationary	25	Including Miss^{y} Heralds. and Ojibwe books
	$467	

There is but a small portion of the above amount (perhaps one fifth) that is saleable and from which cash could be realized

The Missionaries of the A. M. So. residing here have just completed comfortable building for themselves — they have also a good supply of good Carpenters & farming utensils — They are not particularly in want of any property I have under my care. They propose (in case I should leave) writing their patrons enquiring whether they could deem it expedient to purchase at a low price the buildings and a few other things ~~and~~ also some of the household stuff — . Should I leave the field and go to any place within 200 or 300 miles to locate most of the moveable property would be of essential service in our destitute circumstances. We might also make some arrangement with the brethren here about the buildings and farming improvements — which in some way we could ultimately turn to advantage — I suppose none of the above property — not even the cattle could be sold for ready pay — but they might for good notes payable in a year —

There are some things to cheer our souls, amid the gloomy scene around us. The wife of one of the Traders appears to have passed from death to life within a few months past. She spent the late winter here and was a very attentive listner to truth. She left here in the Spring and passed the Summer at Sandy Lake where she was received to the Methodist Church on Confession of her faith in Christ. She is regular in her attendance at meetings on the Sabbath, and is a serious and earnest listner— She take much pains to instruct some of her relatives living here and is earnest in her intreaties to them to turn to God and live

Her husband is an American, born in Vermont religiously educated, and comprehends clearly (intellectually) the way of Salvation. He frequently attends service on the sabbath and is at times, affected in view of his danger and guilt

Mrs C— the wife of another Trader who has resided at this Post some 6 or 7 years was formerly a scholar of Mackinaw School where she first united with the Church. After residing for a year or two in ~~Mr Hall~~ the mission family at La Pointe where she sustained a reputation for consistent piety— she married Mr C— a Fur Trader of Catholic principles. From that period her piety has waned— She has been obliged ~~with~~ to travel with him and in other ways violate the Sabbath and has appeared like too many professing Christians who seek not first the Kingdom of God but of the world: Recently she appears to have awoked as from a dream. took again the vows of God upon her and as far as I learn leads a consistent life. We hope we are not laboring wholly in vain. although so few believe our report, To a few we hope the Gospel will prove the power of God to their salvation— But we fear to most it will but aggravate their Eternal doom

I have written this at several different sittings and have therefore not kept my story well connected or told it in the most intelligent manner. But I have not strength to rewrite. I hope I shall have succeeded in conveying my ideas so as to be understood. I wish to be understood that I request a dismission from the field on account of my ill health which from past experience and the nature of the Complaint I apprehend will grow worse and worse. In confident expectation of this I ask for a dismission — If the result should prove that the Lords thoughts on this point differed from mine and he should (unexpectedly) strengthen the the things that remain and are ready to perish — I should expect to remain at my post unless some new event in the providence of God should influence me to leave. A permit therefore to leave the field may be considered a conditional one — leaving it with myself to decide the question by the future developements of Gods providence

Please remember me affectionately to Mr Greene Mrs A request also a remembrance

Affectionately Yours
F. Ayer

P.S

I wish to correct a mistake. We *did* receive a few articles of donation from "Talmadge", Ohio last winter, perhaps 15 dols value

I would also here remark that we have recently learnt that a box of Goods from Augusta, N. York, has arrived at La Pointe It is worth 60—70 dols — We hope it will reach us by winter

Rev. F. Ayer
Red Lake Oct. 5. 1848
Recd Jan. 5.
Ansd Jan. 10.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (37- 43)

Boutwell, William T.
37. 14 February 1845
38. 28 November 1845
39. 28 November 1845
40. 2 May 1846
41. 5 May 1846
42. 10 May 1846
43. 18 August 1848

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Letters from

Rev. William Thurston Boutwell.

1845 – 1847.

Rev. D. Greene
Miss. House Boston

Pokegama Feb. 14 1845

My dear Sir,

Your favor of July last came duly to hand & should have been answered at an earlier date. The ~~points~~ subject of your letter was one of deep interest to myself & those associated with me. Were ministers in N. E. obliged to spend as much of their time in manual labor & as little in the study, ~~I think~~ as I am compelled to, I think their chhs. generally would be glad to get rid of them as soon as they could.

What man can work hard 6 days without looking into his Bible even except for morn. & eve. devotions & then preach on the Sab. to the edification of a people? This I have done month after month, not to say year after year & I see no prospect of relief ahead. Nine tenths of the help we can employ in this country is good for nothing unless you are present yourself & lead the way. You may tell them what & how, but it is not done unless you are on the ground. The most common, ordinary hands in the employ of the Lumber Coy, fire men & topers from Missi Steam Boats, get from 12. to 15.00 pr mo. While a first rate man commands from 15. to 30.00 pr. mo.

We have made repeated efforts to secure the services of a good man & have as often failed with one exception when I paid 20.00 for a short time. I have often felt that if our people knew how to appreciate the efforts I make in preaching not one would attend meeting. But notwithstanding they are meagre & far from what they should have at my hands or some other, still they attend with a good degree of punctuality. Yet they are neither so spiritual minded or devoted as they would be if their teacher possessed more spirituality himself.

It is impossible for me to set down to study while I am conscious my presence & my help are required in the field. Our congregation this winter averages from 30 to 50 to whom I preach twice on the Sab. in Ind. We have 2 lumber Camps this winter within 2 ms. of us, where there are 40 or 50 men. Some of these men from curiosity occasionally drop in to our Ind. meetings. In the eve. I go to their Camps & preach to them in Eng. Though they are made up of the refuse of our species with some few exceptions yet they invariably treat me with respect & listen attentively to the Word.

Our School is flourishing this winter & averages from 10 to 15 who are making proficiency. Our people generally abide steadfast to their temperance pledge. One of the members of the chh. who fell last summer & caused our hearts much grief has been hopefully reclaimed. There is one, ~~or two~~ of our members still under censure for intemperance. The pagans & intemperate party attempted last spring to trample every thing under their feet. I had prohibited any drunken man coming into my house. One young man to show the others his bravery came in at night while all were asleep & commenced singing his war songs & raising the war hoop. Suffice to say, he met with ~~with~~ what he did not expect, & after dashing in one or two windows left with marks on his back & body that neither he nor any one since has troubled us while drunk. All the Inds. approved of the course of treatment the fellow met with. The current now, seems to be setting against whiskey. The Chief & 2 or 3 of his principle men are decidedly opposed to it. Mr Stuart & the Agent last fall instructed the Chiefs & principle men, in case white men brought liquor to sell them, to knock in their whiskey bbls. In one or two instances they have done so here in our neighborhood. The traders were very angry, but dared not retaliate. I apprehend serious difficulty will arise before long from this source. There are individuals who are determined liquor shall not be brought here, & there are white men who are as determined they will bring & sell it out of sheer spite to those who oppose them. Things are fast coming to a crisis here, & the sooner, perhaps the better for the Inds. Govt will be obliged to interfere & either remove them or protect them. There is no alternative. Where there was one trader last winter, there are 3 this, & all abound in whiskey.

Yours with much respect & esteem
W. T. Boutwell

Will you please send us the following articles by way of the Missp as early as practicable

1 ps. Satinette — worth 50c
1 " Kerseymere " 75 cts.
1 doz Mens palm Hats
1 " boys " "
2 prs. Cowhide Brogans Nos. 8
1 " " " " Ea 9 & 10
1 " Calf skin " Ea 9 & 10
6 Flag Silk Hdkfs (Common)
6 " Cotton " "
1 doz Horn combs
1/2 " Ivory "
2 Mens cloth caps worth 100
2 Boys " " (3 years old)
1 " " " 5 years old
2 Mens Stocks } for Ely & Boutwell
4 Cotton cravats }
2 prs. Childrens Shoes No 8 } Calf
1 " " " " 9 }
3 " " " " 10 }
1 " " " " 11 }

1 pr Childrens shoes No. 12 } Calf
2 prs. Womens " " 7 }
1 " " " " 6 }
1 " " laced Boots " 6 }
2 Nos. Neck Hdkfs. 4/4
1 pattern Stout Eng Merino
deep green (for Mrs Ely)
20 Yds. Kersey or pressed Flannel
for Boys clothing in winter
5 Yds. Red flannel } for small
5 " White " } childrens dress
1 Capot — for Ely (Pilot cloth).
2 Tooth brushes
2 pr. Side combs - 1 hair comb
2 doz large Capot Buttons
U. S. Dispensatory
5 Qrs. Printing paper, quality of the Herald
6 Sheets Bonnet Board -
1 McClure on Universalism
1 Hatfield on Universalism
Barns on Hebrews & Revival Sermons
3 Vol. of Bancrofts History

P.S. A small box was recd. by us last Fall containing hose from whence it came I know not. A Box also containing Socks: Yarn. Shirts & a coverlid from Temple Ms. by Mr Hills bill of Shipping. I am not aware that there is a town of that name in Ms. – There was not a scrap of any paper in the

Rev. Wm. T. Boutwell
Pokeguma. 15 Feb. 1845
Rec'd April 2.
Ackd Apr. 2. & 12. DG
(- Parchams)

Rev David Greene
Missions House
Pemberton Square – Boston

Falls St Croix
March 4th W.T.
Single

Box from which I can determine where to send an acknowledgment. Can you acknowledge its reception in the Herald or be so good as to give me directions in relation to it?
acknowledged in Jan Herald 1844

P.S. Please send us a few of the late Tracts – We have a good opportunity of circulating more or less of the A. Tract Societies Publications if we had them. Dr Nelson on Infidelity please send us with others on Universalism
1/4 Bushel good Rye for seed

Rev. W. T. Boutwell

Pokegumma, 28 Nov. 1845.

Rec'd Jan. 9th 1846.

By Mr. J. Russell.—

✓

Rev David Greene

Missionary House

Pemberton Square Boston

pr favor
Mr. Russell

38

Mr Greene

Dear Sir

Allow me to introduce to your acquaintance Mr Russell, the gentleman who for several years was the Govt. Farmer for the Inds. at Pokagama & who will be able to answer more or less inquiries you may wish to make respecting this Mission—

Yours truly

W. T. Boutwell

Nov. 28 1845—

Pokegama Nov. 28 1845 –

Mr Greene

My dear Sir,

I have long purposed to write you, but have not found a leisure hour until this eve. I have felt for 2 years past that I must quit the field unless I could be relieved of secular labor in part, & the only thing that has kept me here has been the hope that relief would come. A year ago I sent to Galena & through the Rev. Mr Kent engaged a young man of reputed piety for a year at 10.00 per month. He had not been here 6 weeks before he became dissatisfied with his wages & I was obliged to increase them to 13. per month for the time he remained. He was young & inexperienced & of but little service to us.

In June a friend recommended a young man in the Mission Institute at Quincy just married who wished to connect himself with some Mission as a laborer. We wrote to him, making the proposition that if he saw fit to come as a farmer we would give him 150. for a year & furnish him with provisions for his wife. He came, is now here, but 3 weeks since wished me to release him as he could get 18. or 20. per mo. in the lumber business. Such is our brief history for farmers. Francis, the man now with us though he has been fitting himself for a Missy for some length of time - his wife has been five years preparing for a Miss'y - yet in as many weeks on the ground here, learnt that Miss'y work is another business from what she anticipated as she says.

They now wish to get means of making a home for themselves in civilized life. We wrote them to come on trial for a year & if at its end they & we were satisfied we then would recommend them to the Board for an appointment.

This ~~winter~~ fall & winter we have had access to but few Inds. There are but 4 families at this time immediately around us. Our School is hardly kept alive. Our meetings on the Sabbath are thinly attended - With the exception of 3 or 4 families all drink all they can get.

The friends of the Mission say to us it is of no use longer to attempt any thing for the benefit of the Inds. here. There are 3 grog shops within 2 ms. of us. I have tried to save this people from temporal ruin, I have told them of righteousness & judgment to come - but in vain. I can only commend them to God & leave them with him. I feel that the time has come when the Prudential Com. should send the Sec. or an agent to ~~examine~~ ~~this~~ visit this station & decide whether to abandon it or not. Our people often say we would not stay here were it not for you - Because there is so much Whisky

I wish you to talk freely & fully with Mr Russell who is a member of the Mission Chh. & who has, & still feels a deep interest in this people.

In conclusion let me say I have seriously felt it my duty to ask a dismission from the service of the Board in this field. Before doing this I wish if possible you or an appointed agent should come & examine the field & judge in behalf of the chhs. by whose charities we are sustained.

Yours truly in Christian love
W. T. Boutwell

Rev. W. T. Boutwell

Ojibwas. 28 Nov. 1845

Rec'd Dec. 29.

ansd Jan 7. 1846

D.G.

Rev. David Greene

Mission [illegible]

Pemberton Square Boston

pr favour
Mr Russell

40 Pokegama. May 2^d 1846

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

In your letter to Mr Boutwell last winter, you stated that the Prudential Committee wished for the deliberate opinion of the Mission with regard to the propriety of continuing or discontinuing this station; and in case it should be abandoned, whether there is any other point at which a station may be commenced as a substitute for this, where there would be a reasonable prospect of success. The station at La Pointe commissioned one of their number to come ~~here to~~ and examine into the state of things here, and to consult with the brethren of this station, and with them decide on what course to recommend to the Committee to pursue with regard to the station. Before his arrival, Mr Ely had left. But as you will have an opportunity to consult with him on this subject in Boston, his absence is less to be regretted.

On the first of these subjects, we are ready to say, that, in our opinion, it is not expedient to continue the station. It is in the highest degree painful to our feelings to be obliged to come to such a result. Years ago we consecrated ourselves to the missionary work among this people. We expected trials, and we have met them, and are still willing to face difficulties and self-denial, if by perseverance we have a fair prospect that the end in view can be accomplish We commiserate their wretched condition, and we are not sensible that our love for them has abated. And nothing but the conviction that there is no hope of doing them any extensive and permanent benefit, would induce us to abandon any part of the field, or induce any of us to turn our thoughts and sympathies away from them and look for some other field of labour. But in their present condition, it seems impossible to do much for them.

Much labour has been expended here, and many have heard more or less of the truth. High expectations were for a time confidently entertained, that, at no distant period, the gospel would here triumph over paganism and vice, and that this people would become Christian. A deep impression appeared to have been made upon almost the whole band. The desire to improve their condition became very general. Several gave evidence of having been born of the Spirit and were gathered into a Christian church. Others were apparently impressed with the truths of the gospel. Thus a fair and encouraging beginning was made. But things now assume quite a different aspect. A train of causes has been in operation for several years past, the tendency of which has been to bring a tide of desolation over this section of the Ojibwa country.

It first began with war between the Sioux and Ojibwas, as long ago as 1839-40. By these disturbances the minds of Indians in this quarter were constantly agitated. Instead of encouraging each other to embrace Christianity and become civilized, they were generally active in exciting the Spirit of war and retaliation. At the beginning of hostilities between the two tribes, the prospects of the Station were the fairest. Before they were attacked at this place by the Sioux, as many as a dozen houses for Indians had been completed, or were in process of erection. Much of the labour of building was accomplished by the Indians themselves. As many families had each a considerable plot of ground cleared and fenced mostly also by their own exertions. From their gardens they raised enough to aid essentially in furnishing their families with subsistence. The school was in a flourishing condition. Religious meetings were pretty well attended and interesting. And they appeared to be rapidly improving their condition.

In the Spring of 1841, they were attacked by the Sioux, and compelled to leave their homes, and seek a place of safety in the woods. From the check the station received by these events, it has never recovered. It was two years before the Indians could return and reside here in safety. Many became disheartened, and scarcely one has manifested the same desire to improve his condition which was seen in many before they ~~dispersion~~ were driven from their homes. During their dispersion, those who had professed Christianity, ~~became~~ declined in their ardor and zeal, and their religious affections languished. Some have since backslidden to a lamentable degree.

In the mean time they ceded their land to the government of the U. States. By the time they returned to reside in this quarter, white men had already entered their country, attracted here by the pine lumber which abounds on these streams. The lumbermen were soon followed by whiskey dealers, who for purposes of gain, have furnished them with intoxicating liquor in any quantity they have required. This last evil seems destined very soon to complete the climax of their miseries, and it is the principle one which determines us to decide on abandoning the station. The means of intoxication is so cheap, and so abundant, that there is scarcely an Indian who cannot procure it as nearly as often as he wishes to become intoxicated. It is not only brought into their midst and kept for sale in shops, but men are employed to cary it round the country, and place it before them, and entice them to drink and expend for liquor the last article of comfort they have for themselves and families. With such temptations before them, there are scracely any who do not yield and become intoxicated habitually. The consequence is, idleness, quarreling, fighting, poverty, misery, and death. While such a state of things exists, little or no moral influence can be exerted upon them. They stand aloof from the Mission, and manifest no inclination to avail themselves of any advantages for improvement which it might afford them. Nor is in the power of the Mission to stay this tide of desolation.

Since the return of the Indians to this place, only one or two houses have been completed, and at this time there are only three of four which are habitable. The others by neglect have fallen to decay. Their fields have been neglected, and considerable portions of them have grown up to grass and weeds. Their fences are decayed, and unless thoroughly repaired, if they should plant their fields, the cattle would destroy their crops.

It should be remarked also, that soon after the return of the Indians to this place, the Government removed the Blacksmith and Farmer which had been stationed here, to La Pointe, for the purpose of drawing them away from the baleful influences which they foresaw would be exerted upon them by the introduction of white men and their vices among them.

So long as the present state of things exists, the brethren here feel that their time, and labour, and the money of the Board would be nearly thrown, if they should remain here and continue the station, while at the same time they might be useful somewhere else. We do not see that there is any hope of a better state of things here in future.

The Church is in a backslidden and wretched condition. The whole number who are, or have recently been connected with the church, aside from the missionaries, is ten. Of these four have turned aside so far from the path of Christian duty, that no confidence is reposed in their Christian character. Another one is living with a man, as his wife, without Christian marriage. Only three families now adhere to the mission. These it hard to leave like sheep among the wolves. They may perhaps remove from here, if the station breaks up.

As to the other question whether there is any other place where it is desirable to commence a station, we answer briefly, that we do not see that there is. If a new station should be commenced any where else in this section of country, it must cost much labour and money to get it established, and many difficulties must be met, and then there is little hope of more favourable results than have been seen here. This whole section of country is deluged with the liquid poison. Besides, Mr Boutwell feels that his constitution is not adequate to the task of beginning anew any where in the country, and of going through the same toils and hardships to get established, which he has experienced heretofore in this field.

This is a dark picture we know, and it is with heartfelt pain that we feel compelled to draw it, but it seems to us the true picture. What is to become of these poor and wretched Indians? Are they given up of God, and abandoned to their own hearts lusts? As distressing as the thought is, we are sometimes almost compelled to admit it. Is it through the unfaithfulness and mismanagement of your missionaries, that we have seen no more favourable results to our labours? Could we see wherein it is through our fault, we would gladly amend, cost it much or little. It has been suggested that we take our packs on our backs and follow them constantly through the woods to preach, to them. We would willingly do it, &

at least a part of the time, if by that means there was much more hope of gaining their ear and of winning their hearts to Christ. Doubtless familiar intercourse with them is the way to gain their confidence. And if we have erred any where, it probably has been in not mixing enough with them. But it is our opinion, that they can never become truly Christians without abandoning their habits of savage life. Such a mode of life as they live in their unimproved state is inconsistent with Christianity, and if they become truly Christians, they will at once abandon it, and adopt h[illegible]its of civilization.

We have freely stated our views on these subjects. If they are not correct, we are ready to listen to any arguments you may offer to convince us of our error. We are not disposed to forsake any part of the field so long as it is plainly duty to remain in it, nor to leave our work because it is attended with difficulties.

There is here some amount of property, most of which can probably be disposed of, and turned to account to the Board. Some of it, especially a part of the stock, probably better be taken to La Pointe. There are about 24 acres of land fenced and most of it is under improvement. There are on it two small log houses, a log school house, and two log barns. The buildings are not very valuable. The land is in a good state of cultivation and of good quality. The improvements can probably be disposed for something. The other property consists of stock and tools. The stock is good. The tools generally are much worn and of no great value. We would recommend that the property be disposed of for what it will bring. It will soon eat itself out by employing persons to take care of it.

Falls St Croix W.T.
May 13th

10

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass.

Rev. Messrs Hall & Boutwell
Pokegama May 2 1846
Rec'd June 13.
ans'd Mar. 13, July 22.

Mr Boutwell will remain here for a short time, and will be making inquiries for purchasers of the property, and when authorised, will be willing to dispose of it, if there is any opportunity. We remain yours in the bonds of the gospel.

S. Hall

W. T. Boutwell

To the
Pokagama May 5 1846 -

Prudential Comttee
of the A. B. C. F. Missions }

Revd & Respected Sirs.

When I entered the Missy field, 15 years ago, I entered it for life - My consecration to the cause was entire, unreserved. Nor have I ever regretted my choice. I have ever felt, that this was the field of my labors, & the place of my sepulture. But God seeth not as man seeth. While I saw but the beginning, He saw the beginning & the end. I have never for a moment doubted the sincerity of your sympathies, your counsels or your best wishes - I have ever, & do still, regard you as Fathers in Israel - It is not that my confidence in you is in the least impaired - It is not that I am weary of my work among this benighted & degraded people - No, I am as ready to live & labor for God among them as ever, could I but see the finger of His Providence directing to a spot where in our judgement we could do them good. Indeed I should not dare to leave this field, did I see or feel that God had anything further for me to do for them. They have seen the light but hate & reject it - In the language of a drunken pagan to bro. H. when here a few days since - "You have the Book & know God, you will stand at the right hand, but I am wicked & I shall stand on the left hand". They are given up to their own hearts lusts. So long as they have any thing to barter for whiskey they will have it. A poor widow, who had laid aside a little sugar for her half famished children, was importuned & quarrelled by her relations who had squandered their all for liquor, until she was obliged to give it up to them to procure more whiskey. Nor is this a solitary case. Such is the fact if one has anything others will not rest till it goes for liquor. For 3 weeks past the whole camp near the grog shop has been a scene of drunkenness & fighting. Painful indeed as this picture must be to you, nevertheless it must be drawn - although distressing & disheartening to you, what then must it be to those who have lived with & for them - who have spent their time, their strength, their energies & their best days for their good.

It is in view of such facts & ~~on account~~ of this state of things through all this section of country, that I am led to lay before your Comttee. the subject of my dismission from your service among this people. I still hold myself ready however to listen to any counsel or arguments your wisdom may see fit to suggest. I have freely & fully expressed my feelings & views to those in whom I confide.

Should I leave your service, I shall probably labor somewhere on the St. Croix, between the Falls & the Mouth. At or near either of the lumber establishments I shall be in the midst of whiskey & infidelity. There are 4 or 5 places, viz: Falls, Marine Mills, Still Water, Cottage Grove & the Mouth, where the people are desirous of a Minister. But it is merely to give value to their property, rather than a desire to hear the Gospel & be savingly benefitted by it. At no one place can they sustain a man or raise more than 150.00 & this in grain & lumber mostly. I expect trials & will look to Heaven for grace to meet them. With your permission & advice I will carry the Gospel to the doors of the men who are sending poverty & death among their poor, blind & infatuated Inds. One of these men has been, & for ought I know yet is, a member of the Baptist Chh. His wife is a profess-ing Christian, who with others bearing the Name, have spent the winter in dancing & card playing. From such data before you, you will draw your own inference in regard to the field I contemplate entering.

I once lived in a bark lodge. I think I can do it again. At all events my motto is, "owe no man anything, but to love him & do him good" I did think of requesting the favor of taking a Cow, a pr. of Oxen, a yearling calf & an Ind. Pony. There are also a few farming ~~tools~~ & Mechanic's tools some of which are much worn & of little value to Board, that would be of use to me as I should not have to buy them new. Such as a Plough, Harrow Teeth, 2 light Chains, a Harnss. Saddle, 5 or 6 old Plains 1½ doz augers & chisels, Brace of Bits - Shovel & Dung fork, Pitch forks, Grindsto Hames & traces, 2 Hand saws, Square, adz, 2 Scythes & Snaths, Benc Screw, Steelyards, cooking Stove, 4 Sheets of iron. The Stove has be 6 years in use, & some of the tools I had at Leech Lake. There is not a chair or table or bed stead worth removing. I forwarded my order in Jan. as usual for our supplies, not knowing what course the Board would recommend in regard to the Station. They are at the Falls & can be disposed of, unless your Comittee will allow me to use a part of them after I leave here if I should find it necessary. The Bill I have not yet recd. I have turned over to the La P. Mission the following viz 1 Horse, 1 Yoke of Oxen, 4 Cows 1 pr 2 year old Steers, A 2 year old Bull & 2 Yearlings. Ballance on hand 1 Ind. Pony, 1 pr 5 year old Steers, 2 Cows & 3 yearlings - With regard to the disposition of the farm, you will instruct me at as early an opportunity as convenient. Yours very truly & with much esteem

W. T. Boutwell

Stillwater WT 10
My 26 1846

Rev David Greene
Mission House
Pemberton Square Boston

Rev. Mr. T. Boutwell
Pokegama, May 5, 1846
Rec'd June 13.

Ans'd July 2. D.G.

For Pub. Ind.

42

Rev D. Greene
Miſs. House Boston

Pokagama May 10 1846 –

My dear Sir,

Just before Bro. E. left for Boston I learnt from himself that he had made a communication to you some time previous, in which were statements that I deem calculated to make an unfair & incorrect impreſsion upon your mind, & upon which I beg leave to offer a few brief remarks — First, "he says the Miſsion has lost ~~the~~ its influence it once had, & no effort is made to regain it, or gather the Inds. around us, & the consequence is, he has a small School". The policy of the Miſsion has ever been, to induce the Inds. to ~~locate~~ cultivate the ground, educate their children, & listen to the Gospel.

In the Spring of 44 the Ind. farmer left for La P. – All the Inds. who planted, came to us for aid. The Miſsion aſsisted all who expreſsed their approbation of our conditions. Often a pagan father or Mother was seen bringing his child from the interior 2 ms. to place it in School – the same father or Mother were occasionally seen among our audience with their children on the Sab. –

In the Spring of 45 we felt it our duty to add to our old requisitions, another, viz the temperance pledge. This was the rub – they could send their child to School & attend chh. occasionally, but they could not practise self denial.

In the mean time, they destroyed their own fences for fuel, & cattle & hogs injured their crops at the interior & they withdrew to Fish Lake 20 ms. from us. The following however recd. aid last Spring Chs., Baptiste, Silver, Baiejig & Brunes widow. The 3 last were aided also in fencing gardens.

Till bro. H. came here, he & the brethren at La P. all had the impression that no one was aided. True bro. E. was not here during said time last Spring, & but a part of the time the Spring before. Again I am represented as degrading my ministerial character by manual labor — of this I leave the community to judge. I have laboured only because necessity was laid upon me, & from which I should have been as glad to have been exempted, as your Comitt. would have been glad to have had me. That I have laboured, I know, & that those who now censure me have shared with me in the fruits of my toil is equally true.

But as if to give weight to his opinion, I feel it ungenerous in bro. E. to bring along such a man as Mr Frames, saying, "I would be in the field if I had the best of help." I will not say a word to disparage the man. He was born in Alabama & raised in Ill. — of course his habits & manner of doing work are peculiar. Bro. E. knows his inefficiency as well as myself, & from his own testimony, he never dug 50 bushels of potatoes till last fall. If I mistake not he is a simple hearted well meaning man, but for some reason, neither he, nor his wife, could get a certificate of good standing in the Chh. at Quincy.

Again, he speaks of the state of the Chh. — that there are cases calling for discipline & that the Lords Supper had not been observed for about two years. Why did he not go into particulars & tell you the reasons for these things? Why not say it was necessary to call assistance from La P. & that we had done so but in vain. Why not say, that if we moved alone, it would be construed in the light of personal animosity? Why not say, if we go to an offender immediately, he ~~[illegible]~~ mistakes your object & feels that he is of so much importance to you & your Chh. that you cannot move without him? But farther still, as the fact has been demonstrated here, you cannot get an Ind. Chh. to assume the least responsibility, in cutting off or suspending an offender. During bro. Hall's visit the subject was attempted & in the case of Louis. Alexe.

Baijiz & John for drunkenness, not one of the members would say they should be disciplined. After much reasoning & explanation showing the propriety of the step & what the Bible demanded, still no one would [illegible] give his opinion even. Chs. at lenth says, "We have nothing to say. It will be as the teachers say, who are going to throw us all away". Do you ask why they would neither give their opinion nor act? I ans. simply because they feared to offend the offender & perhaps incur his ill will. Again he speaks of difficulties between myself & Baijiz which in his opinion disqualified me for administering the ordinances. If so I ought not to have continued preaching, & why, if he thought so, did he not tell me of it? If he refers to the difficulty with the old mans son, & on account of which the old man uttered threats, I dont know how his threats should implicate me, & that when bro. E. well knows, the old a few weeks after, c us both to his house & made his confession. He not only then, but afterwards at different times, expressed his grief for what he said, & added that his son had no business to go into my house & conduct in the manner he did. One thing is certain, the Inds. to my face, one & all approved my course, whatever they may have said behind my back. Though my course may be unjustifiable & unprotected in civilized life & though I have a hundred times regretted the necessity I was under & hope it may never again occur, yet I must say I have never regretted the act. God knows how miserably I have done my duty as a Missy & I am willing that you, the chh. & the world should know it too - but I wish you to know all as it has been. Since God is to be my judge, it is a small matter with me to be judged by my fellow men. I cannot look back upon any of my services without grief & shame.

Stillwater WT
My 26 1846

11

Rev David Greene
Mission House
Pemberton Square Boston

[illegible]

Rev. Mr. T. Boutwell.

Pokagama, May 10, 1846

Rec'd. June 13.

Ans'd July 2d. D. G.

Again bro. E. censures me with a neglect of visiting & ~~infor~~ informs you, that he is ready to take his end of the canoe or pack, & go with an interpreter & preach the Gospel from lodge to lodge; if his brethren think him fit. No one to my knowledge ever discouraged him, or threw an obstacle in his way. But what are the facts in the case? While he has had an Ind. boy, Peter, in his family for 2 years past & who has brought in his wood & water – with nothing but his school on his hands, I dont know whether I have been the cause of his not carrying out his favourite views. While his mind the past winter & Spring, was absorbed in the Mining interest, he could take his pack & go alone day after day in examing this region ~~country~~ for copper. Then Mrs Frances was in the School. But I wish a man to act up to his principles – If he could go alone to hunt copper, why not go alone from lodge to lodge & preach the gospel; or if not alone, Peter could have occasionaly gone with him? He seemed to feel no care – no responsibility – was at liberty to go, & come, without my even knowing where he had gone or what was his business – if I were at home he seemed to feel it was sufficient. I know bro. E. meant well – I love him still – for I cannot believe he intended me wrong in what he has done, or said. But if he felt that some one should visit & he had more leisure than myself, he should have acted accordingly & thus forward the great work to which we were consecrated. I was however surprised that ~~bro. E.~~ he should advance the idea that as a catechist ~~merely~~ he had nothing to do by way of visiting from lodge to lodge for giving religious instruction. I hope my dear Sir, you will confer freely with him in relation to the subject matter of this communication. If I have said anything that may give a wrong impression. it has been unintentional & I ask him to forgive me. What I have said I have felt compelled from a sense of duty & justice — You will form your own opinion. but after all we both are to be judged by God. And here I rejoice to stand —

You will be so good as to put the communication into his hands after reading it.

Yours with much esteem

W. S. Boutwell

Pokagama Aug. 10 1846 -

Revd D. Greene
Secy A B C F Missions

My dear Sir,

Your favor of July 2nd came to hand some 10 days since.

Relative to the disposal of the Buildings & Improvements allow me to say a word. As yet no one has made any offer or expressed a wish to purchase since I recd. instructions to sell. In short business is at such a stand, & the times so hard, that it will be difficult to make sale of the property on any reasonable terms. I cannot do violence to my own feelings by disposing of it to whiskey pedlars who would desecrate the place - nor can I think the Board would approve of such a thing. The only individual who will be likely to purchase it is Mr Russell. He still owns his farm 2 ms. from us, & carries it on, though he has resided at La P. for the last 3 years. Mr R. was here a few days before I recd. your letter instructing me to dispose of the place, on receiving your letter I immediately wrote to him & recd. the following in reply -

"In relation to your place, I really know not what to say. Were I out of debt I should try at all events to purchase it. As it is, I fear to

to contract any more liabilities. I am aware that
you will have to sacrifice much at best. As it is
situated I could not mention a liberal ~~sum~~ offer.

Did I make you an offer, I should say five
hundred dollars, for the place & half of the crops;
& pay your hired man, payable in one, two,
three & four years in equal instalments. Should
you think this worth noticing to the Board you
can do so. If you can do better you will of course
do it. As it is situated, (between two fires) (I
mean Inds.) I almost fear to have any thing to
do with it unless I could be there myself".

Thus much for Mr R. What he means by two fires
is this. There are Ind. improvements on each side of
us, which they claim as their own, & unless you build
fences for yourself & them too, you must be annoyed
by them if your cattle injure their gardens.
He has accepted an agency for a Co. engaged
in mining at the Lake & it is doubtful whether he ever comes
back to reside here. Until recently he expected to
return here & carry on lumbering, in which case he
would have been glad to have secured the place.
With this expectation, I commenced making arra-
ngements for leaving immediately, but there is
now but one course for me to pursue viz. stay
on the ground until I can dispose of it.
If I should vacate the buildings, I should not be
surprised in a short time to find them occupied

not only, but claimed by the unprincipled ~~ten~~-~~ant~~ occupant. Such a thing is not an unfrequent occurrence here. A house built & occupied by the Methodist Mission was wrested from them in this manner.

Mr R.s offer I think is as good as $400. for the place, taking half the crop & paying the hired man.

This will not begin however to defray the expense of the buildings, still it may be better to accept this than to keep a man or a family here a year or two expecting to realize more. The most ordinary men command $200. a year & if left alone to carry it on would not raise sufficient to pay their wages besides their board. As near as I can estimate the present crop there will be 250 Bushels Oats & 350 or perhaps 400 of potatoes. Three years ago & Mr R. could have sold his place for $1300. but now he could not realize $800. indeed he cannot find a purchaser. Hard times & Whiskey trafic among the Inds. are the cause of this depreciation.

I hope to get advices from you as soon as convenient. I fear I shall be obliged to pass another winter here among drunken Inds. & barbarous white men.

Yours truly with much esteem

W. T. Boutwell

Stillwater W.T. }
Sept 18 1846 }

11

Rev. David Greene
Mission House
Boston

Rev. Wm. T. Boutwell
Pokeguma, 18th Aug. 1846
Rec'd Sept. 30.
Ans'd Sept 30. D.G.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (44-49)

Boutwell, William T.
  44. 28 January 1847
  45. 4 March 1847
Ely, Edmund F.
  46. 23 November 1845
  47. 25 April 1846
  48. 1 July 1846
  49. 1 April 1847

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Mr Green

My dear Sir,

Allow me to introduce to your notice & your kindness a Gent. from the St. Croix. Mr Purinton, who is from our neighborhood & owns a part of the Stock in the Lumber Establishment at the Falls. He will be able to answer many enquiries which you may desire to make -

Yours truly

W. T. Boutwell

Jan 28 1847

Rev. W. T. Boutwell
Pokegama, 28 Jan. 1847
Recd March 17.

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston

Pokagama March 4 1847 -

Rev D. Green
Miss. House Boston }

My dear Sir,

Your favors of Sept. 19 & 30 are before me, in relation to which I would say, there are no less than three or four applications now to purchase these improvements & buildings. They can be sold for $500. - But a credit must be given for a part of it two years - I thought best to make the terms as favorable as I could while I made them safe -

I therefore have required $200. on giving possession & 150. at the expiration of one year & the remainder at the expiration of the second year.

As a lien upon the property will be no security here, I have thought best to require a Note of hand on interest with a good ~~man~~ security. First it is not every man here that can raise 200. - Second not every man can get a bondsman. This has a tendency to keep in the back ground ~~such~~ irresponsible men into whose hands I am unwilling the property should fall & who would make a brothel here.

There will be due the mission 250. for grain vegetables & hay sold the past winter. I have credited only such as I deemed safe, & with the understanding that I wait on them till they turn their lumber - say June or July. If the season is so they can get their logs down the St. Croix & its tributaries they are all good - but in case there is no rise of water I must wait for "rain". It is all safe & good as the Bank with the exception it lies dead. The concern owes no man a farthing.

There are still one or two individuals with whom I have not been able yet to get a settlement, but they are indebted to the mission.

I shall report in form to Mr Hill as soon as I am able to do it in full.

Our people have been regular all winter in their attendance on public worship. I have not seen a drunken Ind. at our place this winter, though there has been one or two Bbls. expended in our immediate vicinity. The change in the Band has been very great within two years - haggard & poor compared with what they were a short time since. Eleven ~~have been~~ deaths have occurred within 50 Ms. of us this winter that are traced immediately to Whiskey as the cause - two of these were literally burnt to death in a fit of intoxication.

I wish to add a word in confidence. I have ever come to you in confidence & indeed I may assure you there has since I have been in the field but one feeling toward you among my brethren - You have been our counsellor & confident in joy & sorrow - you have been & are still appellated "Father Green" - As such I have felt & shall ever feel that in you I have a fathers sympathy & a fathers interest -

A proposition has been made to me during the Winter & urged on me to accept of an agency at Lake Superior for a Mining Co. The salary is 1000. & found, with assurances it shall be increased after I become familiar with the business.

I have not given them a decision ans. I have stated as reasons for my not accepting: ~~the~~ 1st The reproach it would bring upon the cause of Miss=
2nd It will diminish the confidence of the pe
in my brethren.
3d. I might add as a third reason, I have given myself to the service of the Chh. - & shall I now sell myself to men? The people on the St. Croix, if I may believe my friends, are still anxious to secure my services, though Methodism & Episcopalianism both after trial find but little sympathy & less support.

I fear Presbyterianism or Congregationalism would not fare much better. In the opinion of the most sanguine 300. is the most that could be raised & this more than one half in grain & vegetables. My labors will be required at 3 points the extremes of which are 35 ms. subjecting me to much travel & taking me a 3d or 4th of my time from home. In this case I must employ a man a part of the year which would require 100 or more in cash. I see but one consego forward & trust Prov. If you see otherwise, be so good as to speak.

Yours very truly,

W. T. Boutwell

Rev. Wm. T. Boutwell
Pokegama, March 4, 1847

Rec'd April 23

Ack'd April 30.

Falls St Croix W. T.
March 26th
10

Rev David Greene
Mission House
Pemberton Square
Boston

Please continue the Recorder & Youths Companion together with the Herald. I have rec'd. none for Jan. or Feb. Send Falls St. Croix instead of Stillwater.

Letters from

Edmund F. Ely, teacher.

1845–1849.

Pokegoma November 23d 1845.

Rev. David Greene

Dear Sir.

Through the blessing of God, my family & self have enjoyed general health, during the past year, and, as far as the necessaries of life are con~~fort~~cerned, have not been prevented from discharging our duty to the Indians. The Spring was spent in building a boat, & transporting our supplies home, which business seems rather naturally to fall to me. You have also learned by Br. Hall of my journey to Lapointe, at the time of Payment, and the business whch principally engrossed ~~my~~ any attention there.

I reported my school to the Agent, as usual. The average number of Scholars for the year was *less* than *ten*. The decrease is owing to the fact, that the Indians have ceased to rendezvous here, as formerly. They do not come & camp by the Mission. They do not plant here. They have not energy enough to fence against cattle and Hogs, and, therefore, for two seasons on their return from their payment, they found their gardens demolished. Having no Farmer to plough for and assist them, the few who have planted at all, this year, have planted at Fishing Lake, about fifteen miles up Snake River. They made that their principal camp last winter and Summer, are now there, many of them, and will probably remain the coming season. Occasionally, they camp at Mr. Russells, two miles from us, for a short time, generally on the occasion of a Grand Medicine dance, but soon scatter, most of them returning to Fishing Lake. It is apparent, therefore, that our opportunities of labour with the Indians, save our Church, are very limited. The causes which drew them away from us will continue to operate, as there are no counter influences at work. Nor is the Mission in its present condition able to counteract, for, the influence which it once exerted over the Indians, is in a great measure, lost.

Our Church. I will tell you sir a little what their present situation! It consists of *six* male and *four* female members. *John*, the first convert, is a—

drunkard, and has relapsed into Paganism. His house ~~and~~ and field lie waste. Baiejik (Daniel) is drunk at this moment, in his own house, in company with pagans whom he invited there to drink with him. Louis and Alexis Laprarie both drunkards in their father's house. Nancy Laprairie living with a Frenchman in an unmarried state - otherwise correct. There are some extenuating circumstances in her case - Joseph Laprairie & wife - parents of the above remain firm. Charles Cadotte, (son in law,) & wife, have gone to Lake St. Croix - principally on account of difficulties with drunken relatives. We suppose them firm. Susan - daughter of Joseph, has a drunken husband - firm. - The Little Sioux, (see Meeting at head of Lake Sup. 1842) relapsed into paganism, and died last spring - not a member of the Church - John, Daniel, Louis, Alexis & Nancy are all yet in the Church. John has stood under censure for four years. No communion season has been observed for more than one, and I think more than two years. It is so long since that I cannot recall the time. For a season circumstances rendered it, in my estimation improper for Mr. Boutwell to officiate, principally in consequence of a difficulty between him and Daniel, which would have required Church action - & which has been cancelled (only) by being worn out. There is great spiritual dearth in the Church.

Joseph has three children in school Susan - two. Daniel - One. Charles - (absent) has one. This is my field, as teacher. I have in my family, Peter Camden, aged about 21 years. He is a son of Mang-o-sit - Chief of Fond du Lac, who was under my instructions during the fall & winter of 1837 - during that winter, Peter & and a Br. older whom we called Edward, learned to read & write. On their father's return to paganism, we lost sight of them & after wandering about in the fisheries of the Lake, until two years since, Peter embraced religion - The first time I heard him express his feelings was at that Meeting on the Lake shore - He gained spiritual strength - was incessantly studying his testament, & at times his exercises were very interesting. He accompanied Br. Ayer & myself, in ~~the~~ commencing the Red lake Station - & when I returned here, came with me. & has been with us more than half the time since.

He received his name at the hands of Elder Cavanaugh at the Meth. Station at Fondulac where he spent about one Month, previous to the Meeting on the Lake shore — His patron Mr Peter G. Camden of St. Louis, counsels & assists him a little — but we have principally supported him — He ought ~~be~~ have been rec^d into the Church a year ago —

It may be asked, why has God suffered such a change in the prospects of this station? — Has this declension and apostacy in the Church taken place, despite of faithful & well adapted pastoral & missionary labour? despite of earnest prayer and a humble reliance on the Holy Spirit for His influences? — However this may be answered in your mind, I feel that the Mission have not clean hands in the matter.

I cannot fill the place of a Missionary, and I disposed — There is an incongruity in the Missionary's yielding his work to a teacher & engage in secular business. He lays off his profession in the estimation of all. Br. Boutwell has been in the field with his hired man, as regularly as the man himself —.

There are but three or four families about us: Shall we be content with them alone, as a field of labour? We have come to preach the Gospel to the Ojibwy. ~~Shall~~ What shall become of the bulk of the people, for they hear not the Gospel. I find Christians at home expect that this is our predominant work, and are disappointed at our circumscribed labours. The station is brought into disrepute by it, and is almost become a proverb among the ungodly men by whom we are surrounded — observers of the extent of our labours. We must have a Missionary who feels the sacredness of his office work & who preaches Christ to the Indians with a feeling praying heart — who cannot prostitute his holy calling — I do not mean to say, work none — but to feel that his call is from God is, & his vows to God are, to preach — to win souls to Christ — & that his study is his closet & home instead of his fields.

As for myself with a School of 4 to 6, I am ill at ease — I cannot have a School without being where Indians are & when I see no efforts made to collect Indians round us, for we must now depend on the influence of the Gospel to draw them to us — My heart is sad —

You will excuse me, Dr Sir, for writing in this manner. I have, as you know, spoken concerning this station, to my brethren. I did not feel called to complain to you. yet, Sir, the evils must be remedied, or we shall fall entirely - and I am constrained to speak to you, on the subject. The Indns must be followed, in order to their hearing God's word - & I fear Br. Boutwell will never do this, unless absolutely shut up to it. I am willing to take one end of my Canoe, or my train with an adequate interpreter, (If I am thought fitted for that work, by my brethren,) and preach the Gospel from Camp to camp - & I cannot feel at rest until it is done - but it would be better for me to accompany a man who sustains & honors the Ministerial Character. He would be recd with more respect by the Indians, & his words have weight. He must be a praying man - for it is a work of faith - the simple Word, against the powers of darkness.

If itinerancy, were to be the Mode of operation among the Indians of this region, this place is probably the best place for head quarters. But if we do not move out among the people. I think it will be but a short time before we may well leave the ground.

Nov 30. - I have a request to make - i.e. permission of absence say 10 Months - to visit the States. It is now near twelve years since I came out - Mrs Ely never saw any thing beyond Mackinaw - has never seen one of my relatives - I think that a short Visit to the busy world would add much to her stock of information & experience - I think that I can better be spared now, than bye & bye, when we should become settled in a course of active operations, or perhaps change our field - I recd three days since, a letter from Br. Hall, on the subject of the Spelling Book (informing me of your conclusions) - I have written that I was about asking a furlough - & suggested, that should I go, & the Brethren were willing to commit to Mrs E. & myself the reading of the proofs, the Board might be better pleased with it, than our present arrangement: - I wish to go as far as Springfield Mass. Start on the opening of Navigation - & get back by 1st Sept.

From what I observe, I judge that Br. Boutwell is making preparations to ~~ca~~ ask a dismission from the service of the Board. If I am right, you will soon hear it from himself - I do not wish to be a news-teller - but simply this - I of course cant best leave while he yet remains. Will you please drop me a line immediately on this subject - I would like to know also what the board thinks best to do with this station. Yours in Chn. love.

E. F. Ely. see envelope

If I. shall not be able to get a portion of my family's Annuity money (which is lent out,) in season, Can I. draw on the Board, for $100. in case permission is given me to go?

Will you please write me by the bearer of this, Mr. Jos. Russell.

Mr. E. F. Ely

Ojibwas. 23 & 30 Nov. 1845

Rec'd Dec. 29.

Ans'd Jan 7.
1846.
D. G.

P.C.

Rev. David Greene
Cor. Sec. A.B.C.F. Missions
Missionary Rooms
Boston
Mass.

Fav'd by
Mr. Jeremiah Russell

BOSTON

47

{Steam Boat Lynx - Miſsiſsippi River
{April 25. 1846 ——

Rev. D. Greene, Cor. Sec. A.B.C.F.Miſs.
Dr Sir

I have not been able to inform you at an earlier date, (save yesterday at Galena) that I should go East - You have probably by this time recd the Manuscripts of the Ojibwe Spelling Book by mail. They were forwarded direct from Lapointe -

We intend visiting Miſs Cooke & other friends 3 or 4 days in St Louis - & then proceed on our route -

I hope the printing of the Book will not be much delayed by on our account - We could not have started earlier - on account of ice in our inland lakes -

Mrs. Ely joins in respects to you

Yours Respectfully
E. F. Ely.

Mr. Edmund F. Ely,
St. Louis, Mo. 25 Apr. 1846.
Rec'd May 8.

Rev. David Greene
Miss'y Rooms.
Boston
Mass.

ST. LOUIS
APR 28
MO.

Boston. July 1. 1846.

Rev David Greene

Dr Sir

In relation to the Pokegoms Station I will state to you my views—

1st As to the present usefulness of the station — We have 3 or 4 families who yet occupy houses near us — a few Indians pass & repass — and the Lumbermen, who spend a portion of the year in our vicinity, occasionally call on us, and attend public worship — and in the winter season, occasionally hear preaching in their Shanties. The principal rendezvous of the Band, is now at Fishing Lake, 15 or 18 Miles distant.

The number of Children ~~Lo~~ of the families who live by the Mission, is not over 6 or 7. — and it is seldom that there are more at the station. For a very short portion of the year, there may perhaps be 10 or 12 Children near us. I do not think so limited a field of labour justifies the sustaining the Station — aside from the consideration of their intemperance. If that whole band cannot be reached by the Missionary, which is small at the best, there are other points in the country, ~~where~~ of (vastly) more importance.

2^d — As to the removal of the Station, — Where can we go? We have Lac du flambeau & Lac Courteoreille Eastward — and Mille Lac, & Crow wing River, (the hunting region of the Sandy Lake Band) westward of us — but these are all within Wisconsin and Whiskey cannot be kept out. Leech Lake since its recent abandonment, would not be considered a hopeful field — Fond du Lac is occupied. Shall we go to Old —

Grand Portage, on the N. Shore of Lake Superior? They are indeed the farthest removed from Whiskey, but the Catholics are already established there. I consider it would be better to remain at P. than to be at the toil & expence of building at any point on the Wisconsin frontier, since we are at the best point for visiting other bands, & for getting our supplies.—

3d As to the abandonment.— In view of the facilities of getting Whiskey, it is probably best to leave, although about 1500 of the 3000 included in the Annuity, will not have a Missionary within their bounds.—

4th As to the best mode of labour among the Ojibwes.— It seems to me essential that more prominence should be given to preaching the Gospel in the Wigwam — that fewer things should be suffered to occupy the Missys time, to the prevention of this kind of labour

Yours, Sir, with Respect.

E. F. Ely

Mr. Edmund F. Ely

Boston July 1. 1846

Rec'd July 2.

Ans'd July 3. D.G.

Rev. David Greene.
Miss'y Rooms.
33 Pemberton Square
Boston

49 La Pointe Mission. Lake Sup. Apl. 1, 1847

Rev. D. Greene
Cor. Secy. A.B.C.F.M.

Respected Sir,

If our purchases are not made will you request Mr. Chapman to purchase Mrs. Ely's list of Shoes No. 6½ instead of No 7 - my mistake -
I wish to add - 2 Setts Lowndes's Writing Books -

I also ordered a copy of "Webster's Dictionary" - (having left mine with Mr. Boutwell who had none) - I would prefer the large Edition recently published by the Messrs Merriam Springfield - on account of the Phrases & Anglicised words from foreign Languages - Scientific terms &c &c - for which I have now no reference Books - If it is not in market, I would prefer waiting -

I presume you think it time to hear something relative to my travelling expenses last summer. They are thus

Expenses of Journey down —	$141.61	
do — do back —	133.00	$274.61

This does not include expense of travel and Board, incident to the publication of Spell. Book -

Contra

Allowed by Board —	$100.	
Pd in settlement of Pokegama a/c	20.	
Ind Payment in Cash & Goods applied to family use —	37.50	157.50
Bal. against me —		$117.11

I expended for Clothing for family - En Route & for supplies of provisions on return - $62.71

The remainder of amounts recd from Mr. Hill were for payment of bills (purchases) in Boston -

Last fall, Miss Spooner & myself conceived it would be an important Experiment to consolidate our Schools for the season — thereby enlarging the Classes, enabling one to perform the labour of two — giving time for other important branches of instruction — & by a division of labour, devoting more time to particular studies. The principal objections to this, hall been, the supposed impropriety of bringing the Sexes together, with such morals as the Children of this community possess ~~As~~ from ~~the~~ occasional collisions between the members of the male & female Schools, when they met on their way to & from School — it was concluded next to impossible — at least impracticable to have them together.

It was plain that with proper regulations there was little danger of their becoming worse, during hours of School — & that bringing them together, would give opportunity of observing their conduct & teaching them to treat Each other with propriety & kindness —

We formed our Classes from both Sexes — School numbering from 45 to 55 — Complaints were made ~~became~~ less frequent and in a few weeks flagrant cases of impropriety were seldom known — In this, our expectations were more than realized — The Schools increased in interest, until the families began to leave for the camps —

About the first of December, Mr. Scholla, the Cath. Priest, commenced a course of instruction of about an hour Each session — & called off most of the Cathol Boys who composed Mr Sproats Schools or rather who would have attended mine — & also a few Girls — He ~~did~~ continued his school until the families left for the camps —

Our School has averaged more than 40 Scholars. Whether the Schools will be separated for the summer, is not determined —

Our Sabbath School has flourished ~~during~~ the winter — Will you send me for its use 50 Copies 'Youth's Penny Gazette' found at No. 5. Cornhill — Am. S. S. Union — Some of them will probably be paid for by the scholars - They are advertized to cost $3 - for 20 Cop. -

We hear frequently from Mr. Boutwell He is yet at Pokegama - Not having disposed of the property there - & also unsettled as to his future course. Mrs. Ely joins in respects to Yourself & Mrs Greene -

Yours Respectfully
Edmd F. Ely

I have just learned from Miss Spooner that she had ordered several copies of the Well-Spring. Please but 5 Copies of the "Youth's Penny Magazine" -

E. F. Ely

Falls St Marie Mi
April 23

10

Rev. David Greene.
Missionary Rooms.
No. 33. Pemberton Square
Boston

Mr. E. F. Ely
La Pointe, April 1, 1849
Rec'd May 18.
Ans'd Jun 1.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (50-55)

Ely, Edmund F.
50. 11 August 1847
51. 28 February 1848
52. [October] 1848
53. 9 July 1849
54. 12 April 1849
55. 22 August 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

50

La Pointe Aug. 11. 1847.

Rev. David Greene

D. Sir

A vigorous Temperance Effort has been commenced here — among all classes — which promises much good — We want immediately some popular temperance publications for circulation — It has been proposed to take the Journal of the Am. Temp. Union — & also to purchase 2 or 3 setts of ~~a quantity~~ of Temp. Tales. — Quite a number of Subscribers have been obtained — Can You order for us — 10 Cop. of The Journal of Temperance if the price be not over 50 ¢ pr yr. — & — 1 Sett Arthurs Temp. Tales.

2 " Sergeants " "

The Subscribers & the Socy. will pay to the Mission here the amount of the above works —

It will be necessary to forward the package soon in order to its reaching us this fall, whh is very important for us

Please direct to care of C. P. Hastings &c. Detroit,

& J. H. Hulburt Esq. Ste St. Marys

Any other tracts on the Subject, can be very profitably circulated — something whh enforces the Scripture doctrine on the subject — "The well conducted farm" — "Eventful twelve hours," &c &c —

The Mission have exerted a very important influence in this movement & hope much from it with God's blessing,

With Respect

Yours, in haste

E. F. Ely

Lapointe 18th Augt 1847

10

Rev. David Greene
Cor. Secy. A.B.C.F. Miss.
Miss. Rooms.
33 Pemberton Square
Boston.

Mr. E. F. Ely,
La Pointe, 11 Aug. 1847
Recd Aug. 24.

✓

Ansd Aug. 24.
D.G.

10 Yds Stout Straw Ticking.
1 " Croton Cloth - to match Sample.
1/2 doz Assorted tapes
1 ps Binding for Coats
4 Knit Comforters.
3 - 6/4 Cotton Shawls
1 Large Summer Shawl (for Mrs. Ely)
1/2 lb Blk Linen Thread
1/2 " Bro " "
1/2 " Wht Cotton "
1 doz Assorted Spools
4 Twists
1 paper Assorted Sharps. (needles)
2 Tape Needles.
2 papers Pins.
1 do " fine
1 Ivory Comb
1 Pocket "
1 Back Comb
1/2 doz Side do
3 balls Cot. Cord
1 lb Coarse Net twine
1 Gro. Metal Suspender Buttons
1 doz Top Coat Buttons
2 " " " " Smaller Size
2 " Blk Covd Coat do
2 " " " Vest "
2 " Agate Shirt "
2 " Pearl " "
2 Boxes Hooks & Eyes.
3 Boy's Palm Hats.
1 Bed Cord
1 Skein Knitting Cotton
3 Leather Belts for Boys.

Rev. D. Greene

Dr Sir

Excuse this hasty note - Br. Wheeler, & myself are just starting on a Missionary tour into the Mining district - Shall go as far Ontonagon River, & perhaps to the Methodist Station at Ance Keewaweenan.

I enclose my list of family supplies for the current year. Our people are about leaving for the sugar Camps.

Yours Respectfully.

C. F. Ely

Lapoint (Lake Sup.)
Feby 28. 1848.

6 ℔ Glazed Batting
1 Stout Cot. Umbrella

1 pr Calf Brogans No 7.
1 " Morocco Slippers " 7
3 " Wo's Shoes —— " 6
1 " " Calf Bootee " 6
1 " Boys Boots thick " 16
1 " " " " " 14
1 " " " " " 12
2 " " Cow hide Shoes " 15
2 " " " " " " 13
2 " " " " " 9 & 10
1 – Kid-dressed Sheep Skin —

3/4 doz 10 in Plates – Edged or wht.
~~2 doz Nappies sorts.~~
~~1/2 doz Tumblers –~~
3/4 " Brittania Tea Spoons.
1/2 " " Table "
1 Doz Square tins
6 – 6 Qt. Milk Pans
1/2 doz 1/2 pt Mugs
1 Wash Basin (Tin) copper bottom
1 – Qt Funnel.
1 Lantern
1 Milk Skimmer
1 Water Dipper

1 Jack Knife (good)
1 Penknife
1 Centre Bitt Ea. 1 in & 1 1/8 in
2 Gro. Shoe nails – dif-sizes
2 prs. 3 in Butts.
2 " 1 1/2 " "

1/4 Gro. 2 in Screws.
1/4 " 3/4 " " –

10 ℔ Coffee
3 ℔ Prepared Cocoa
1 ℔ Hyson Tea
5 ℔ Blk Tea
5 ℔ Pearl Barley
2 oz Nutmegs
1 ℔ Ginger
4 Boxes Mustard
1 ℔ Starch
1 Gro. Matches
4 doz Clothes Pins.
1 Keg – 5 or 6 Galls. Lard Oil.

2 ℔ French Yellow
10 ℔ Wht Lead – (prepared)
4 ℔ Whiting
2 oz. Prussian Blue (prepared)
1 ℔ Blk Lead
1 Paint Brush
1 Small do —

1 Qt Brandy
1 " Spt. Turpentine
1 Pint Spic Syrup of Rheubarb
4 oz – Paragoric
1 Bott. Vermifuge
1 " Extract of Cherry Bark – for Asthma
2 Boxes Lees Pills
1 pt. Cologne
2 Bott. Pulmonary Balsam
2 " Liquid Opodeldoc
2 " Nerve Linament
1 " Olive Oil
2 " British Oil

1 ℔ Beeswax
1/4 ℔ White Wax
2 oz. Gum Camphor
1 ℔ Glue
2 oz Bazilicon
2 " Diachylon
1 Lancet
1 Sett Apoth. Weights
1 Cork Screw
1/4 ℔ Corks Asd
2 oz Indigo
1 Small Funnel for Meds
1 Jar Shaving Soap
1 Thermometer

1 Websters Dictionary, Quarto Edition Merriams
1/2 Ream Ruled Letter paper
1/4 " fine ruled foolscap (good)
1 Light in the Dwelling by Author of Peep of day

1/2 doz Hair Pencils
1/2 " drawing pencils (Asstd).
1 Crystal for Clock – ordered last year.
3 – flat ~~Watch~~ Crystals – 78/45 inch

Mr. E. H. Ely
Recd May 10th, 1848.

Mr. E. F. Ely.

Recd May 10 — 1848.

Purchases.

Ackd to Wm. Hall June 12
D.G.

E. F. Ely's family supplies. 1848.

6 Men's Shirts.
2 Knit Wrappers.
2 prs. do Drawers.
1 Gents. Cravat
4 prs Men's Socks.
10 " Children's assorted do –
1 Cloth Cap. (7¼ in)
3 Seal Skin do – (7 – 6¾ – 6½ in)
2 prs Yarn Stockings
4 Runs Col^d Stocking Yarn
2 " Wht. " "
Donations of Wo^s Apparel.
do " Children's do –
1 Doz fancy Cotton Hdkfs (for boys)
2 Gingham do
3 Yds Cassimere (good)
6 " do (Heavy)
10 " Sattinett
6 " Canada Grey Cloth
8 " Heavy Cotton (for Boys' pants).
6 " Red Flannel
6 " Yellow "
1 ps. Bro. Sheeting.
1 " Dark Calico
6 Yds Pink " (fast Cols.).
3 " do Gingham.
4 " Bro. Linen
½ " Band Muslin.
1 " Cot. Velvet. (Blk)
12 " Dark Col^d Cambric.
6 " Crash
½ " fine Cambric
10 Yd. Wool & Cot. Plaid (for children)

Rev. S. B. Treat. Dr Sir.

I forward the following Collection of Specimens, intended for the Mission Museum, in a box, to Rev. Mortimer Blake of Mansfield, Mass. with request that he send them to you —

Yours truly E. F. Ely.

1 Amethystine Quartz. Prince's Bay. N. Shore Lake Sup.
2. Galena & Sulphuret of Zinc (Blende) in Calc. Spar. — Same locality.
3. Grey Copper Ore Agate Harbour.
4. do do " in Sulphate of Barytes. do do
5 Nat. Copper in Vein Stone Copper Falls.
6 " " " Vein Stone Cliff Mine Eagle River.
7 Native & Oxidized Copper. Algonquin Mine. Fire Steel River.
8. " Copper in Vein Stone Indian Cave Ontonagon River
9 Grey Sulphuret Copper in Vein Stone Mendenhall mine, do do
10. " " " — Mendenhall mine do do
11. Native & Gr. Carb. Copper. in Vein Stone near Iron River.
12 " Cop. in Vein Stone Union Mine " " "
13 Variegated Sulphuret of Copper. Delavan Mine, Porcupine Mts.
14. Red Oxid of Copper Belmont mine Porcupine Mts.
15 Copper in Epidote Lone Rock Mine " "
16 Chrystallized Epidote & Nat. Copper Blk River, near Fondulac
17 Copper in Epidote Rock do do
18. Portion of Soap Boulder.
19. Yellow & Variegated Sulphuret of Copper Bruce's Mine. St Mary's River
20. Copper Ore from Cuba W. Indies.
21 Chip from Mass Copper — Cliff mine Eagle River
22 Portion of a Mass of Copper, found on Main Shore, opposite Lapointe weighing 3800lbs (3800lbs)
23. Mass of Copper Union Mine near Iron River
24 Sheet Copper in Chloritic Clay do do

Mr E. F. Ely,
La Pointe

Rec^d Oct. 23. 48

Minerals.

Lapointe (Lake Sup.) Jany. 9. 1849

Rev. Selah B. Treat
Cor. Sec. A.B.C.F. Miss.
Boston

Respected Sir.

I have, for some time past, been intending (at a suitable time) to request a dismission from the service of the Board, for reasons affecting my own personal good* & that of my family. — and it has occurred to me that perhaps it may be found as convenient to the Board, in the present year as at any other period, for the reasons, 1st that this Mission have suggested to the Committee, the expediency of looking out for another Teacher for this Station, in place of Miss Spooner; and ~~two~~ one may even now be selected; — and 2d that since that time, a Catholic Teacher from Montreal has opened a School, which contains nearly all who composed my School of last winter, — and therefore only one Teacher is needed at this Station.

The School which I now teach, numbers 20 to 22 steady Scholars, and is almost exclusively an English School, & probably will be more entirely so, for time to come, — and a knowledge of the Ojibwe language is not necessary to the usefulness of the Teacher. If therefore a Male Teacher be found, (he may be single, since times have much changed in this community,) to fill my place, I do not see that any loss will accrue to the influence of the Mission by the change; — but even the reverse, if he be a man of discretion & somewhat cultivated.

If such an one were to start by the last of April, he would reach here by the vessels in May. It would greatly accommodate me to be released as early in the season as possible as I shall probably go back to the old station of Pokegoma, if

* i.e. the effects of the employment of Teaching upon mind & body

I. can make arrangements with the present occupant – and may, perhaps, be useful to the Six Native Church Members, who are left there as Sheep without a Shepherd, but who, mostly, maintain their integrity.

I. had intended to lay this matter before the mission – previous to communicating with you, but it occurred to me, this Evening, that one Month would be gained – & perhaps be quite essential to th expediting of the arrangement, by writing now – since our Monthly ma leaves in the Morning. I. Shall lay the subject before the Mission as soon as the Brethren are together – whh may not be immediately, as 3 or 4 days since, Mrs. Wheeler was seriously ill.

In the mean time, Dear Sir, I. shall be anxious to h what the Committee think, upon the subject of my proposition, at as early a day as is consistent.

Yours Respectfully.

Edwd. F. Ely,

Lapointe 18th Jan 49 Paid 10

Rev Selah B. Treat.
Missionary Rooms
33. Pemberton Square
Boston Mass

Mr. Edm. F. Ely
La Pointe, Jan 9, 1849
Rec. Feb 23
Ans. March 1.

Crow Wing River, Upper Mississippi.
April 12. 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Respected Sir.

You have probably received a letter from me of last Jany. requesting a dismission from the service of the Board, at such time as my place can be supplied; and expressing a desire that it might take place in the early summer. The matter was laid before the Mission at our last meeting, of which Br. Hall has doubtless informed you. In my letter, I stated the reasons for my request very briefly. Teaching a primary School becomes more & more a trying business — exceedingly irksome and irritating — both physically and mentally. For more than a year, I have been endeavouring to make it as easy as possible by improvements in government and arrangement, but have concluded that I cannot pursue the employment without serious detriment.

I feel also that my Children are rapidly learning *vice* in the society of associates, from whom, as we are situated, they cannot be kept without re~~traint~~ =straint so severe as to prejudice the parental influence over them. Other duties render it impossible for me to be with them, in both their employments & relaxations. I have no promise that God will save them from the influence of evil communications. Our family consists of Four Boys, the eldest of whom is Nine Years of Age. —

Mrs. Ely has long been decided on the above points — I have very reluctantly arrived at the conclusion to request a dismission.

I presume there may be much difference of opinion concerning the validity of such reasons for leaving the Mission Service. Br. Hall, a man of quite different nerve, did not see the urgency of the case. —

I judge that my place can be supplied, without loss to the School or Mission: — and if I settle at the Old Pokegoma station, my little influence will not be lost to the cause of the Gospel in the country.

By permission of the Mission, I am employing the usual spring Vacation in a journey to visit Mr. Russell (who [illegible] here,) the purchaser of the Mission Place at Pokegoma. Were I at liberty to proceed at once to Pokegoma, I could make an arrangement with him, advantageous, I think, to both — but I have no desire to leave my post, until my place is supplied.

Mr. R. is much involved, and has no prospect of soon being able to pay the Board — if at all — but he is an honest man — Unless he returns to P. to reside, he had better never have bought it. The place is fast deteriorating. — I am not able to buy it off his hands, nor rent it for this year, as I cannot get there to plant it. It would be more than I could do — to buy the improvements & the land also — when it shall come into market. We feel attached to the place, One of our Children lies buried there.

It is necessary for me to anticipate the answer of the Board, in consequence of our distance from Boston. I have no pecuniary resources — & must ask the assistance of the Board in removing my family. — Some provisions

provisions for the winter, and a small supply of winter clothing— Our Cooking Stove—Table furniture & Culinary ware— & the Cows whh have belonged to our family. Viz—An Old Cow 11 Yrs old, & Calf, and a 3 Yr. Old Heifer, whh we ourselves reared— A few Tools also— in my possession— I have no team— nor farming tools—but must trust in God for assistance as I need it—

I have the great pleasure of Meeting Brother Ayer, here, and have conferred freely with him concerning my leaving the service of the Board— He has this day recd your letter of Dismission—dated Jany. 10.— He has taken up a prairie farm about 15 miles below this. One of his sons is with him.— His health is quite good—except that his throat is very easily affected. I shall leave here in 3 or 4 days for Lapoint—via Po=kegoma—

Yours Respectfully.

E. F. Ely

Fort Snelling
May 9th

10

Rev. Selah B. Treat
Missionary House.
33. Pemberton Square
Boston.

Mr E. F. Ely
Crow Wing, April 12, 1849
Rec^d May 24
Ackd Aug 31.

55 Lapointe Augt 22^d 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat

Dear Sir

I arrived home on the 9th inst after an absence of five months, and here find your letters of March 1. & April 5th. My prolonged absence, beyond the time granted me by the Mission, of course, needs an explanation.

You are aware that ~~my~~ the object of my journey was, to make provision for my anticipated removal from Lapointe. As I thought Pokegama the best place for me at present, I wished to engage Mr. Russell to furnish me a dwelling, vegetables & hay — little expecting to be released until it would be too late to remove before fall.

It became necessary for Mr. Russell, before making an arrangement with me, to go to Lapointe, and I remained until his return. By him. I rec^d information from Lapointe, which led me to conclude that the Mission would probably think it best for me to remove at the Opening of Navigation. I therefore acceded to a proposal made me by Mr. Russell, to plant his farm, & also the old mission premises, at Pokegama, & left Crow Wing River, (in the language of Mrs Russell to Mr. Oakes), "to hire men and make arrangements to commence operations there. After he gets things started, " he will go immediately to Lapointe". I intended, at this place, to resume my duties, & wait my release, rather presuming upon its taking place early. Having taken possession, I proceeded to look up trusty hands to carry forward the work, but failed in securing such help. I finally was obliged to get in the crop myself, assisted by a Christian Indian & his son-in-law — hoping that each succeeding week would bring me the desired help. I finally, ~~was obliged~~ about the middle of June, engaged a man to take charge, but he was taken sick on his arrival, & was obliged to leave for medical assistance. From the 4th of May to the 4th of July, I lived alone, doing my own cooking. On that day, one Man, arrived — & on the 7th July another also — I was prepared to leave immediately, but was not able to get a guide until the 1st Inst. The situation of my family urged me homeward, — but I seemed shut up from them by the hand of Providence —

The Mission, on hearing the statement of my detention, as above, took the subject into consideration, & decided that it was expedient that I remove this fall. I am therefore preparing to do so, as soon after Payment, as possible

On the subject of reconsideration — I do not see how the evils, of which I complain, can be avoided, at this place, & therefore still prefer to ~~leave~~ the Station. Did the Mission not think it best, on the whole, that I go now, I should ~~make~~ arrange my business, so as to remain at my post until a Teacher arrives.

The rule of the Board concerning dismissions, I heartily approve. I expected that the Committee would receive the sentiment of the Mission on the subject, before finally acting upon it — but in the mean time, that enquiries would be made for a teacher, in case one was not already provided in place of Miss Spooner.

I commence farming without tools or team of my own — I had thought, in case Mr Russell should fail to pay for the Mission place, at Pokegoma, & propose to give it up, as I think will be the case — of asking of the board its use, on such terms as they shall think proper.

Four of the members of the Pokegoma Mission Church have been there this summer, & I have held meetings with there every Sabbath.

I would be happy to receive from the Board, for a time longer, "*The Youth's Companion*", *Herald*, *N.Y. Evangelist* & *Dwights Family Magazine*, addressed to me at

"Pokegoma, St Croix Co., Minnesota." —

I have nothing in shape of a *Commentary* — having always yielded what of that sort, was in my possession, to meet the wants of the Mission, in all its changes — I need very much a Set of "Barnes Notes" — & "Practical Sermons." —

There were added, to my family during my absence (June 22d) a fine pair of Twin Daughters, making our number of Children — Six.

Yours Respectfully.

E. F. Ely

Lapointe Sept 6th 49 11

Rev. S. B. Treat.
Cor. Sec. A. B. C. F. Missions
33. Pemberton Square
Boston.

Mr E. F. Ely
La Pointe, Aug. 22, 49
Rec. Sept. 17.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (56-62)

Hall, Sherman
56. 2 September 1844
57. 29 January 1845
58. 11 April 1845
59. 29 August 1845
60. 26 January 1846
61. 17 February 1846
62. 18 March 1846

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Letters from

Rev. Sherman Hall,

1844 — 1856.

done

Lapointe, Lake Superior, Sept 2d 1844

56

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir,

I have learnt ~~since~~ on my return, that the funds for the support of schools among the Ojibwa Indians on the ceded territory, provided for by the treaty of Oct. 1842, are forwarded to the Sub Agent at this place, and must be drawn, through him. One thousand dollars was the amount allowed to the schools which are under the direction of the A.B.C.F.M. for the year 1843, and five hundred dollars has been appropriated for the first six months of the present year. It lies with agents of the Government to say what portion of these funds shall be given for the support of our schools hereafter.

Nothing has been received out of our appropriation for 1843. I learn from Mr Stuart that the funds for the payment of the amount due to us for the first six months of 1843, was forwarded to Mr. Bronson, the former Sub agent here; but it has never been paid over to us. Since last fall, Mr B. has been removed from office, and has left the place. He is succeeded in the office by Mr. Hays. Mr H. has the funds in his hands for the payment of what is due for the last six months of 1843, but has no knowledge of the disposition made of the funds put into the hands of Mr Bronson. He is ready to pay over the $500 which he now holds as soon he shall get instructions from the Department to do so. We shall probably receive it before long.

I have today received $500 which is the allowance to us for

the first half of the present year. For this amount I signed a receipt as superintendant of the mission. Mr Hays thought the Department would require evidence that I was authorized by the Board to receive and receipt for this money for them, and paid it over to me on condition that I would write immediately, and have the Board forward to the Department at Washington, the evidence that I was their authorized agent; otherwise he might be censured for paying it to me. I wish therefore that you would certify the Department that I am authorized to draw this money. We shall probably receive nothing more till this is done. I would suggest whether it might not be well also to give some one here formal power as agent or superintendant of the Mission, to draw these funds as they become due.
We shall not probably be able to get the $500, which I suppose to be yet in the hands of Mr Bronson, without some delay and trouble. I shall immediately write him about it, and shall use every endeavour to recover it.

The $500 which I have received, I have paid to the Am. Fur Company, to cancel claims which they have against this station and that at Red Lake. Mr. Hill will therefore charge this amount to the account of the Ojibwa Mission.

Mr Wheeler will write you respecting our making a commencement at Bad River. I understand the Government farmer and blacksmith will be ordered to locate there, and that it is the policy of the Agents to settle the Indians there, as the land there is better for tillage than here. If a part of them should go there to settle, I think some of us from this station should settle there too. Should any of us locate there, some additional expenses must be incurred for buildings &c. I have some doubt whether many families will become permanently settled there for a year or two to come at least, and ~~am in~~ doubt whether it is expedient to incur much expense for buildings, till we can judge better of the prospects for accomplishing much good there, than we can at present. I think it will be best to erect some temporary buildings there at least, next spring or summer, and perhaps one of our families remain there as much of the time as there are any Indians there. I regard the effort to settle the Indians there rather as an experiment, and do not feel very sanguine as to the result of the effort.

We arrived here about three weeks ago after considerable delay at the Sault Ste Marie, and a long and tedious passage up this lake. We are happy to return again to the scene of our former labours, and to have the prospect of labouring here for the future. The mission appears prosperous, and so far as we can judge there was never more encouragement to labour for the conversion and improvement of this people. The influence exerted upon them through the Government and the different missions is powerful and salutary. Though there are many obstacles to be encountered, I trust a harvest will ultimately be gathered, if we faint not.

I shall close up our accounts before our next mail, and endeavour to render an account to Mr. Hill of the financial condition of the station. With my best regards to all your associates at the Missionary House, I am

Yours &c

S. Hall

P.S. Direct by the Falls of the St Croix till Spring.

Rev. Sherman Hall.

La Pointe, 2d Sept. 1844

Rec'd Sept. 21.

v 56 Ans'd Sepr. 26.
D.G.

Lapointe 7th Sept 1844

25 cts

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Jan. 29th, 1845.

Rev. David Greene,

Dear Sir,

Your letter of Sept. 26th 1844, authorizing me to receive and receipt for the school money, was duly received. I have shown it to the Indian Agent at this place, who says it is all he requires. Nothing has yet been demanded of us, but an annual report stating the number of scholars in the schools, the time the schools have been taught, &c. in order to our receiving this money. The Indian Agent is expected to exercise such a supervision over the schools, as to see that they are regularly taught, and that the money is properly expended. Two thousand dollars was stipulated to be annually paid for purposes of education under the treaty of 1842, one half of which has been allowed to the schools taught by the missionaries of the Am. Board; the remainder is given to the Methodists, and to the Roman Catholic Mission. By the treaty these funds can be applied only to the support of schools within the ceded territory. Of course it they cannot be applied to the support of a school at Red Lake.

I presume our missionaries would prefer to have the school money go into the treasury of the Board, and they draw from the treasury what is necessary for the support of the Mission as heretofore. One thousand dollars has already been paid over by the Government, $750. of which I have applied to cancel claims due from the Mission to the Am. Fur Company, and the remainder is in their hands and can be drawn at any time. Five hundred dollars is now due for the last six months of 1844, which will be paid as soon as the money is forwarded by the Government.

The Invoice of a box from Weathersfield Vt. to which was added some goods at Boston, and the receipt of the same by the Forwarders, has been received. The box I suppose to be at the Sault Ste Marie. We got no goods last season after the time of my arrival here.

Our expenses were unexpectedly increased considerably last fall, on account of the vessel which we relied on to bring our supplies up this lake, being driven ashore in a gale of wind. Nearly all our winter supplies of provisions were behind, when the disaster occurred, and no other vessel could be obtained to come here. It was the sixth of Oct. when we got the news of the vessel being ashore. The season was now too far advanced to go to the Sault Ste Marie for provisions in boats. None could be obtained here. We had not on hand a supply for more than two or three months, and none could be expected from below before next June. Under these circumstances, we decided that it was best to take a boat and go to Copper Harbour to obtain some if possible there. Accordingly I started with six men in a Mackinaw boat on the eighth of Oct. The distance between this place C. H. is about 175 miles. The trip was performed in 24 days, and was both expensive and dangerous. I obtained a small quantity of provisions at C. H. by paying about double the price there, which our provisions have usually cost here. We were obliged to purchase fishing aparatus and to take what fish we could during the fall. With all our efforts we obtained but a scanty supply for our necessities, until the time we hope to get supplies in the Spring. But by dividing our provisions, and limiting the expenditure for a given time, we hope to get through the winter comfortably. We were never quite so closely pressed before since our residence in the country. All the people here are as short as ourselves. The winter thus far has been uncommonly mild, which is a favourable circumstance to those who depend on fish and game for a living. The additional expenses incurred in consequence of our failing to get up our supplies from below, was over $300. The provisions which we had depended on, are now at the Sault Ste Marie, and will go toward our next year's supply.

Out of the $725 of school money which has been expended I have paid for Mr. Ayer $309.77. The remainder, ($415.33) is to be charged to this station

I forward herewith an order for goods &c. which I suppose will be required for the use of our families, and ~~to~~ pay the labour which it will be necessary to hire next season. The list, especially that part for Mr Wheeler, is made out with some reference to commencing some kind of an establishment at Bad River. If any thing is done there, our expenses will be necessarily increased to some extent. Our family expenses are also necessarily more than they were two years ago, when our families were not as large as now. In regard to this list I would say, that I suppose it is no larger than will be required to meet the wants of our families and pay the labour it will be necessary to hire during the year. For convenience the goods &c. for Mr Wheeler & Mr Sproat are made out in separate lists. Those for my family are included with those for general use. With regard to our expenditures for the year to come, I suppose it will not be necessary for this ~~Mission~~ Station to draw on the Treasury for a great amount above, the cost of these goods, and the provisions necessary for us, (for which I have sent to Mr. Coe) and the expenses of their transportation. I have ordered, I suppose, a full years supply of provisions, of the cost of which Mr. Coe will probably inform you early in the Spring. I think with this supply, we shall be able to do all that is necessary to be done here and at Bad River for a year to come; or at least we shall not need to call on the Board for a great amount over and above the cost of the goods and provisions ordered, and the expense of their transportation. It is better to pay our labourers and interpreter in goods, than to pay money.

There is no peculiar religious interest among us at the present time. There has been one addition to the church recently. Our meetings and Sabbath school are sustained with considerable interest. In a few weeks the Indians will retire to their sugar ~~making~~ bushes to which place some of our number will follow them. We find our Indian books of essential service to us.

I wish you would have bound and forward some 200 each of the Peep of Day and Hymn Book as early as you can. I should like to have one of the Hymn books bound with some 50 pages of Blank ruled paper at the end for jotting notes. I think our goods better be forwarded to the care of Mr Cyrus Mendenhall, Sault Ste Marie, Mich. I should like to have them sent as early in the Spring as convenient.

Please to forward by Mail one Copy of the Missionary Herald ~~for~~ commencing Jan. 1845, to C. W. Borup Esq, La Pointe Lake Superior. Also one copy to L. M. Warren Esq Dubuque, Iowa Ter. Charge these to our account, as they have paid me for them. With regard to Mosheim's History, Edwards' Works, and Dick's Theology, we should like them, but if you think you cannot afford them to us, you will not send them. With affectionate regards to all your associates at the Missionary House, I am yours &c.

S. Hall

Please to send a dozen of Dr Edwards' Tract On the Sabbath

Order

2 Pr La. Calf Bootees (high in the instep & wide on across the ball) length of foot 9½ in
1 " Boys Cowhide Boots length of foot 9⅝ in
3 " " " Bootees " " do.
4 " " Kip do. " " do.
1 " " Cowhide Boots " " 9⅛ in
2 " " " Bootees " " do.
2 " " Kip do. " " do.
2 " " Cowhide Boots " " 8⅞
4 " " " Bootees " " do.
4 " " Kip do " " do.
6 Pr Misses Shoes " " 7⅛ in

1 oz Orange Carrot
1 oz Early Dutch Cabbage
2 oz Summer Squash seed
3 " Early Cucumber
1 " Long do.
3 " Long Blood Beet
2 " Sugar do
1 " Scarcity do
3 Red Turnip do
2 Papers Tomato
4 oz Onion
2 " Mangel Wortzel
1 " Raddish

2. Volls. of Miss. Herald for 1844 (Bound)
1 Brown's Concordance
Barnes' Notes on Gospels, Romans & Hebrews
Memoirs of Dr Nettleton
2 Copies Village Hymns
Andrews' & Stoddard's Latin Grammar, Exercises,
" " " Reader and Lessons
1 Bolmar's French Grammar
1 " " Colloquial Phrases
1 Telemaque
The Pastor's Daughter
Steuart on the Apocalypse

1 French and English Dictionary
6 Copies Sacred Songs By Am. Tract Soc.
1 Porter's Lectures on Homil. & Preaching
Edwards' Works (Later Edition)
Murdock's Mosheim
Dicks Theology
100 Yellow Quills
1/2 Doz Ink Powder
2 " Lead Pencils 2 oz Red Wafers
1 Ream Ruled Letter Paper
1 " Letter Paper Ruled with and perpendicular
for folding ~~in form~~ into book shape. for sermons &c.

Rev. Messrs Hall & Wheeler
La Pointe, Jan. 29. 1845
Recd March 17.
Purchases)
Acknowledged April 2d '45

Lapointe 4th feb 9
50c
2 Sheets

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass

For the 50 penny nails, I want a slim cut nail or spike five inches or more in length. I saw some of the kind at Mr George Oakes' Store, (I think it is in North Market St, a little below the Market) when I was in Boston.
Mr Sproat wishes to have his clothes made by the same measure of mine.
Please send two or three quires of large paper like this sheet if you have it on hand.

57a List of Articles for Mr Wheeler.

50# Brown Sugar (in Bucket)
6 Galls Lamp Oil
10# Saleratus
2# Alum
2" Saltpetre
1" Ginger
2" Old Hyson Tea
2" Black do.
4" Coffee
¼" Blk Pepper (ground)
8" Chockolate
1 Large Sponge
8# Sago
1 Bottle Brandy
4 Cakes oxigenated Soap
1 oz Preston's extract of Lemon
2# Roll Brimstone
1" Gum Arabic
¼" Manna
1" Tartaric Acid
½ Doz Norfolk Latches (for inside)
2 " do (for out doors)
1 Large Wooden Bench Screw
4 Hoes
1 Iron Shovel
1 " Spade
200 Needles (assorted)
1 Gross Suspender Buttons
½ Pr Suspenders
3 Pr Coarse shoes No. 8
4 " Kip do " "
2 " do (Large Boys)
3 Shoemakers Awls & handles
1 Shoe Knife
1 Pce Striped Shirting
2 " Brown Shirting

12 Yds Crash (for towels)
12 " Russia Diaper
10 " Musketoe Bar Stuff
½ Quire Folio Post Letter Paper
1 Doz Lead Pencils.
1 Screw Auger 2 in. One, do 1½ in. One do 1¼ in
1 " do. 1 in
4 Framing Chisels ea 2 in, 1½ in, 1 in, ½ in
1 Double Ironed Jointer
1 " " Fore Plane
1 " " Smoothing Plane
1 Pr Matching Plains 1½ in
1 Triangular Cross Cut Saw file
½ doz Assorted Hand and wood Saw Files
1 Wood File
½ doz Pit Saw Files
½ " Sheets Sand Paper
2 Axes
4 Papers Cut Tacks ea. 10 oz. 8 oz, 6 oz and 4 oz
4 Galls Linseed Oil (Boiled)
2# Spanish Yellow
2" Spanish White
15 or 20# White Lead in oil
4 Door Locks 2 for outside, 2 for inside doors.
1# Chalk
2 Doz Door Butts ea. 2½ and 2 in
3 Gross Screws ea. 1½ in. 1 in and ¾ in
¼ " do. 2 in.
10 Yds Red Flannel
1 Doz Cotton Flag Hdkfs
½ " Gingham do.
1 Pce Stout Blk Satinette
12 Yds " dark Cassimere
1 Pc Blue Drill
1 " Factory Gingham
2 " Blue Calico
3 " Dark do. (assorted)
1 " Ligh Striped Calico

1 Bottle Spts Turpentine
1# White Cot. Thread
1" Colord " do.
1" Blk Linen do
1 oz Blk S. Silk
½ Doz Pocket Knives
½ Doz Cod Lines
2 " Boxes Matches
1 Bundle Sturgeon Twine
for Mission

For Shools

1 Doz Colburn's Intel. Arithmetic 1st Pt.
1 " Peirponts Young Reader
2½ " Gallaudett's Pic. & Defin. Book
1½ " Emerson's Arithmetic 1st Pt.
3 " Websters Spelling Book
10 Smiths Geography & Atlass
1 Doz. Ink Powders
1 " Peep of Day
1 Stick Sealing Wax
1 Fosters Penmanship
½ Drawing Pencils (Soft & hard)
½ Quire Drawing Paper
3 Water Paint Brushes (assorted sizes)
1 Hand Bell (4 in.)
600 Quills
8 Doz. Toy Books
½ " Parley's Geography
½ " Angell's Union Series, No 4.
1 " Slates
300 Slate Pencils
2 Doz Lead do.
1 Penknife
4 Sheets Red fancy Paper
Miss Edgeworth's Frank Book Nos. 1, 2, 3, 4, & 5 }

Medicines

1 Bot Sweet Oil
1 ℔ Sub. Carb. Soda
½" Tartaric Acid
3 Bottles Castor Oil
5 ℔ Epsom Salts
4 Doz. Assorted Vials
1 Bot Paragoric
½ ℔ Spts Hartshorn
3 Bottles Pulmonary Balsam.
1 " Alcohol
2 Doz Bottle Corks
4 Doz Phial Corks
1 ℔ Chamomile Flowers
½" Laudanum
1" Gum Arabic
2 " Castile Soap
2" Senna
4 Bottles Opodildoc
½ Doz Oxigenated Soap
2 Boxes Mustard
1 Bottle Spts Turpentine
1 Phial Morphine Drops
½ ℔ Cayenne Pepper
2 Bottles Brandy
2 " Port Wine
2 ℔ Alum
1 Bottle Antimonial Wine
½ ℔ Blue Vitriol
6 oz Mercurial Ointment
½ ℔ White Wax
1 ℔ Precipitated Carb. of Iron
½ " Bonesett
½ " Wormwood
2 oz Sulphate Quinine
1 " Oil Chenopodium

For Mr Sproat

3 Pr La Calf Shoes No 3.
6 " Childrens do " from 4 to 7
3 " Mens Calf Shoes " 8
½ doz Narrow Linen Tape
1 Roll Cotton Tape
1 Dress Pattern (Dark Calico)
9 Yds Blk Cambrick Lining
2 Pr small Side Combs
1 Ball Wilting Cord
5 Yds Dark Printed Flannel

6 Yds Cotton Flannel
1 Silver Thimble No 8.
1 Coarse Wire Sieve
3 Doz Clothes Pins
1/2 " Iron Tinned Table Spoons
1 " Cups & Saucers (Brown Printed ware)
3 Nappies (Yellow Iron Stone) ca. 8, 9, & 10 in
1/2 doz Edged Plates 10 in
2 Quart Bowls (Iron Stone)
1/2 lb Ginger
3 lb Souchong Tea
1 " Hyson do.
25 " Coffee
6 " Cocoa
1 " Starch
1/2 " Ground Cassia
1/2 " Ground Pimento
1/4 " Nutmegs
6 " Raisins
10 " Saleratus
1/4 " Ground Blk Pepper
1/2 Cwt. Brown Sugar
2 lb Chamomile Flowers
1 Bottle Brandy
1 " Port Wine
2 4in. Closet Locks
1 Axe
1 Wood Saw (34 in) (Stout)
1 Blk Cloth Coat } to be made by
1 Pr. " Pants } Mr Hall's Mearum
1 Nutra Cap
2 Pr Suspenders
1 Brittania Tea Pot (Large size)
1 lb Salt Petre
1 Doz White Spool Cotton
2 lb Ground Logwood

for the Mission
3 Pr Scisors
1 Gross Bone Suspender Buttons
1 " Horn Coat do.
1/2 " Pearl Shirt do.
1/2 Doz Sheets Sand Paper

1/2 lb Cochineal
3 Yds good Red Twilled Flannel

For the Mission
2 Bottles Alcohol
2 qts Wine for communion
1 Pint Spts Turpentine
1 lb Shaving Soap
1 " Alum
1 " Saltpetre
2 Good Cowbells
1/2 lb Small Iron Wire
6 " Putty or Whiting
1 " Resin
1 Ball Shoe Thread
1 lb Chalk
2 " Old Hyson Tea
3 " Souchong do
4 " Sago
4 " Tapioca
80 " Coffee
25 " Saleratus
18 " Fine Young Hyson Tea
1/2 " Ground Cinnamon
1/4 " Not Ground do.
1 Box Seidlitz Powders
1 lb Ground Red Wood
1/2 " " Camwood
10 " Spanish Brown 6 lb Yellow Ocre
6 " Sole Leather for half soleing shoes
4 Brittania Tumblers
1 " Lamp
20 ft 6 inch Stove pipe or Iron for it
100 Large Needles
400 Asst. do.
1 Bundle Pins 2 Chambers
1 Wooden Bowl containing 4 or 5 qts
1 Doz Brown Print Plates. (9 in
1 Looking Glass 5 by 6 or 7 in.
1 Yellow Iron Stone 2 qt Bowl
2 Setts Common Knives & forks
1 Doz Pocket Knives
3 Pruning do.
1 Hand Saw

2 lb Starch
1 " Beeswax
10 " Raisins
1/2 Ground Pepper
1/2 " Ginger
2 oz Nutmegs
5 lb Chockolate
2 Whiplashes
3 Doz Clothes Pins
2 PenKnives
1 Pr Snuffers
1/2 Doz Hoes
1 Iron Shovel
1 " Spade

1 Sett Iron Table Rollers
1/2 Doz Iron Table Spoons
1/2 " " Tea do.
1/2 " Plated " do.
1/2 " " Table do.
1/2 " Round Tin Plates
1/3 " Square " do.
2 Tin Washbasins
1 Large Tin Teapot
2 Tinpans (2 qt)
1 Tin Pail, (8 qts)
1 Sheet Iron Bake Pan 15 by 8 1/2 in
1 Baking Dish for Cook Stove }
containg 4 or 5 qts }
2 Axes (Light)
25# Cut Nails (12 penny)
5 " " " 6
100 " " " 50 See last page of this letter
2 Steel Backed Sythes (Stout & Short)
1 C.S. Wood Saw (34 in (Stiff)
1 Screw Auger (4 quarters)
1/2 doz Pit Saw Files
1/2 " Large Handsaw do.
2 Cast Steel Draw Shaves (10 in)
15 Wrought Nails (from 3 1/2 to 4 in long)
1 Doz 1 1/2 in Door Butts
1/2 " Wrought Table do.
1 Gross 3/4 in Screws
1 ~~M~~ 4 oz Cut Tacks
1 Gross Steel Pens
1 Doz Ivory Fine Combs
1/2 Gross Brass Vest Buttons
1 ~~Blue~~ Coat Stout } for every day wear
1 Pr Cloth Pants }
1 Bombarine Vest
2 Pr Stout Satinette Pants
2 " ~~L~~ " Cassimere do.
(These Cloths to be made by Mr Hall's Measure)
3 Pr La Kid Shoes No 6
4 " La. Calf " " 5
4 " " " Booties " 5
3 Pr Men's Slippers " 8
2 " " do " 9

1/2 Doz Cloth Caps for Lads
1/3 " Hair Seal do " "
1/2 " Mens Cloth Caps
1 Agent Nutra do
1 Boys Cap for Boy 3 years old
6 Gals Lamp Oil
1 Cask Rice (say 250 to 300#)
4 Dark Dress Patterns Asst
2 Yds Barred Muslin
1 Pr La Kid Gloves
1 Yd Blk Lustring Silk
1/2 doz Linen Tapes (asstd)
1 " Cotton do "
4 Yds Blue Blk Fringe (1 1/2 in wide)
2 " Velvet Ribbon 1 in wide
1/2 doz Sticks Twist
8 Yds Blk Marino
1/2 doz Brown Lin. Table Covers
2 Blk Silk Cravats
4 " " Hdkfs
4 Yds Blk Cot Velvet
8 " Dark Brown Marino
14 " " " Cambrick
12 Sheets Wadding
2 Ps. Blk Silk Braid
1 Doz Boxes Hooks & Eyes
1 " White Spool Thread
1 " Cold " do.
1 oz Coarse Blk Sew. Silk
10 Yds Cotton Buck Skin
1 Pc Blue Twilled Cotton
1 " one thread Blue and one White do.
1 Pc Stout Cassimere (Blk)
1 " " Satinette (Blk)
1/2 Cotton Shawls (asstd)
1 Doz Assted Palm Hats
3 Worsted Tipets
1 Pr Calf Boots No. 8
1 " Kip do " 8
1 " Cowhide do " 7
6 " Mens Calf Booties " 8
3 " " " do " 6
4 " " Kip do " 6
2 " " " do " 7
6 " " " do " 8

1 Pc Blue fine Blue Satinette
Worth from 80 to 90 cts
2 Pc Dark Satinette worth 60 cts
1 " do " 35 to 40
12 Yds White Flannel
12 " Red do
2 Pc Plaid Linsey
2 " Factory Gingham
2 " Light Cold Stript Calico
5 " Dark Asst do.
4 " Blue " do.
2 " Pink " do.
2 " Calico worth 15 to 18cts (Dark)
1# White Sew. Cotton
2 " Cold " do
3 " Blk Linen Thread
2 " Asst " do.
20 Yds Hard Times
10 " Kentucky Jean
1 Pc Apron Check
1 " Middlesex Fancy Cotton
20 Yds Red Twilled Flannel (good)
3 Pcs Brown Shirting
3 " " Sheeting
1/2 Doz Spun Silk Hdkfs
1 Pc Flag Silk do
1 Doz Plaid Cot. Cravats
1 Pc Cotton Flag Hdkfs
1/3 Doz Boys Braces
2/3 " Mens do.
2 Pcs Stout Stript Cot. Shirting
1 " Cotton Duck
4 Pcs. Lustring Ribbon (ast No 4)
1 " Overcoat Binding
15 Yds Good Pilot Cloth
4 " Blue Camblet
1 Pc Bed Ticking (Stout)
6 Pr Cowhide Booties No 8
6 " " do " 9
2 " Goat Skin do " 8
1/2 Doz Misses Shoes (Asstd)
1 " Boys do.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
April 11th 1845

Rev David Greene
Boston,

Dear Sir,

I forward herewith a watch which was purchased at Boston for Miss Spooner last summer. The watch ran about a month, when it stopped and has run none since. A short time since it was put into the hands of an individual who professes some skill in repairing timepieces, but the first time it was wound, the chain either broke or slipped off. According to the invoice the watch was warranted, and as it worth nothing as it is, I have concluded it is best to send it back and have it exchanged or repaired. If it reaches Boston before our supplies are forwarded, it can be put up with them. If not, Doctor Borup, who will be a short time at N. York will take it, if forwarded to Mr. Merwin without delay. I send it to N. York by him.

Doct Borup will pay to Mr. Merwin, in behalf of the Board, four hundred dollars of the School money which has recently been paid over to me by Mr. Hays, the Sub Indian Agent at this place. $500 more will be due on the first of July, but probably it will not be forwarded to the Agent before Aug. or Sept. You will please to inform Mr. Hill of this. I should like to be informed when the money is received. I shall probably receive drafts on the disbursing officer of the Government at Detroit for these funds generally. If so, shall I forward these drafts to Mr Hill, or will he direct me to send them to send them to some person in Detroit who will act as agent for the Board to draw the money, or get them exchanged for a draft on N. York, as I presume may generally be done?

I wrote you some time ago for supplies which letter you have probably received before this. I hope they will be forwarded early.

Our Indians are now absent from us engaged in making their sugar. I went to spend the Spring with them in woods, but was called home after spending a little more than two weeks there, on account of Mrs Hall's health. She has been quite ill, but is now convalescent. I expect to return in a few days, as soon as the travelling is safe. The mission family are enjoying their usual health generally.

Yours in haste

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall

La Pointe, 15th April, 1845

Rec'd May 24

Ans'd May 31. H. Hill.
June 4. D. G.

Rev. David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston

La Pointe Lake Superior,
Aug 29th 1845

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

I signed a draft yesterday on Mr Hill for $330. in favour of the Am. Fur Company, which will be presented through their agent at N. York. 236 $\frac{91}{100}$ dollars of this draft is to be charged to Mr. Wheeler to meet the expenses of his operations at Bad River. The remainder, $93.09 is to be charged to Mr. Ayer for the expenses of the Station at Red Lake.

We find that the old edition of the Ojibwa Spelling book is exhausted, and that it is necessary to have a new one printed. It is the opinion of the missionaries here, that a new book arranged differently from the old one, and not so large, would be preferable to a reprint of that. Some progress has been made already in the preparation of such a book, and will be completed without very long delay." We propose to forward the manuscript to Boston to be printed, and let the proof sheets ~~to~~ be forwarded to us for one reading, which we think will make the book tolerable correct. We think ~~th~~ it will cost less to send the proofs by mail, than for any one of us go to Detroit or any other place to get the printing done. I suppose you have types enough to set up two, perhaps three forms at a time. Probably the book will not exceed 96 pages 12 mo. or the same space in a smaller form. If the work is com-menced early, we hope it may be ~~[illegible]~~ completed in season to get the books here early next summer. Please to write immediately and let us know your opinion on this subject.

The goods &c which have been forwarded to us from Boston this season have reached us in good order. I had intended to have given you some more particular statements respecting our schools and the state of the church here before the meeting of the Board, but our mails have delayed so long that I suppose it is now too late for you to make any use of them in your report. I will only say therefore that there is nothing in our prospects more discouraging than there has been heretofore, And that we are quiettly prosecuting our labours here.

We have received no more funds from the Government since I remitted the money to N. York, which you acknowledged in your letter to me. When we shall get any thing more is uncertain.

Yours in haste

J. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe, 29 Aug. 1845
Recd Sept 23.

Spellingbook
ackd Sept. 27. D.G.

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

La Pointe Lake Superior,

Jan 26th 1846

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

For a considerable time past, I have not written you with as much particularity, respecting the present condition of this station, and our prospects for the future, as perhaps you may have expected. I will therefore write more fully at the present time.

During the past year we have been permitted, in the providence of God, to go forward with our labours in this field, without much interruption from sickness or other causes. God has furnished us with work, and given us strength to do it. It is a matter of devout thankfulness, that of all the missionaries which have been sent into this field during the fourteen years since the mission was established, no one has yet fallen at his post. And though we have not seen accomplished all we wished and hoped to have done, we are permitted to see something effected by our labours, and are encouraged still to persevere. At no former period of our labours here, has the station appeared to enjoy more outward prosperity, than at the present time. The Indians and others are friendly and respectful towards us. When we compare the condition of the people now, with what it was ten years ago, we can see that a considerable change has taken place, and in many respects for the better. Many are very materially improved. Many are much more inclined to industry, especially among the younger members of the community. I think there is now a greater tendency towards civilization, than I have ever before seen. Many are beginning to learn that a house, though made of rough logs, is a more comfortable habitation, than an Indian wigwam.

We wish we could see them as much inclined to become true disciples of Christ. Though some few appear desirous to know the will of God, and their duty, the great majority still remain pagans or Roman Catholics.

What influences may hereafter operate here for good or evil, it is impoſsible to foresee. The mining interest is attracting many to the shores of Lake Superior. How valuable the mines may eventually prove, is yet to be tested. Should they prove rich and extensive, there will doubtleſs be a large population on this lake soon. Other inducements may bring more or leſs here. If the flood gates of intemperance are set open, it is to be feared our prospects may very much change. The laws of the U. States respecting the introduction of ardent spirits into territories owned by Indians, have hitherto been enforced here, which has prevented the sale of much of the poison in this region.

The church at this station now numbers twenty five members including the missionaries. Forty four different individuals have been connected with it, since its first organization. Fifteen have been received on profession of their faith in Christ, and the remainder by letter. Of the present members, thirteen are full Indian or mixed blood. Such is the mixed character of our people with respect to the languages they speak and understand, that we are required to hold our religious services in both English and Ojibwa. For several months past, we have held four public religious services on each Sabbath, besides the exercises of the Sabbath School. The preaching at two of these services is in English, and at the other two, in Ojibwa. Our congregations, though small are usually serious and attentive. Some tenderness of mind on the subject of religion, has been manifested by a few within a few weeks past.

The schools have been as prosperous and well attended during the past year as heretofore, and the pupils appear to be making improvement. From 80 to 90 different individuals have been connected with the two schools during the past year. The difference between those individuals who have enjoyed the benefit of our schools, and others whose circumstances and condition were similar, when the former came under our influence, is so marked as to be noticed by strangers in almost every instance. It is gratifying to reflect that the change has been effected mainly through the influence of the mission. The changes which have taken place among the people are most visible ~~among~~ in the younger members of the community. They seem more inclined to change their former mode of life, than their fathers. This encourages us to hope, that, if we persevere, and nothing occurs to interrupt the current of influences now operating, the time may come, when a great revolution will be effected here, and through the country.

I forward herewith a list of supplies which we wish furnished for the use of this station for the year to come. Mr. Wheeler, though he yet resides here with his family, is considered as belonging to the station at Bad River, and his expenses have been kept separate from our other expenses during the past year. He will hereafter make his own estimates, and manage that station separately from this. I suppose I have made an order large enough to meet the wants of the mission families, and supply what labour will be needed for the year to come, so that it will not be necessary to draw for much more, except to pay for the transportation of our goods from Boston and our provisions from Ohio. If this order is filled therefore, it will constitute the appropriation for our station for the year to come, except our provisions, for which I have written to Mr Coe. I have ordered a supply of provisions for both stations, which we thought better be done, than to send two separate orders. I cannot correctly estimate the cost of the provisions we shall need, but Mr Coe will forward the bills to Boston I presume, as soon as the purchases are made. The two stations will require a larger amount of provisions than we procured last year. Though our orders may look large to you, we have asked for as little as we think we can do with, and carry forward our operations without embarrassment. There must necessarily be much labour and expense incurred, to accomplish what seems but little, in a country like this.

I should be glad to have these goods forwarded as early in the spring as navigation will allow, if they can be. Please to direct as last year to the care of Mr. Cyrus Mendenhall, Sault Ste. Marie, Mich.

I have not received any thing more from the school fund since I last reported; but Mr. Hays, Ind. Agt. has informed me, that the Department have directed him to pay to the Board $500 which became due before he came into office, which he will do as soon as funds are forwarded. He says there is no doubt that the Board will receive $1000 for the year ending Dec 31st 1845, and a thousand dollars for the present year; but when it will be paid I do not Know. 60a

A Sabbath School library was received last summer through the Mass. Sabbath S. Soc. as a donation from the S.S. in the Cong. Soc. in Temple N.H. valued $15.53. Mr Dean, in a note, requested ~~that~~ it should be acknowledged through their Society. If it has not been acknowledged, it should be. Our S.School are very grateful for it, and I trust will be much benefitted by it.

Will you please to request Mr. Hoyt to stop Mr Warren's Herald. When he requested me to send for it, he directed to be sent to Dubuque, Iowa. He has suffered from delirium during the past year at times. He has now no steady place of residence. I presume he does not get the Herald, and will not pay for it for the present year.

I wish you would obtain for me the Ten Dollar Library for S.Schools published by the Am. S.S. Union. I will pay for them out of my private funds. I expect the money will be forwarded by my brother, Mr. A. Hall of Claremont, N.H. I want the books for my own family.

Your have probably expected the manuscript of our Ojibwa Spelling book before this time. I suppose it would have been ready some time ago, when I wrote you respecting last summer. Mr Ely is now here at work on it. It is nearly completed except the copying, and we hope to send a part of it by ~~the~~ next mail, which will be in three or four weeks. It is an entirely new work and on a different plan from the old one. Mr E. has done most of the labour of preparing it.

I suppose Mr Boutwell has informed you of the state of affairs at Pokeguma. I think the ~~mission~~ station there, is not exerting a very great influence on the Indians at this time. The present condition of the Indians, through that section of country, is deplorable. The country is flooded with whiskey. Whether any changes can be made in the management of the station, to give it more efficiency, I do not know. Mr. Boutwell appears much discouraged.

Please to inform me early of the receipt of this. We have heard nothing very recently from Red Lake. When we last heard they were well and prospering.

Please to tell Governor Armstorong that I am very much obliged to him for the leaf from Eliot's Bible. I have not yet been able to discover any resemblance between the language in which that is written, and that of the Ojibwas.

With Christian love to your associates at the Missionary House,

I remain Yours &c

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe, 26 Jan. 1846
Rec'd Mar. 4.
Ans'd Mar. 17.
D.G.

606

Order

Medicines

·1 Bottle Tincture Rhubarb.
·1 " " Muriate of Iron
·1 " " Sweet Oil
·1 ℔ Sup. Carb. Soda
·½ " Tartaric Acid
·2 Bottles Castor oil
·8 ℔ Epsom Salts
·1 Bottle Paragoric
·½ ℔ Aqua Amonia
·2 Bottles Pulmonary Balsam
·2 " Alcohol
·4 Doz. Phial Corks
·1 ℔ Chamomile Flowers
·1 " Castile Soap
·2 " Senna
·4 Bottles Liquid Opodildoc
·1 " Spts Turpentine
·4 oz Solution Sulphate Morphia
·2 Bottles Brandy
·2 " Port wine
·2 " Hive Syrup
·1 " Antimonial Wine
·¼ ℔ Manna
·1 " Gum Arabic
·1 " Bone Set
·½ " Woormwood
·2 oz Oil Chenopadium
·4 Doz Assorted Phials
·½ ℔ Sage
·1 Bottle Peppermint

·1 ℔ Alum
·½ " Licorice Ball
·1 Roll Blister Plaster
·¼ ℔ Blue Vitriol
·6 oz Spts Nitre
·½ ℔ Cream Tartar
·¼ " Sugar of Lead
·1 2 oz Glaſs Measure Apothecaries
·1 Iron Pestle and Mortar
·2 Pr Tooth Forceps one for each jaw
·1 Thumb Lancet
·1 Medicine Hand Box
·1 Sheet Sticking Plaster
·½ ℔ Ground Flax Seed
·3 oz Muriate of Tin
·3 " Acetate " do.

·10 ℔ ~~Spanish~~ Whiting
·12 " Spanish Brown
·1 " White chalk
·1 Keg (say 20 ℔) ~~grou~~ White Lead in oil
·½ Doz Papers Lamp Black
·10 ℔ French Yellow
·4 Galls. Lamp Oil
·1 Gall. Port (Wine for Henry
·Blackford for medicine)

Direct to the care of
Cyrus Mendenhall
Sault. Ste Mie
Mich.

For the Schools
1/2 Doz Young Reader
5 " Websters Spell. Book
1/2 " Peep of Day
1 1/2 Doz Testaments (A.B.Soc. 12mo Edition)
2/3 Doz Greenleaf's Intro. to Nation. Arithmetic
1/4 " Smith's Grammar
1/2 " Emerson's Arith. First Part
1 " Bentley's Pictorial Primer.
1 1/4 " Peter Parley's Geog. for Beginners
1/3 " Smith's Geography & Atlas
10 " Toy Books for Rewards of merit
1 1/4 " Slates
300 Slate Pencils
1 Doz Lead do.
300 Quills
2 Gross Metalic Pens
2 Doz Penholders
1/2 " Bowen's U. States Draw. Book
2 Copies each Foster's Element. Copy Book
1 Cake India Ink.
1 Water Dipper
1/2 Iron or Tin Candlesticks
1 Pr Candle Snuffers
1 Doz Dressing Combs
100 Needles (No. 6. Sharps)
1# Cotton Thread Asstd
20 Yds Remnants of Calico
2 Doz Thimbles for Children
3 Pr Scisors

For Mr Sproat
10# Salaeratus
6 " Cracked Cocoa
12 " Coffee
1/2 " Ground Ginger
4 " Souchong Tea
1 " Hyson do.
1/4 " Nutmegs
1/2 " Blk Pepper (ground)
1/2 " Cinnamon do.
8 Pr Children Shoes No 5 to 8
3 " Men's Calf Shoes " 8
1 " Slippers 8
2 " La. Calf Shoes 3
1 " " Kid do. 3
1 Bottle Brandy
1 " Port Wine
2# Ground Logwood
1 " Nicaragua Wood (ground)
8 Yds Red Twilled Flannel
3 Papers Pins 2 large, one small size
1/2# Starch
1/4# Unbleached Sewing Cotton
2 Pces Black Silk Braid
4 " " Cotton do.
2 Rolls Cotn Tape
1 Flesh Brush
1 Silk Pocket Handkerchief
1 Blk Dress Vest
1 Common Summer Vest
1 Pr Satinette Pantaloons
1 " Blk Cloth do.
6 Yds Dark Calico

1 Dress Pattern Dark Calico
1 Tin Wash Bason (Copper Bottom)
1 Paper cut Tacks (6 oz)
1/4 Gross Matches
3 Yds Fine Bleach'd Shirting
3 " Cross barred Muslin
1 Patent Balance (weighing 24 #)
1 Tin qt Measure
1 Pr Scissors
1 Butcher Knife
1 Pr Snuffers
1 Loaf Sugar
1 Blk Silk Neck Hdkfs
1 Hair Brush
1/2 # Shaving Soap
2 Long Clearing Combs
3 Papers Needles no. 5, 6, 7.
8 Sheets Eclipse Wadding
1 Roll Cotton Batting
6 Yds Brown Cam. Lining
7 " Black Circassian

Miss Spooner requests the following articles. viz.
2 Silk Pocket Hdkfs
4 Linen or Cotton do.
6 Balls Cotton Tape narrow & wide
6 Bundles Blk Silk Braid
20 Yds " Cotton do.
6 " Narrow Blk Ribbon
1 Doz Spools white Cotton Thread (asst)
9 Yds Cotton Sheeting

60c
10 Yds Yellow Flannel
10 " Cotton do.
10 " Small Blk Silk Cord for watch
1 Hair Brush
1 Pr Snuffers
3 Dressing Combs
3 Pr Side Hair Combs
2 Papers Asst Needles (Sharps)
3 " Pins

For Mr. Hall
2 # Hyson Tea
3 " Souchong do.
1/2 " Ground Ginger.
1/4 " Black Pepper.
2 Bottles Brandy
2 # Chammomile Flowers
2 " Sugar of Lead
1 oz Columbian Root
2 Brass or tin Candlesticks
2 Rolls Wetting Cord
1 Doz Boxes Hooks & Eyes
2 Linen Pocket Hdkfs
1 Yd Dark cold Small Plaid Silk
3 " Blk Lustring do.
6 " Dark Mous. de Laine
6 " Pink Cambrick Lining
5 " Barred Muslin
3 Cambrick Cravats
5 Sheets Wadding
1 Pr Snuffers

Ten dollar Sab sch. Library pub by Am. S. S. Union

1 Stick Green Silk Braid
1 Cloth Dreſs Coat
1 Cloth Vest
1 Blk Bombazine vest
2 Pr Blk Satinette Pants. (Stout)
2 " Dark Caſsimere do. "
2 Milk Skimmers
1 Large Tin do.
1/4# Cream Tartar

For the Miſsion.

80# Coffe
18 " Young Hyson Tea
25# Salaratus
3 " Chockolate
6 " Raisins
1 Bl. Rice
1 Bottle Alcohol
1 " Spts Turpentine
3 " Communion Wine
2 Whip Lashes
3 Groſs Suspender Buttons
1 " Small size White Bone do.
1/2 " Pearl Shirt do.
1 " Large Horn Coat do.
4 Codlines large size
1/2 doz Iron Tined Table Spoons
1 Small hand Bell
1 Bundle Pins
200 Ast Needles
1 1/2 Doz Pocket Knives
1/4 " Pen Knives
1/3 " Hoes

2 Steel Shovels
2 " Spades
1 St Carpenters Square
2 Sets Knives and Forks with Bone or Buckhorn handles
4 Stout Wood Saw Plates (34 in)
1 Pr Shears
2 " Scisors
15 Pieces Sheet Iron prepared for 6 inch Funnel.
2 Elbows for the same
3/4 Doz Pit Saw Files 6 inch
3/4 " 3 square do.
1 Flat File 9 in.
1/2 Sheets Tin Plate
2 Closet Locks 4 in
3 Papers Cut Tacks, 4, 6, 10 oz.
2 Doz Braſs Knobs
1 Britannia Lamp
1 Small ear Syringe
1/2 doz Silver Plated Table Spoons
3 Washed Thimbles no. 7
2 Bed Cords
3 Doz Clothes Pins
1 Large Tin Bread Pan
1 8 qt " do.
1 1/3 Doz 6 qt do
1/2 " 4 " do.
1/3 " 2 " do.
1 Waiter or Server for tea-furniture, 24 by 18 inches
3 Small Hair Combs
1 Doz Ivory fine Combs 3 in.
1 " Dreſsing Horn do.

1 Bunde Sturgeon Twine
2# Candle Wicking
4 Boy's Hair Seal Caps
4 Men's Cloth do
6 Boy's " do
1 Doz Palm Hats
1 2 qt Tin Dipper

8 Yds Blk Marino
1 Pce Brown Cambrick
4 " Brown Sheeting
2 " " Shirting
2 " Striped do.
1 " Checked do.
20 " Red Twilled Flannel
3 " Green " do.
15 " White do.
2 Doz Cotton Flag Hdkfs
1/2 Cotton Plaid do.
1/2 Pce Flag Silk do.
1# White Sewing Cotton
4 " Aſsorted " do
4 " Blk Linen Thread
1 " Aſstd " do.
2 Pces Blk Ribbon No. 4.
2 " Pink " " do
1 " Light Blue " " "
1 " Greene " " "
2 Doz Aſstd Cotton Tape
1 Pce Cotton Duck
1 " Coat Binding
1 Doz Small Cotton Shawls

8 Yds Blk Cotton velvet
12 " Blue Caſsimere (fine)
12 " " Satinette "
2 Pces Steel Mixed Satinette worth from 40 to 50 cts
1 " Stout Blk Satinette (worth about 75 cts)
1 5 Yds Heavy Caſsimere (worth about 75 cts)
1 Pce Plaid Linsey
2 " Heavy Twilled Summer Stuffs
1 " A. Ticking
1 " Blue Drill
10 " Aſstd Prints
6 " Merimac Blue Prints
1 " 4/4 Apron Check
6 yds Caſsinette
1 Nutra Cap
12 Yds Stout Sheep's Gray

1/2 Doz P. Parley's Geography for beginners by Huntington & Savage N.Y.
1 Park Street Lectures
2 Barns' Notes on Eph, Phil, & Coll
1 4th Vol. D'Aubigne's History of the Reformation, if Published.
Memoirs of the late J. Evarts Esq.
1 Payson's Sermons, (the first volum that was published.)
1 "Attractions of the Croſs," by Dr. Spring published by Dodd N.Y.
1/2 Ream Letter Paper well Ruled

1 Gross Metalic Pens
1/2 doz Penholders
100 Yellow quills
1 The Good House Keeper by Mrs Hale

1 Doz 6¼ in Brown Plates
½ " 4¾ in Sauce Plates
1 " 8½ in Brown do.
4 Iron Stone Nappies 10½ in
2 Doz each Cups & Saucers
1¼ " 1 qt Bowls
½ " Pint do.
1/3 " 2 qt do.
1/3 " half Pint mugs.

3 Pr Mens Slippers no 7
2 Pr La. Calf Bootees " 7
3 " " " Shoes 5
6 " " " do 6
2 " " Kid do. 6
15 " Mens Thick Brogans
1 Pr Goat pegged " no. 9
1 " La India Rubber no 7
6 " Misses High Shoes " 11.
1 oz Orange Carrot Seed
1 " Low Duch Cabbage seed
2 " Early Cucumber do
2 " Long do
2 " Summer squash do
2 " Long Blood Beet seed
1 " Sugar Beet
1 " Scarcity do.
1 " Mangel Wurtzel
1 oz Raddish seed
2 Papers Tomato
4 oz Onion
2 " English Turnip Red
1 " " White
1 " Sugar Beet.

12 Pr Boys Peg Thick Bootees Nos 3 to 6.
12 " " " Kip " " "
1 " " " Thick Boots no. 6.
2 " " " " do " 4.
1 " " " " do " 3
4 " Mens thick Boots 8 and 9
1 " " " " 7
2 " " Kip " 8
2 " " Calf Boots one 8, one 9.
2 Doz Pr Children's Asst Shoes
6 Pr Mens Calf Shoes no 7
4 " " " no 6
4 " " " 9
15 Pr " Kip " 6, 8, 9.
3 Pr Misses Kid Slips
6 " Mens Slippers no 9

Rev. Sherman Hall
Lapointe Agency
Recd March 4th 1856

Please to send one Ream of letter Paper of the quality of the wrapper of this letter and ruled like it for Indian manuscripts.

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Feb 17th 1846

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

I forward by this opportunity a part of the manuscript of our new Spelling book, the remainder not being yet copied. I presume here is as much as you will have type to set up at once, and the remainder will be ready before it will be wanted. The work has been prepared principally by Mr Ely, except the copying, which we have done here. You will see that the plan of this book is entirely different from that of our old Spelling book. It is on the progressive plan. We have added an English translation to the lessons, because we find in all our schools a desire on the part of the scholars and parents, that we should teach the English in connexion with the Ojibwa language. I send at this time about half the amount of matter prepared, but if the book is likely to become too large, we will abridge some of the lessons in the latter part.

As to the form of the book, you can judge better than we. 16mo. would be a very convenient form, if it would be as economical to put in that form. There would be no objection to 12mo.

There has been considerable pains taken to make the manuscript plain and legible, and we hope you will find but little trouble with it.

It will add interest and attractiveness to book perhaps, if you can introduce some cuts. You can judge from the subjects, whether you have any, or can obtain any suitable ones without much trouble and expense.

I would suggest that a first proof be read by the printer or compositor, and corrected, and then a second ~~that~~ take on and sent to us to be read and returned. It will ~~make~~ Cause some delay to forward the proofs here by mail, but I see no other way of getting the book tolerably correct.

It is the opinion of the mission, ~~that~~ we better have a considerable number of copies more of the first part of the book printed, than of the last part. If the whole book is at once put into the hands of new beginners, they will not advance half way through it, before it will be entirely worn out. And if they have a part, (say three forms,) bound by itself, it will do them just as much good. I do not know how many copies you will think it best to print. The schools will use double, perhaps three times, as many of this, as of any book we have had printed. The Methodists and other missionaries will, I have no doubt, use it. ~~for~~ in their schools.

Some of our teachers think it will add to the value of the book to have it in larger type, than the old one. Of the expediency of putting it in larger type, we leave for you to judge. You will notice ~~that~~ we have used a mark to denote the short sound of i in the lessons. This seemed desirable with regard to this letter; but we did not deem it necessary to use a mark to distinguish the second sound of a, when it occurs in any of these lessons. These are the only vowels which have more than one sound in any tense.

I wrote you by our last mail, about three weeks ago, and forwarded a list of articles which I requested to have forwarded in the Spring. I presume my letters will reach Boston in safety, and that it will be unnecessary to forward duplicates. I wish you would add to the list which I forwarded 1 Calf Skin and 1 Bottle of Copal Varnish.

Mr. Sproat wished to have the following added to his list, viz.— 1 Viol Vermifuge, with directions, 1 Viol Essence Aniseseed, 2 pr Children's India Rubber Shoes for Children of 4 and 6 years of age. 1/2 Doz large Iron Spoons, 1/2 doz. Small do.

Very truly Yours

S. Hall

Feb. 18th — I have opened this letter to request you to add to the above list of articles 2 Brass Kettles, one weighing 13 or 14 lbs, and the other, one size less, bailed. Also a good wooden joiner's Bench Screw. We were visited last night with a fire in one of our buildings which was consumed with all its contents. It was a building which was occupied as a shop, store house, and wash room. The fire was not discovered till the whole interior of the building was in a blaze and the flames bursting through the windows and every part of the roof. It stood within three feet of another building, but by the exertions of our neighbors, who promptly came to our aid, this latter building was but little injured. Had this building burnt, it would have endangered our house. Providentially there was but little wind. Had the wind have blown strong, it would probably have swept all our buildings and turned us all out houseless in the dead of winter. The building was of no great value. The property consumed in it was worth perhaps 80 or 100 dollars. Among other things we lost our Kettles, some tools &c, which will put us to some inconvenience till we can replace them.

Lapointe Feby 19th 1846 -

10

Rev. David Greene
Miſsionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Maſs.

Rev. Sherman Hall
LaPointe 17th Feb. 1846
Recd 3d April
Ansd Apr 15.
v Purchases. — DG

La Pointe Lake Superior
March 18th 1846

Rev D. Greene,

Dear Sir,

I herewith forward you the remainder of the manuscript for the Spelling book. We may possibly think it best to add a few pages more, if the book is not likely to become too large.

Messrs Boutwell ~~an~~ Ely have just sent your late letters to them, to us for our perusal, with a request that some of us should go to Pokegama and consult with them, as to what shall be done with the station, and ~~[illegible]~~ in case it is given up, what disposition it is best to ~~[illegible]~~ make of the property. It is very inconvenient for any of us to go there at present. Mr Wheeler is now absent at Bad River. When he returns, if it is judged best by the members of the mission family to send one of our number, some one will probably go

I do not see much to be gained by going. Mr. Boutwell has decided to leave P. early in the Spring. I do not see any other possible course but to abandon the station, unless the Committee can send a man there soon. Mr. B. thinks there is so little prospect of doing good there, that it is not his duty to stay. I am not prepared to say that he is not right in this opinion. The prospect looks dark and discouraging there in the extreme. Mr Ely will not stay there alone, and it is not best he should. He could accomplish but little at best. He is, I suppose, forming plans, or at least, is looking for some opening for business by which he may support his family, expecting the station will be abandoned. It is the wish of the missionaries here, that there may be some other place found for him in this field, if he leaves P. We do not wish him to leave the service of the Board, or rather to lose his influence in the country. But where there will be an opening or what ought to be done, I do not feel at present decided. I suppose they will keep you apprised of their plans and that I have said all that is necessary.

We are at present all well. Most of the people are now absent from the island, at their sugar making. Enough remain however to keep up our meetings on the Sabbath. I employ a part of my time at present in translating.

Truly yours

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe, 18th Mar. 1846
Recd May 1.

Rev D. Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (63-69)

Hall, Sherman
- 63. 2 May 1846
- 64. 15 May 1846
- 65. 10 June 1846
- 66. 10 February 1847
- 67. 15 February 1847
- 68. 1 April 1847
- 69. 9 February 1848

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Pokeguma, May 2d 1846

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

I am now at this place, having come here at the earnest request of Mr Boutwell to consult with him in relation to the affairs of this station. I need say no more with regard to the general state of things here, than we have said in our joint communication. I do not find any one who entertains the opinion that any missionary could exert much influence on the Indians generally here in their present state. But I am happy to find but one sentiment with regard to Mr Boutwell, and that is a sentiment of respect, and so far as personally known, of love. I have heard it said more than once, that no one who knows him, speaks ill of him. But the trials and discouragements and labours which he has had to encounter here have sensibly affected his spirits, and he feels that it is not his duty to sustain them longer.

It is his design on leaving the station to remove to the lower part of the St. Croix, where there settlements at various points, rapidly increasing. He has been invited to settle at several different places, but has not yet decided which to choose. At present the people at any place in that region, will not be able to give him much support. His situation there in those new settlements, will require nearly the same amount of self denial and hardship he has experienced here. He will have to estalish himself, and labour among a people deeply imbued with a spirit of the world, many of whom it is supposed are rank infidels. They are anxious for his settlement among them, not out of love for the gospel, but because they are convinced they must have some moral influences at work among them to secure prosperity to their settlements.

I have no doubt that Mr Boutwell will be useful among them, and will exert a salutary influence on a region, where now there is very little moral influence felt. He will request the Board to allow him to take some articles of property from the station to aid him in a beginning, which I do not doubt the Committee will grant him. Mr. B. has ever been an industrious and hard working missionary. My visit here has resulted in increased confidence in his missionary and ministerial character, and qualifications for usefulness as a minister of the Gospel.

Since I last wrote you, some things of a trying nature have come to my knowledge at La Pointe, the details of which I shall give you the first opportunity after I return. Suffice it to say, that, in the estimation of his associates, it is expedient for Mr Sproat to leave. He has resolved himself so to do. If his place is vacated, it will open for Mr. Ely, and we shall be glad to have him there as soon as convenient.

Yours in the bonds of the Gospel.

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Pokegunna May 2, 1846
Rec^d Jun 2.
Ack^d July 3^d D.G.

Rev David Greene

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
May 15th 1846

Rev David Greene,
Dear Sir,

Your favors of March 17 and April 15th 1846 have been received. Relative to the subject of discontinuing the station at Pokeguma, I have only time to say, that I have just returned from there, having been there to examine the ground, and consult with those there as to what we should recommend to the Committee to do with it. Mr. Ely was absent. Mr Boutwell and myself have expressed our views in a joint letter to yourself, which you will probably receive before this.

In a letter I wrote you from Pokeguma, I stated that Mr Sproat had resolved to leave the mission, and that there were imperious reasons in the view of his associates why he should do so, and promised to write you more in detail on my return home. I regret that I am obliged to write in much haste at the present time. I must however state some things now, and leave to another opportunity a more full disclosure of the facts in the case.

Mr Sproat in his early connexion with the mission, was regarded by all who knew him, as an uncommonly active and devoted Christian. Till within the last two years his moral and Christian character, I may say, stood above suspicion. It was not till about two months ago, that I knew any thing in his conduct which impaired my confidence in him as a Christian and Missionary, though I had sometimes been tried with his want of energy and efficiency in the departments of labour devolving on him in the mission. At that time I learnt that there were reports in circulation seriously affecting his character as a Christian and a missionary. They originated from such a source as to entitle them to credit. We felt bound therefore to investigate them carefully and thoroughly. The result is that we are satisfied that he has been guilty of practices which are condemned both by the Bible and nature. To call it licentiousness might not convey an exact idea of the thing. Paul describes such practices, or something much like it, in the following language; "And likewise also the men leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lusts one toward another; men with men, working that which is unseemly." In order to understand exactly the practices he has been addicted to, you must have a particular detail of facts, which it is out of my power to give you at this time, for want of time to write. It appears that he has indulged in those practices for the last two years, to such an extent as to expose himself to the disgust and contempt of a considerable portion of our community. His character is utterly ruined here, and the mission and community here feel that he ought not to remain ~~here~~ in connexion with the mission another day. For these reasons we do not doubt the Committee will justify us in hurrying him away as soon as possible, and in furnishing him with means to return to his friends in Massachusetts, as he has none of his own. We all feel a deep sympathy for his family. His wife will leave us with unimpaired confidence. I wish this subject might be kept as much within yourself as possible, at least till you can hear from me again. He makes some defence, and I do not wish to do him an injustice. He has however confessed enough to justify us, in our judgment, in pursuing the course we have. And here I must leave this subject for the present.

Mr Sproat's place now being vacated, we need another teacher immediately. As there is no doubt the Committee will discontinue the station at Pokeguma, there is employment here for Mr Ely. We hope therefore to see him here as early as he can return to the mission. Should Mr E. be at Boston, please to tell him that if he comes here, he had better provide himself with some crockery. Most other articles which he will need for the convenience of his family will be found here.

Please inform Mr Hill, that I have received two drafts from Mr Hays for the portion of the School fund allowed the Board under the treaty of 1842, one of five hundred and the other of one thousand dollars. The larger one I enclose in this letter, the other I have retained to meet our expenses here. You will see that the draft is payable at Detroit; but as I am not acquainted with any person there, I think Mr Hill had better authorise some person to present it for payment.

I also forward the vouchers for the last quarter of the schools.

Please to say to Mr Hoit that Dr Borup has not received the Missionary Herald for the present year. He supposes his name was struck off the subscription list at the close of the last year. If so please insert among your subscribers and forward the numbers from the beginning of 1846, and charge it our mission as he pays us here.

Yours in much haste

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe 15 May. 1846
Rec'd June 4.

Mr. Sproat.
P.C.

Ans'd July 2. D.G.

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass

Lapointe May 16th 1846–

10

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
June 10th 1846.

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir,

In my letter to you a few weeks ago, in relation to the case of Mr Sproat, I had time only to make some general statements. It is painful to my feelings to refer to the subject again; but I suppose you ought to be put in possession of the facts which have come to light. It is possible enquiries may be made why he left the Mission, by his friends, and blame may be cast upon us for the manner he has been treated by us in relation to this affair. I have no disposition to injure Mr. Sproat, or unnecessarily wound his feelings by making public the disgusting practices of which he has been guilty. But I suppose you ought to know them, at least enough to understand what it is of which he has been accused. But I hope it will not be necessary for you to make them known even to those associated with you at the Missionary House, nor to the Committee. I sincerely hope the case may be disposed of without in any manner making it public. I wish this might be, for the sake of sparing the feelings of his family, if for no other reason.

The first accusation which was brought against Mr S. was made by a person who thought him guilty of improprieties while they lodged together. Nothing occurred however which gave ground for a positive charge of licentiousness. The person however felt sure there was something wrong. This occurred two years ago.

Another individual states ~~that~~ while sleeping with Mr S. nearly two years ago, he experienced conduct from him which he considered improper, but not knowing what to make of it, and thinking he might be asleep, he said nothing about it at the time. The same person states, that last summer he was received into Mr. Sproat's family, on his arrival at this place. He says, "He immediately offered me a room and a seat at his table, together with every possible comfort in his power. I can only say his kindness was more than I deserved or desired. In the evening he came to my room to make inquiries about the state of things in the interior. At an early hour I said to him, as I was much fatigued, if he would excuse me, I would retire. He soon after came to my bedside and remarked, "You are worn out with your journey," and proposed to rub my limbs. I said "No; I shall soon be rested." But he insisted, and began to rub my feet and legs, which I regarded only as kindness in him. After a few moments had elapsed, I said to him, "It is sufficient," and thanked him for his kindness. But he continued and said, he would rub me to sleep. I tried to sleep, but did not succeed. At length he put his head on my breast, and still continued to pass his hand over my back and loins, occasionally passing it near my privates. At the same time his head moved slowly down on my body. At length, to my utter astonishment, he seized my privates and put them into his mouth. I put my hand upon him and spoke to him of the impropriety and horribleness of such conduct. It did not once occur to me that he could be unconscious of what he was doing. He seemed to arouse as one from sleep, and inquired what impropriety he had been guilty of. Having entire confidence in him, at the time, as a man and a Christian, his plea of unconsciousness had an influence on my mind. I conversed with him kindly and faithfully, and warned him against such conduct. He left the room late, perhaps two or o'clock. And now, astonishing as it may seem, the same scene was reacted the two following nights, and that too when I had wrapped myself tightly in a sheet."

Soon after these occurrences the same individual had occasion to lodge with Mr S. for a night, and to use his own language, "*horrible to tell*, the night was spent in efforts to keep my privates from him. This individual after this remonstrated with Mr S. using very pointed and plain language. He continues, "After all this had passed, he came to my bed, and asked that he might bid me good night with a kiss, and thus remained in this most *seducing* manner until he had perpetrated the same horrible crime."

"The next night," he says Mr S. "came in the same manner. I entreated him to leave the room and never more to think of trusting himself in such circumstances with a man. But entreaty availed not. I then watched his every movement, to satisfy myself whether he was conscious or not, as he had plead unconsciousness when he committed this deed; and the conclusion seemed inevitable that he was not only conscious, but a most *wretched* and *debauched* man."

Another individual testifies that he had occasion to lodge with Mr S. some two or three years ago for a few nights, when he found himself molested in an unbecoming manner once or twice, but supposed it was done while Mr S. was asleep. He says, "One evening after we had ~~retired~~ gone to bed, Mr. S. was speaking upon the subject of intercourse between the sexes, especially in regard to those in married life, and in the course of his remarks, said he thought the love or friendship between man and man was of a purer kind, than that existing between husband and wife". This remark surprised me, but I suspected this to be a peculiarity of Mr Sproat, and did not regard it as rendering his moral character suspicious." He has been known to advance similar sentiments at other times. The same person says that about a year ago, he had occasion to lodge with Mr S. for some time. "One night," he says, ~~he~~ "I awaked, and found Mr. S. making a very perverted use of his head and of my body, having my secret parts in his mouth. I rolled him from me, when he appeared like a person partially awaked from sleep." Afterwards he was disturbed in a similar manner once or twice, though he took precaution to prevent it by a peculiar adjustment of his clothes during the time of sleep.

When the subject came to be investigated it was found that several other persons with whom he had lodged had been disturbed in a similar manner, though not to the same extent. Mr S. ever since he has been connected with the mission has manifested a peculiar disposition to form intimacies with different young men who have resided at this place, some of which have been carried so far as to appear ridiculous and to be the subject of general remark. This has been the case since his marriage as well as before.

When these practices were first laid to his charge, he attributed the cause to a state of mind like that of a person in a state of somnambulism, and plead that he was unconscious at the time of committing the deeds. This plea did not satisfy those who were knowing to the manner in which the facts occurred, not seeming to account for all the circumstances. Mr. S. when pressed on the subject, at length admitted, that there was consciousness enough on his part to render him guilty in a high degree. He admits that he was corrupted when a boy by a debauched young man who lived with his father for a time, and that he indulged these habits to such an extent that they have clung to him more or less ever since, though he has tried to overcome them, and at times thought he had. For the last two years he acknowledges he has been in a state of religious declension, and that he has indulged his thoughts upon forbidden subjects. From a thorough investigation of the subject, and the extent to which he has practiced these abominations, it appears to us that his mind is exceedingly debauched; so much so that when the temptation to indulgence is placed before him, his feelings become nearly uncontrolable, and that this is the amount of the unconsciousness in the case. How far he is really guilty before God I do not undertake to decide. Here are the facts; they speak for themselves. I have the most perfect confidence in the testimony of the witnesses. Mr. S. has made some confessions, and professes penitence for his fault. I hope he is really so. During the investigation of the case he seemed to us to equivocate in some things, and to try to deceive us, which has left an unfavourable impression upon our minds. Before he left a resolution was passed by the members of the church, (unanimously by all present which was the majority,) that he should be dismissed from our communion until he should give satisfactory evidence of penitence and amendment. When informed of this resolution which was accompanied by a letter to him, he replied. "I think I have prayed that I might be enabled to look upon my sin as God sees it, in all its enormity, and as calculated to bring a deep and lasting reproach upon the cause of Christ. This I think I do feel. Many days of misery, many pangs of heart, do I expect to feel now and through life. I felt last night as if I could not live and bear the judgment that seemed to have come upon me. It seemed as if the terrors of the Almighty had set themselves in array against me. And then again such a sense of the fearfulness and magnitude of my transgression sunk me in the dust. I think I could say with David, Against thee, thee only have I sinned and done this evil in thy sight. It was not man, but God against whom I had offended".

"I fully acquiesce in the judgment of the church respecting my case. I think I would not remain in the church of God while bringing a stain and a wound upon it, if I could. No. Vile as I may be, I think the cause and church of God is dearer, than my own reputation, or any thing else which belongs to me."

How many of his confessions flow from real penitence, I do not know. I am told that he acknowledged to one individual, that he had indulged in these practices till they had ceased to look like sin. If so, I hope his conscience is beginning to awake, and that he will soon return to God, from whom he has departed, with all his heart.

Thus have I given you a sufficiently detailed account of this very trying and humiliating case. The case became so extensively known here, that in self-defence we felt obliged to hurry Mr. S. away from the mission. The whole community felt that he had no place here, and that he ought not to remain. I presume the Committee will feel the same. The case has been one of severe trial to us all. I have often I think felt disposed to ask, why is God thus dealing with us in judgment, and permitting our failings to become a stumbling block to the heathen and Catholics around us. I hope it will lead us all to search our hearts, to humble ourselves before God, and to take heed lest we fall. I furnished Mr S. $214 to remove his family from here, which I suppose is sufficient to take them and his goods to Massachusetts, and purchase some clothing which they had need of on the way. He sold and remov nearly all the property he brought here with him, which, together with what has been from time to time furnished them, was perhaps worth as much as their outfit which they furnished principally themselves.

I have furnished you these disgusting details, so that if complaints should be made, you may have the reasons to give why Mr Sproat left so abruptly.

The case proved a very great trial to Mrs S. and perhaps she left with the impression that they had been wronged. She probably was not made acquainted with all the facts, and, as was natural, did not admit as true all that was told her. She left us possessing our confidence and our sympathies.

I would repeat here, that if it can be, I wish the contents of this letter might be kept private. If the case is made public it will ruin Mr Sproat's character wherever he may go, and perhaps his family too. If he reforms, I should not wish to expose him any farther than his conduct is already known.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe, 10 June, 1846
Rec'd June 27th.

P.C.

Mr. Sproat.
acknd July 2d D.G.

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
Pemberton Square,
Boston, Mass

Lapointe 10th June 1846

10c

vol 43
pp 161-2

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Feb 10th 1847.

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

Your letters of the 2d and 3d of July last are before me. I have read them with much interest and care, as I have likewise most of the letters which you have written to the different members of our mission here and at Pukegama during the last two years, relating to the present condition and future prospects of the Ojibwas, and our operations among them. With most of the views expressed in your letters, I fully concur. It has been to me, as doubtless it has been to us all, a source of severe trial, that no greater success has attend our efforts to bring this people under a religious influence, and secure their conversion to God. The great object we had in view in coming among them, was to make them Christians — sanctified by the Spirit of God, and prepared by grace for happiness and glory in the world to come. So long as this object is not attained, we ought not to be, and I trust, we are not satisfied. To the speedy accomplishment of this object we ought to direct our principle efforts. And I trust it is not lost sight of by the mission, though we may be defficient in zeal, and faith, and love, and perhaps often commit errors of judgment in the direction we give to our efforts. There can be no doubt, that the present is a critical moment with the Ojibwas. I believe nothing will prevent their utter destruction, but a thorough conversion to God. They are indeed wretched as they now are; but are in danger of becoming much more so, in consequence of their increasing intercourse with white people. The tide of immigration, as you are well aware, is rapidly rolling in upon them. I fear this fact portends no good to them, certainly if they are not brought under a religious influence, and religious motives are not made to bear upon them. The pine lumber on the tributaries of the Mississippi is attracting settlers and lumbermen on to the ground which they now occupy in that section of country; and the mines are attracting still more to the region bordering on Lake Superior. There is no doubt that the number of adventurers and settlers will every year increase. Many of these will be unprincipled men, whose influence in one way and another, will tend to corrupt and debase the Indians still more than they are in their unsophisticated state. They are much more apt to learn and adopt the vices of the white man, than his virtues. It is to be feared that intoxicating drinks will be more extensively introduced among them, than they ever have been. If so, many will doubtless be destroyed in consequence.

I have watched the developments of Providence towards this people for some years past, with a very deep interest; and the probable results of missionary effort among them has often caused me much anxiety. The results of our labours has not been heretofore, what we hoped and expected, when we entered this field. The influences of the Spirit have been in a great measure withheld from the people. From the first, wherever a mission station has been commenced, the great body of the Indians, when they understood our real object, have stood aloof, and have manifested little inclination to avail themselves of the benefits it offered them. The majority have been opposed or indifferent to having their children instructed in our schools; and a still larger portion of them have uniformly treated the messages of the gospel with indifference or contempt, willing, and apparently fully resolved on living and dying as they are. They seem to have no idea of any higher good, than the gratification of their animal desires, and consequently when they understand that religion does not supply our temporal wants without our exertions, but rather requires them to repent of their sins, and abandon their lusts, and become believers in the true God, it loses its attractions for them. Very few appear to have any distinct idea of such a state of existence beyond the grave, as the Bible teaches, though they believe in the future existence of the soul. They seem to me to have an idea, so far as they have any on the subject, that the future state of being will be much like the present. They manifest very little alarm when told of the future punishment of the wicked, nor do they manifest much anxiety to obtain a place in the Christian's heaven. Most of those who give the best evidence of conversion to God, have never manifested such pungent conviction of sin, as I have desired to see, though I have taken much pains to instruct them correctly with regard to the nature of sin.

It is only here and there one that has been differently affected by the preaching of the gospel. There has been no general movement of the public mind to inquiries on religious subjects. The Spirit of God has not apparently been at work here, preparing the minds of the people, extensively for the reception of the truths of the gospel, as in some other portions of the heathen world. I have looked for such indications with great anxiety, but have not found them. The Indians seem to be wedded to their idols, and given up to their own heart's lusts, and to the power of the great deceiver who works in the children of disobedience. It seems to me therefore, that our prospects for reclaiming them from sin, and of working a revolution in their social and religious condition, are to some extent discouraging. I see more and more every year to convince me, that "unless the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it." I am fully convinced of the inefficacy of human means alone to accomplish this object. I have less confidence, that efforts to settle them and bring them into compact communities, with the expectation, that in this way we shall secure their conversion to God, will accomplish much, than I used to have. If they will not abandon their present religion, we cannot gain their ear, nor will they hear much desire to improve their condition in any respect. The efforts which have been made to settle them, have not so far resulted in as much good as we hoped. Our schools are useful as affording an opportunity of conveying religious instruction to the young, and, as a means of enlightening the public mind to some extent. They should not be overlooked, but made as attractive and efficient as possible. But every year's experience and observation renders it more plain to my mind, that if they are saved at all, it will be through the simple preaching of the gospel. If the motives of the gospel do not reach their hearts, I fear nothing will. If they become truly Christians, the other changes in their condition will be effected with comparative ease. I am convinced therefore that our principle reliance should be on the plain and simple preaching of the gospel to all who will hear it. If they will not listen to God speaking to them through the gospel of his Son, there is no hope for them. It is determined in the counsels of Heaven, that the nation which will not serve God shall perish. It seems to me certain that this language will have a fulfilment with regard to these Indians before a long series of years, unless they are converted to God. Evil influences are at work already, and are becoming more powerful every year; which will eventually accomplish their ruin, unless counteracted. Nothing but the power of the gospel felt upon the heart in its transforming character, can effectually counteract them. A large part of them will perish under the weight of their own vices, if the motives of the gospel do not restrain them.

But if our prospects are in some respects dark, I do not think there is yet occasion to despair. Our hope however is not in ourselves, not in our schools, not in our books, not in any encouragement we now see for gathering large numbers of them into compact communities and settling them; but in God. We must rely principally on the out pouring of God's Spirit to give efficacy to the word preached, and to prepare their hearts for the sowing of the seed. This will render our work more simple, and bring our own hearts more into communion with the truth, and lead us more constantly to the throne of grace. When we have sown, we must look to God to water and bring forth the fruit. As dead as this mass is, God has power to breathe into it the breath of life. And we must so live, ~~that~~ the Spirit of God shall dwell in our hearts, quickening our consciences, and urging and aiding us to pray, and giving us zeal, and love, and self denial, that when we preach, our message shall be with the demonstration of the Spirit and with power. Much seed has already been sown there in different portions of the country. Many know the the claims the gospel makes upon them. Is it the design of Providence, that this seed shall all be lost? that none of it shall ever vegetate and bear fruit? If God has no designs of good to this people, why has he sent so many of us here to preach to them the gospel, and why has he kept us here so long? The leadings of Providence in this respect afford some encouragement to hope the Lord has designs of good yet to be accomplished by sending us here.

In this state of things, it becomes a question of much interest to us, as well as to you, how shall we preach the gospel more extensively, more directly, more zealously, and more effectually to this people. This subject has occupied my thoughts much for a long time past, and particularly since I received your letters. I have endeavoured to look at our circumstances at this station, and to enquire what changes can be made, that will leave me more time and strength to devote to this department of labour, than I have had heretofore. I am well aware that secular cares and business have a strong tendency to disqualify me, and every minister of Christ, for preaching the gospel as we ought to preach it. I love the work, and desire to have as little else to do as possible, because it is of itself enough to fill my heart and exhaust my energies.

I have advised with my brethren here and at Bad River with regard to the secular affairs of the station. We do not see that any very essential change can be made at present. Some of your remarks in your letter seem to imply, that you suppose our establishment larger than it really is. Perhaps I have not informed you so definitely with regard to it as I ought to have done. We have not more than six or eight acres of land enclosed, and not more than three, or three and a half of that, has ever been cultivated. We have never attempted to raise any grains, and we have sown the land which we have cultivated principally with potatoes and other summer vegitables. Our bread stuffs and our meat have been nearly all of foreign production, and this too when transportation was much more difficult and expensive than at present. We keep a small stock of cattle; just enough to furnish our families with milk, and to do what team work the establisment requires. To keep this stock good, we keep a very few young cattle to supply the place of the older ones, as they become worn out. By pursuing this course, we have occasionally an animal to kill for the consumption of our families. In the summer our cattle run at large, and cost nothing for keeping. Our hay for wintering cattle grows wild, and is brought in boats from seven to 10 miles. Our whole establishment requires from 100 to 125 cords of wood annually, which has to be cut in the woods and drawn from half a mile to a mile, and sawed and prepared for the stove at the door. Our buildings are not very permanently built, and require more or less repairs from year to year. This constitutes about the amount of our farming and secular establishment. We do not see how any essential change can be made in it at present, unless we abandon all but our house garden, ~~and~~ dispose of our stock, and run the risk of getting our wood as we can. But though our establishment is not large, there is some labour to be done, and some amount of cares to devolve on some one. To relieve me in this respect, I have thought it best to keep 3d a third hired man. If I have no one to whom the care of cattle, and the looking after many other things can be confided, it necessarily becomes a heavy tax upon my time and strength, even though we might be able to get our heavy work done in other ways. It has been my endeavour to reduce our business to the smallest point consistent, and I think eventually, it may be reduced some still. The time has been when I felt obliged to labour much with my own hands, — so much as to hinder me from study and other duties appropriate to a minister and a missionary, and to fill my mind with burdensome cares. But for the last four or five years, I have not felt obliged to do this, except occasionally for a limited time. The necessity for doing this is less now than at any former period.

With regard to translating, and preparing books for publication in the Ojibwa language, I, many months ago, came to the same conclusion with yourself, that it is not expedient to make this branch of labour any more than a secondary object. I do not suppose there is a call to publish any more books at present. I have not therefore since my visit to the eastern states, given any considerable portion of my time to this branch of labour, and what I have done, has been with reference to giving immediate instruction to the Indians, rather than to prepare matter for publication. Something of this kind can be done, and may be, by employing an hour or two occasionally, not only without detriment to other departments of labour, but to our manifest advantage.

While on this subject permit me to say a word respecting the labours required of me here at present. Such is the state of the people at La Pointe, that I feel necessitated to hold constantly two public religious exercises on the Sabbath in the English language. To prepare for these exercises in any tolerable manner, I am obliged to study much. Besides these we hold two other public religious services every Sabbath in the Ojibwa language. One of these is occasionally conducted by Henry Blatchford. I preach therefore three times every Sabbath, and a considerable part of the time, four times. All these services are continued regularly through the year, except the Indian service which is discontinued a few weeks in the Spring while all the Indians are absent at their sugar making. Our congregations are small it is true, but they must nevertheless be attended to. Besides these, I have to attend from two to three occasional meetings during each week. I do not mention this to complain of having too many labours; I would gladly preach twice where I do once, if there were hearers. In visiting the Indians at their houses and in preaching from house to house, as well as in many other ways, Henry Blatchford is a valuable assistant.

Though I do not see how any very essential change can well be made in our establishment so far as managing its secular affairs is concerned, some changes may perhaps may be made which will relieve me of a part of my present responsibilities. If it were practicable, I should insist on being freed from all secular cares and responsibilities, except those connected with my own individual family. But my associates think this is not expedient at present, and perhaps it is not. I have already spoken of reducing the business to as small a point as possible. But when this is done, there are necessarily some cares and responsibilities left, in providing for the wants of two or three families, keeping one or two schools in operation, keeping the buildings and fences in repair, make out reports, orders &c. These things do necessarily consume some time, and occupy thought which I should prefer to occupy in other ways. I propose therefore that the care of managing the general affairs of the station devolve on me, such as hiring the labourers needed, providing hay, wood etc. making returns of schools and reports, and any other business necessary to be transacted with the government. But that Mr Ely have the care of providing for his own family, make the estimate of the expenses necessary for the support of his family and forward to the Committee, and be responsible to them for the amount he expends. In this way I may be relieved from a part of my present cares. And I can see no objection to it. Though we occupy but one house, we are two distinct families, and entirely separate in all our family arrangements. In any case he must be the judge in the amount necessary for the support of his family. In this arrangement it is understood, that he is to have the use of two cows kept, his wood furnished ready for the stove, and the use of his house, which are not to be included in his estimate to the Committee of the amount required for the support of his family.

With respect to your suggestions about formally licencing Henry Blatchford to preach the gospel, it is our opinion that he will be as useful for the present without a formal licence, as he would be licenced. He has been employed more or less to conduct meetings with the Indians for three years past, sometimes alone, but commonly when some one of us was present. He has done very well, and makes himself quite acceptable to the Indians as a Speaker. We design to employ him still more in this way in future.

Mr Ely went into the school in October, at which time what was formerly our two schools was united in one, since which he and Miss Spooner have instructed it jointly. The school is pretty full and ~~the attendance of~~ the scholars more regular in their attendance this winter than usual. A part of those belonging to Catholic families, were a while ago, withdrawn, by the priest it is said, who himself pretended to have a school at which he taught the children one hour a day. Our school appears to be doing well, and is increasing in interest every year.

Our meetings have been well attended by those who are ever found there, during the winter. There has appeared a good degree of attention, but no special manifestation of the Spirit's presence. I had hoped the Lord would appear for our deliverance before this time.

Affectionately yours S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Feb. 10, 1847
Rec'd April 7
Ans'd May 1

(Feb. 10. 1847) 66c

I forward the following list of articles which we should like to have forwarded in the spring. It includes articles for the general use of the mission and for my own family.

For the School.

2 Doz Slates
2 Reams Ruled Fool's Cap Paper (good)
1 Doz Ink Powders
6 " Lead Pencils
500 Slate do.
3 Gross Steel Pens (strong)
2 doz Penholders
1# Sponge
3# Prepared Chalk for Blk Board
1 Hand Bell medium size
12 Parley's 2d Book of History
1 " 3d do.
6 " New Geography
3 Smith's Geography & Atlas
1 Doz Emerson's Arithmetic (1st Pt.)
½ " Greenleaf's Mental Arith.
8 Bumstead's 2d Reading Book
8 " 3d do.
8 " Spelling & Thinking Combined
1 Webster's School Dictionary
8 Bentley's Pictorial Spell. Book
½ doz Line upon Line
½ " Precept upon Precept
10 Eng. Bibles
½ Setts Foster's Delineated Writing Books
10 Toy Books
3 Books of Scripture Cuts.
8 Bumstead's My Little Primer
8 " My First School book
2 Books Cuts Animals & Birds.

Medicines.

½ lb Calcined Magnesia
3 Bottles Castor Oil
1 " Sweet Oil
½# Sup. Carb. of Soda
10# Epsom Salts
1 Bottle Paragoric
½# Laudanum
4 Bottles Pulmonary Balsam
2 oz Calomel
2# Senna
4 oz Pulverised Rhubarb
3 Boxes Cathartic Pills
1 Bottle Alcohol
2 Bottles Hive Syrup
1 Small Bottle Spiced Rhubarb
3 Bottles Brandy
2 " Liquid Opodildoc
¼# Cream Tartar
1# Alum, 4 oz Camphor
½" Blister Plaster
25# Saleratus
1 lb Mustard

1 Bottle Spirits Turpentine
1 Bottle Bateman's Pectoral Drops
1# Copperas, 2 oz Emet Tartar
1" Yellow Bees Wax
1 oz Indigo.
1# Ground Cinnamon
1" " Black Pepper
2 oz Cayenne Pepper
1 lb Ground Ginger
4# Sago
Other articles
1 Bl Rice
100# Coffee
18" Young Hyson Tea
5" Souchong do.
2" Hyson do.
4# Eng. Currants
2 Japanned Tin Candlesticks
1 Brass Saucerbottomed do.
1 Bone Salt Spoon
1 " Mustard do.
2 Silver Plated Table Spoons
2 Gross Metalic Pens
½ doz Penholders
3 " Lead Pencils
½ " Drawing do (Hard and soft)
1 Backed Saw (14 inch)
1 One inch framing Chisel
1 Doz 2 in. Door Butts
1 Gross 1½ in Wood Screws
1 Doz good Pocket Knives

1 Carving Knife & Fork
½ Doz Hand Saw Files 5 in
1/6 " " " do 4 in
1 Slab File 10 in
1 Bastard do. 12 in
4 Sythe Stones
2 Steel Backed Sythes (Short and strong
1 Wood ~~saw~~ Plate (34 in)
4 Collins Axes (from 3½ to 4 lbs)
300 Asst Sewing needles
1 Doz Ivoryfine Combs (3 in)
2 Pr Candle snuffers
1 Mill File 9 in
1 Bundle Pins (large size)
3 Padlocks
½ doz Pit saw files (6 in)
½ Doz Hoes; 1 Auger Bitt 5 qrs)
2 Bed Cords
1 Gross Pearl Shirt Buttons
1 Gross Horn Coat Buttons
1" Suspender do.
½ doz Glass Ink Stands
1 Large Platter (earthen)
3 Iron Stone Dishes 10 in diam: and 1½ in deep.
½ Sheets Tin. ½ Quart Bowls
1 Hair Brush
1 Well's' Grammar
2 Andrews First Lessons in Latin
1 Andrews & Stodards Latin Grammar
1 " " " Exercises
1 " " " Reader
1 Barns' Notes on the Acts
2 " On Thessalonians &c.
1 Park Street Lectures

1
1
1
1
1
2
8
9
3
2
3
3
1
1
2
1
2
2
2
3
3
1
1
2
½ A
½
4
1
5
6
1

1 Doz Eng Bibles for Distribution
1 Quire Cartridge Paper
1 " Sand Paper
1 Abbot's Corner Stone
1 Vol of Missionary Herald for 1845 bound
2 " " do do " 1846
8 yds Silk warp Orleans Cloth
9 " Black Alpacca
3 Linen Pocket Hdkfs
2 La. Light Silk do
3 Pr La. Brown Cotton Gloves
3 Balls Piping Cord
1 # Candle wicking
1 Ball shoethread
2 Brown Linen Tablecloths (2 yds square)
1 Pce Diaper
2 Pr La White Cotton Stockings
2 " Cold do.
2 Lawn Dress patterns (purple & white)
3 Linen Jackets for Lads from 11 to 15 years old
3 Summer vests for do.
1 Cloth dress Coat (Black)
1 Woolen vest (for Mr Hall)
2 Pr Pantaloons 1 Pr Blk Cloth, and one pr
Stout Cassimere or Satinette
½ Doz Cloth Caps (assorted sizes)
½ Doz Ging. Handkfs
4 # Cold Sewing Cotton
1 # White " ~~White~~ do.
5 # Blk Linen Thread
6 Yds Yellow Flannel
1 Pc Surtout Binding

1 Mrs Ellis' Cook Book
2 Bottles wine for Communion
2 oz Wafers
3 Whip Lashes
3 Pieces Pink Calico
" 3 " Blue Prints
2 " small fig. Blue & white or striped
1 Pce Apron Check
4 " Unbleached Cotton
or Cotton Shirting & Sheeting.
3 Flogg Silk Hdkfs
2 Pce Blue Cotton Drill
1 " Twilled Summer cloth
2 Pr Boys Thick Boots No 4.
1 " " do No 3
4 Pr Boys Thick Brogans No. 4
4 " " " do : 3
4 Pr ~~Boys~~ Kip do " 4
2 Pr " do " 3
1 Pr Men's Thick boots " 6
3 Pr Kip Brogans . 6
2 " Thick do 6
4 Pr Thick Boots No. 8 & 9
1 Doz Pr Thick Brogans " 8 & 9
½ " " Kip " " 8 & 9
1 Pr Calf Boots " 7½
1 Pr Kip " do.
½ Doz Pr Calf Shoes 8 & 9
½ " Kip do 8 & 9
1 Pr Goat Skin Shoes 8
3 Pr Mens Slippers 8
3 " " do 7

6 Pr La Calf Shoes No 6
2 " " " Slips " 6
6 " ~~Kip~~ Kid Shoes " 6
1 " " " 3
2 Pr La high Calf Shoes 3½
1½ doz Pr Stout Shoes for Children from 4 to 10 years old
6 Pr of high shoes for girls (Stout) length of foot 7¾ inch
2 Pr La. Calf Bootees No. 6.
2 Pr " " Shoes No 5.
½ Doz Pr Suspenders

8 Galls Best Lard Oil ~~man~~ manufactured by E G Alden No 199 Broad St Boston

50 lbs 50d Cut Nails a slim nail is preferable
12 " Wrought 10d Nails
5 " do 1¾ or 2 in long
5 " 6d Cut Nails
10 " 10d " do
10 " 8d " do
2 Chest Locks

Garden Seeds
2 oz Early Cucumber
2 " Long do.
1 oz Summer Squash
2 " ~~Long~~ Blood Beet
2 " Red Turnip Beet
1 " Mangle Wurtzel
1 oz Raddish
1 " Lettuce
1 Early Cabbage
2 English Turnip
1 Paper Tomato
2 oz Orang Carrot
1 Bag Table salt

Rev. S. Hall

(February 10. 1847.) For. E. F. Ely 666

1 Frock Coat (Dark Color.)
1 Vest. Dbl breast.
1 pr. Pantaloons (Plaid Cassimere)
1 " " Heavy Cass. or Satt.
E. F. Ely's Measure left with
Mr. Simeon Palmer. corner Ann
& Blackstone St. June 30. 1846
Also with Saml. H. Newman
41. Court St.

1 Cloth Cap. ea. size 7 1/8 - 6 7/8 - 6 3/4
1 Blk Silk Cravat.
2 Dark Silk Pocket Hdkfs
1 " " Mrs. Ely
2 Linen " " "
1 Ladies Cravat.
2 prs Shirts
1 " Wrappers, or Lambs wool Shirts
2 " Drawers
Or Flannel Equivalent
2 Long Night Gowns
4 Night Caps
2 prs Chemises
4 " Mens Socks
6 " Childrens Assorted.
2 " Wool Hose
2 " Cot. "
10 Yds Mouseline de Laine
1/2 ps. Dark Prints
1/2 " " " Different pat.
1 " Blk Riband 1 1/2 in. wide
5 Yds Barred Cambric.
6 " Cot. Edging
1 " Heavy Blk Silk
1/2 " Blk Cot. Velvet.
1 " Irish Linen. (good)

6 Yds Col^d Cambric.
6 " Bro. Linen
1/2 doz Tapes. Assorted
2 ps. Blk Silk Braid (narrow)
1 " Binding (for Coats.)
1 " Blk Linen Thread
1/4 " Bro. " "
1 " Assorted Cot. "
1/2 doz ~~Sp~~ Spools "
1/2 oz. Blk Sewing Silk
4 Twists "
2 Papers Assorted Sharps. drill'd eye
2 " " Betweens " "
1/2 doz Darners.
1 Sack Needle Small size.
6 Papers Pins.
1 pr. Ladies H. S. Gloves (large)
1 " " Thread " "
4 Knit Comforters.
2 prs Boys Suspenders
2 Balls Cotton Cord.
2 Ivory Combs
2 Horn Dressing "
1 Pocket "
2 Back "
2 prs Side "
1/2 Gro. Best Suspender Buttons.
2 doz Blk Covered Vest "
3 " Enamel Shirt "
2 Boxes Hooks & Eyes
3 Boy's Palm Hats.
1 " Lamp wicking.
6 Fine Cot. flagg Hdkfs. small

10 Yds Heavy Sattinett.
6 " " Cassimere
8 " Plaid " for Boys.
6 " Red Flannel
6 " Yellow "
10 " Domestic
10 " Apron Check. (stout.)
12 " Bleach^d Shirting.
1 pc. Brown Sheeting
½ " Twilled Cotton —
½ " Cotton Flannel
2 Cot & Linen Table Cloths.
1 pr. Flannel Sheets.
3 " Cotton "
2 Quilts
2 Comfortables.
4 Runs Stocking Yarn Col^d & white }
2 Bed Cords —

1 Pr. Calf Brogandz. No. 7½
1 " Morocco Slippers " 7½
1 " Gaiter Boots (ladies) " 7.
1 " Ladies Shoes " 7.
1 " " Calf Bootees " 7
1 " Boys Stout Boots. " 14.
1 " " " " 12
1 " " " Shoes " 13
2 " " " " 11
2 " " " " 7.
2 " " "

1 Webster's 8vo. Dictionary.
1 " School Edition do —
1 Bancroft Hist^y. U. States. 3^d Vol.
1 " " " 4th Vol.
1 Andrew's first Lessons in Latin.
1 Sett Marco Paul.
2 Church Psalmody.
1 Mrs. Childs' Housewifery
¼ Ream — fine — satin Letter paper.
1 doz Lead Pencils.
1 Large Crystal — size 3¾ in diam. for Mantel Clock. }
1 Bottle Castor Oil
1 " Brandy
2 oz. Laudanum
4 " Paragoric.
4 " Spiced Syrup Rhubarb.
Best Vermifuge.
2 Boxes Gregory's Pills
2 " Lee's "
¼ lb Calc^d Magnesia
¼ lb Pulv^d Rhubarb
1 oz Columbo Root.
1 oz. Geranium Maculatum or Crane's Bill }
1 oz. Wht Lilly Root.
1 pt. Cologne.
4 oz Cough drops
2 Bot. Liquid Opodeldoc.
¼ lb Burgundy Plaister.
¼ lb Dentifrice. prep^d by Dr. Hoyt. Enquire of Mr. Henry Hoyt. }
1 Bot. Nerve Liniment.
¼ lb Scotch Snuff
1 lb Beeswax

6 Galls. Extra Lard Oil.
10 lb Coffee
3 lb Johnstons Theobroma Cocoa.
1 Catty Tea - 6 lb
2 Lumps Sugar.
4 Bags Ground Salt.
10 lb Saleratus
2 lb Tapioca
2 oz. Cloves
3 Boxes Mustard
1 lb Sage - Herb -
1/4 lb Catnip
1/4 lb Hoarhound

1/2 doz 8 in. Plates
2 Preserve Dishes - plain
1 doz Smalls Plates (for preserves)
1 - 12 in. Iron Stone Nappie.
1 Qt Pitcher
1 Cullender
6 Tin Milk Pans
1 Bread Pan - (handles)
1 Grater.
1 Milk Strainer
1 Candle Moulds

6 Joints Stove pipe - 6 in.
2 Elbows " " 6 in.
1 Cast Iron Sauce pan, with handle
1 Hand Saw - Cross cut.
1 Brace with Centre, Pod & auger Bitts &c
1 Firmer Chisel. Ea 1 1/2 - 1 & 3/4 in
1 " Gouge Ea - 1 & 3/4 in.
1 Framing Chisel. Ea. 1 1/2 & 1 in.

3 Gimblets - Metal handles, assorted.
2 Small Stock Locks -
2 Norfolk Latches.
1 M. 1 In. Brads.
1 M Ea. 8 & 10 oz. Tacks.
1 pr. Small Steel Yards.

6 lb Whiting.
4 lb Rosin
4 lb Chalk.
1 Chalk Line.

Mr Ely has handed me the above list to be forwarded. If convenient, please to pack his goods separate, and forward to him the invoice.

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Feb. 10. 1847
Rec'd April 7.
Purchases

67 La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Feb. 15th 1847

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir,

Your letter of Dec. 8th has just come to hand. As to the expediency of your employing Mr George Copway to labour in this country, in the capacity of a missionary, I do not like to express a decided opinion, especially as I have not opportunity now to consult the opinions of others in relation to the subject. He was employed several years at two different times, by the Methodists, as a missionary preacher and interpreter in their missions in this region. After spending some time, perhaps two years, in this country, he, with two other native young men, went to Illinois and attended school for some time, with a view to qualify him ~~be~~ to be more useful to his countrymen. He was at the time under the direction of one of the Methodist conferences at the West, and his expenses were borne by them or by the contribution of individuals. After he left school, he returned by way of Canada, (when he married) to the Ojibwas of this region, and was stationed for a time on the upper Mississippi. He afterwards resided for a time at Fond du Lac. He left this country and returned to Canada some four or five years ago, since which time I have heard of him but seldom. He was frequently at La Pointe, during his residence in this country, and for several months at one time he resided in the mission family. We have had therefore a pretty good opportunity to become acquainted with him. We have employed him both to interpret and to conduct meetings. His deportment, so far as I know, was generally correct, and we had confidence in him as a Christian. I believe he was generally respected by the Indians, and beloved by his acquaintances. As a speaker, he possessed considerable vivacity, and often spoke with much feeling. I never knew him guilty of extravagances in his manner of conducting religious meetings.

What reason he has for being dissatisfied with the Methodists, I do not know. I am confident they would have employed him longer here, and I always understood, urged him to stay, but he was unwilling. He seemed rather dissatisfied here, and discontented at the time he left, and I supposed, at the time, he thought he could do better somewhere else. He is perhaps, wanting somewhat in stability of character. Fickleness and indecision are characteristic of the nation to which he belongs. Another trait of character often seen among them is vanity, of which perhaps he is not entirely exempt. I have always understood that the greatest complaints, which the superintendants of the Methodist missions made of him, were in relation to his expenses, and that he was not easily managed. It was the opinion of some of our mission, that he was not as economical in his expenses as he might be. He, perhaps had an idea that his judgment in missionary matters among his own nation, was at least worth as much as that of his superiors. My opinion of all the native young men whom the Methodists have sent here, is, that they ought always to be associated with some judicious missionary, who should be at the head of the station, and that they should be directed by him. They have not stamina and judgment enough to be trusted alone in conducting a station. Nor have they enterprise and energy enough to accomplish much, unless they have some one to direct and lead them. When they have been placed at the head of a station, and have conducted it alone, they have accomplished but little. I should be afraid that Copway would not be happy, if he felt that his movements were to be directed by others.

If he were to be employed at all, I should recommend to give him a stipulated salary. If he were not limited, but should be allowed to draw at his discretion, I should fear he might spend more than the Committee would think necessary. What his salary should be, would depend on the size of his family, and the place of his location. We allow Henry Blackford a stipulated sum, which he is better satisfied with, than he would be simply to have his living, and I am satisfied it costs the Board less. What he receives is his own, and he expends it as he chooses. This plan operates as an incentive to be economical.

But as to the place where he should be stationed, were he to join our mission. We do not need him here, and I do not see that he is needed at Red River. At Fond du Lac the Methodists have a station, and another at Sandy Lake, which are at present supplied with religious teachers. Whether there is a field for him at Red Lake, or in that vicinity, in connexion with Mr Ayer, and others labouring there, I do not know. I certainly would not advise the Committee to send him to commence a new station, without some good man to go with him. I do not think he has judgment and enterprise enough to accomplish much alone.

He has many qualifications for usefulness as a missionary among his countrymen, if he will do what he can, and I would be the last person to prevent him from coming back to this country, if his heart is set on doing good to this people, and there is a field open for him here; and perhaps ~~there~~ may yet be. I sometimes almost wish ~~that~~ Mr Boutwell would remain at Pokegama a while longer, and ~~that~~ Mr. Copway was with him. But perhaps nothing could be done there.

Mrs Copway is a white woman, of very exceptionable character so far as I know, and possesses qualifications which might render her useful in this country. At least this is the character we formed of her while here.

Mr Boutwell still remains at P. and has not decided where to go. He is in some measure disappointed about finding a field of labour on the St. Croix below P. The prospects are not as promising as they appeared last spring. He says there is not as much whiskey about him as last winter, and that he holds meetings with Indians regularly on the Sabbath.

Affectionately Yours S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe Feb. 15 1847
Rec. April 1
Geo. Copway
Ans. May 1

La Pointe, April 1st 1847

Rev David Greene 68

Dear Sir,

I wrote you by our last mail, in reply to your letter respecting Mr George Copway. Since then I have mentioned the subject to Mr Wheeler, who concurs in the opinion which I expressed in my letter to you. I wrote to Mr Boutwell for his opinion on the subject, and he replied as follows; "In regard to Mr Copway,— if he is needed at your place or Red Lake, and you think best to make the trial of him, the only condition, in my judgment, should be a fixed salary for his support. The only hope I should have of his being useful, would be, that his past experience has taught him a little wisdom. If this is not the case, he will not be long satisfied with any employment or situation. His vanity, self-confidence, and disposition to be headstrong, would subject you, or whoever he was associated with, to many trials. It is my settled opinion, that after the best you can do with and for him, you would be better without him, and accomplish as much for the Indians."

I will only add, that this is the opinion, as I suppose, of all our number. I am sure there is nothing but the kindest feelings in all our missionaries towards Mr C.

Affectionately yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall,
La Pointe, April 1, 1847

Recd May 18.

George C Murray.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Feb. 9th 1848.

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

I enclose the school account for the last quarter, which I was unable to prepare for our mail of last month.

The Circular of the Pru. Committee has just come to hand. From the Herald and other periodicals, we have been made acquainted with the state of the treasury up to Dec. I hope you will not have to go through the trials of 1837–8 again, nor the missions suffer for the want of funds.

Some time ago I wrote to Mr. Merritt Hyde of Wakeman Ohio, who has spent the two last summers at this place, to procure and forward to us early in the Spring, a part of our next years supply of provisions for this Station and Bad River. At the same time I wrote to Mr. Hill requesting him to furnish Mr. H. with funds with which to make the purchases on his sending an order. I write to Mr. Coe by the present mail to furnish us a few other articles. These orders will be sufficient to furnish us with our provisions for next year, with the exception of some 25 Bbls. flour which will not be purchased before summer. We shall need also goods from Boston as usual; but I have not time now to make out a list. Besides the expenses of these purchases there will be the expense of transportation, and we shall need some funds besides, but how much I cannot now say.

Whether we shall receive any more of the school money under provision Mr. Stuarts treaty, I do not know. There is now due $750; but whether it will ever be paid to us, I am by no means certain. The Government may see fit to apply the funds in some other way than by giving them to the missions. Some of their Agents I know are in favour of Boarding schools. Our Indian Agent is now absent, and may not return. What will be the policy of the next cannot be told. We have heretofore taken what they have given us without begging for it. If they dispose of it in another way in future, it will do no good to complain. If applied to a good purpose we should have no occasion for complaint.

We are labouring on quietly, and I hope not entirely in vain this winter. Our meetings are as well attended as usual. Our schools are pretty full and the scholars improving. We have maintained four religious exercises on the sabbath at this place for more than two years past, two in the English and two in the Ojibway language. For the last two months I have had to conduct them without help, except that Mr Wheeler aſsisted me in a part of them two sabbaths. This together with meetings during week days, and a variety of other duties, has been about as much labour as I could sustain. If the people are willing to hear, I hope to be willing to preach as long as I have strength. If no political changes take place to alter the present posture of things among the Indians, I do not see why our prospects are not as good as they have been at any time, except in the southwestern part of the country about the St. Croix. ~~coun~~ ~~try~~. But what designs God has respecting them I cannot foresee. They sold another piece of their country last season, and I presume would sell it all, if the Government would buy it. How long they will be permitted to occupy this part of their country may be uncertain. We have heathenism, Catholicism and vice to oppose us. But the Lord is stronger than all. If he work, none can hinder. If he withholds his bleſsing, we shall but plant in vain. If these Indians will not embrace the gospel, I see no hope for them. Their heathenism and vices, added to those they adopt from the whites, will sweep them to destruction.

The miſsion families are well, with the exception of Henry Blatchford, who about two months ago had the misfortune to break the bone of his left thigh. He is now recovering, but is yet confined principally within doors. He will probably always be lame, as the limb is bent considerably from its natural position.

Miss Spooner has written for permission to visit her friends in Massachusetts next fall, which request you have probably received before this. Should her request be granted, and the schools continue as they are now, her place ought to be filled by another teacher while she is absent.

I heard recently from Mr. Ayer. His wife and their two sons are spending the winter at the Red River Colony for the benefit of a school for the latter. More of the Indians of Red Lake are absent from that place this winter than usual, on account of a scarcity of provisions; but on the whole the stations there and at Red Cedar Lake were prosperous.

I have commenced committing to paper some materials which I hope may grow into a Grammar of the Ojibwa language at some future time. I am anxious to compare this language with that of some of the Indians which formerly inhabited N. England and other parts of the country now settled. I think there is some affinity between this language and some of them. Can you procure for me a copy of Eliot's Indian Grammar? an edition was published at Boston, 1822. One of Roger Williams' Grammar, (reprinted by the Rhode Island Historical Society, 1827) Zeisberger's Grammar of the Delaware language. A copy of Mr. Du Ponceau's Dissertation on the Indian languages? If you can procure any one of them I should be glad to examine them. I presume the Historical Societies have them. If necessary they can be returned again. We may be able to add something of interest to the subject of Indian languages by providing a grammar and vocabulary of this.

If you can furnish any thing else which will enable me to compare the structure of this with that of any of the other Indian languages, I should like to have it.

We looked some for a visit from you last summer when we heard had left Boston for the West recruit your health. I do not know of any region which you could visit during the summer months, where you would be likely to find a more bracing climate than this. If you should find it necessary to leave the scene of your present labours for a time next summer, would you not come this way? We should be glad see you, or some other agent of the Board here to examine the ~~the~~ ground ~~for~~ with your own eyes. We are sometimes dragged before the public by letter writers and represented in no very desirable light. We of course feel grieved to be misrepresented by every transient visiter who happens to stroll this way, and thinks he must write something for a newspaper whether true or false. But I suppose it best to preserve a meek and patient spirit and go on trying to do good. I allude to a letter in the New York Herald of Oct. 18, 1847. There are several statements in that letter which misrepresent facts much to our disadvantage. I infer that your health is better than it was last summer and that you are able again to resume your labours at the Mission House to some extent. At least I hope it is so.

Very Respectfully Yours,

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall Feb. 9.
Recd April 7. 1848.
Ackd May 1. D.G.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (70-76)

Hall, Sherman
70. 8 March 1848
71. 13 May 1848
72. 12 August 1848
73. 9 October 1848
74. 9 January 1849
75. 10 February 1849
76. 14 Feburary 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
March 8th 1848.

Rev David Greene

Dear Sir,

Enclosed is a list of articles which we request to have forwarded to us in the Spring. It is made with reference to the supply of my own family, that of Henry Blatchford, the family of the man who is in the employment of the mission here, the Schools &c. Most of the articles which we annually send to you for, usually cannot be procured here, or cost nearly one third higher than they do when we import them ourselves. It would be desirable on some accounts to procure some of these articles here, if we could do so on advantageous terms; at least it would make a little less show of business, which would be more in accordance with your suggestions to us a year or two ago. But we have wants which we are glad to have supplied, and are more sensible of them perhaps than we should be, if we were where we could supply them with less trouble.

I have signed a draft on Mr Hill of this date for $200, in favour of the Am. Fur Co. running to George Ehninger, $\$62.\frac{44}{100}$ of which is for Mr Wheeler, and $137\frac{56}{100}$ dollars for Mr. Ayer, for money which they requested me to procure for them. You will please to let Mr. Hill know this, that he may place it to their respective accounts.

Mr. Wheeler and Mr. Ely are now absent on a trip down the Lake. They expect to go as far as the Ance Kiwawinaw, where is a mission station of the Methodists, visiting several mining stations on the way and preaching when they have opportunity. They will probably be absent about three weeks. Our people are about moving to their sugar camps, which will take most of the scholars from our schools for a time.

Very Respectfully Yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Gebuas. 8th Mar. 1848.
Recd May 10.

Ans. Jun 12

Please to fill the following order and forward the articles by an early opportunity in the Spring. (March 8. 1848.)

1 Pce Denim
1 " Apron Check
3 " Brown Shirting
2 " Sheeting
15 yds Red Twilled Flannel
6 " Yellow Flannel
1 Bundle Pins
300 Needles
4 Flagg S. Hdkfs
2 Black S. do.
8 Gingham do.
1 Pce Cotton Flagg
1# Candle wicking
1 Gross Horn Coat Buttons
3 doz Brass vest do.
1 Gross Bone Suspender do.
4 Pr Buck Skin Mittens
½ Yd Lasting
1 Gross Shirt Buttons
1 Doz Horn Dress Combs (large)
1 " Ivory fine do. 3 in.
10 Pr Suspenders
5# Black Linen Thread
2" Assorted " do.
2 " Colord Cotton do
1 White " do
1 oz Sew. Silk assort Cols.
3 Pcs Blue Prints
3 " Pink do.
3 " other cols do.
3 " Blu Drill

1 Pc Linsey
1 " Heavy Twilled Cotton
4 Cloth Caps for men
4 " do for Lads
½ Palm Hats " do.
4 " do " men
1 Pc ~~Dark~~ Satinette (Stout)
20 yds Stout Sheeps Grey
2 Codlines
1 Bunch Sturgeon Twine
2 Heavy Whip lashes.
1 Doz Iron Tinned Table Spoons
½ " Pint Tin pans
¼ " Quart do
½ " Pint Tincups
8 Good Pocket Knives
1 5/8 in Auger Bit
½ doz. Pit saw files (half round)
¾ " Triangular Saw Files
1 Wood Saw 32 in
1 Pr Steelyards (weighing about 150)
1 Gross inch Screws
1 Pr Snuffers
4 Stout Steel Back Sythes
3 Collins' Axes
5# Spanish Brown
6" Yellow Ochre
10" Whiting
2 Pr Mens Slippers No. 8
2 " " do " 7

1 Black Cloth Coat (Stout for everyday wear)
4 Pr Stout Pantaloons, (Satinette, cloth or Cassimere)
1 Woolen vest
3 Pr Coarse Boots No. 8.
2 " " do. " 9.
1 " " do. " 7.
1 " Kip do " 7.
1 " Calf do. " 7.
1 " " do " 8.
4 " Coarse Brogans " 8.
6 " " " " 9.
3 " " " " 7.
4 " Kip " " 7.
4 " " " " 8.
2 " " " " 6.
1 " Goat Skin " " 8.
3 " Calf " " " 7.
4 " " " " 6.
3 " Boys " " " 5.
4 " " Kip " " 5.
6 " " Thick " " 5.
4 " " " " " 4.
2 " " Thick Boots " 5.
2 " Boys Boots " 2
15 " Children's High Shoes " 9 to 13
4 " Boys Kip Brogans " 2.
2 " La Kid Shoes 5½
4 " " " do 6
3 Pr La Calf Booties 5½
3 " " " Walking Shoes 5½
1 " " " Booties 3
2 Kid Shoes (high) 3
12 " Children high shoes substantial leather and well made length of foot by measure 8¼ inches

×1 Bombazine vest.
×1 Andrews' First Latin Lessons
×1 Young Christian by Abbot
×½ Permanent Sabbath Documents
×1 Anecdotes for boys & girls by H. Newcomb
×1 Quire of brown or yellow Cartridge paper
×1 " yellow envelops for letters
×1 Washington & his Generals by Headly
½ Ream of Ruled Follscap Paper
×½ " " Letter do.
×1 Domestic Economy by C. E. Beecher
× 2 Church Psalmody
×2 Sacred Songs (Am. Tract Soc.)
×1 piece of India Rubber
×1 Memoirs of Charlotte Elizabeth

For the schools—

×2¾ Doz. Slates, 1 Doz Websters Spellers
×500 Slate Pencils, 6 Emersons Arith } (1st Pt.
×4 doz. Lead Pencils
×4 Gross Metalic Pens
×2 Doz. Penholders (Stout)
×1 " Ink Powders
×1 Numeral Frame
×1 Ream heavy Ruled Fools Cap Paper
×9 Smith's Geography & Atlass.
×2 Setts Coe's Drawing Cards
×8 Line Upon Line
×8 Precept Upon Precept.

For the Sabbath school

×1 Pack Blank Cards 3 by 4 inch
×2 Doz S. School Psalmist or other collection of Hymns
×1 Table Bell
×Please send a few quires of French Letter paper such as we have been furnished for our letters to the Miss. House

×2 Dress Patterns Dark Calico.
×12 Bed Ticking
×1 Pr Dark Silk Gloves (rather large)
×1 Yd Pink Silk for lining
×1½ " Blk silk (rather wide)
×6 Yds Blk Gimp
×5 " Black Silk Lace 1½ inches wide.
¼ # Nutmegs
×1 " ~~ground~~ Cinnamon.
×2 Yds Black Silk warp Orleans Cloth
×3 Bunches Black Cotton Braid
3 Sticks Narrow Linen Tape.
2 Yds Irish Linen (for collars & bosoms)
×2 " White Cambrick (fine)
×1 Pc Bleached Cotton (fine)
×2 Ivory (very) fine Combs
×1 Large Iron Tinned Spoon
×1 Bone Mustard Spoon
×3 Balls Piping Cord
×3 Boxes Hooks & eyes
½ doz Plain Horn Back Combs
½ " Hair Pins
×3 Silk Cravats (for lads)
×2 Pr La. Cold Cotton Stockings
×8 Yds substantial Pilot Cloth
×1 Bottle Alcohol
×1 " Brandy
×1 " Spirits. Turpentine
×4 # Souchong Tea
×2 " Hyson do.
×3 " Chockolate
×6 " Raisins
½ doz Whalebone for dresses
10 Yds Cotton or India Flannel.
×4 Spools White Cotton Thread ca. 100, 90, 70, 50
2 " " " do. 30.

×100 ℔ Coffee
×18 # Young Hyson Tea
×15 # Saleratus
8 Galls. Lard Oil. E.G. Alden 199 Broad Street 3
×4 oz Pulv. Rhubarb
×2 Botts Castor Oil
×1 " Sweet do.
×½ # Cal. Magnesia
×1 Bottle Paragoric
×3 Botts Pul. Balsam
×10 # Epsom Salts
×1 " Senna
×¼ " Blister Plaster
×4 oz Camphor Gum
×4 " Laudanum.
×1 Good Wire Seive
×1 Doz Cups & Saucers Blk Print
×1 Sugar Bowl " do.
×4 Tinpans (6 qt)
×1 Set very fine Nitting pins.
1 Bunch Bristles for sewing shoes
×1 Shade Lamp
×1 Earthen Bedpan
×1 Bound Vol. of the Missionary Herald for 1847.
×1 Ream of Paper quality and ruling like the sample enclosed
×2 oz Long Blood Beet
×1 oz Long Prickly Cucumber
×1 oz Summer Squash
×1 Paper Tomato
×1 oz Early Cucumber
×2 " Early Turnip Beet
×½ Paper Cabbage
×1 oz English Turnip
×1 Paper Citron

Miss A. Spooner requests the following articles.

+1 Small Carpet Bag
+1 Pr Cotton gloves (rather large size)
+4 Ball's Cotton Tape (wide and narrow.)
+2 Bunches Black cotton Braid
×2 Cots Silk Pocket Hdkfs.
+1 Hair Brush
+1 Tooth do.
+1 Key to Greenleaf's Introduction to National Arithmetic
+1 Greenleaf's National Arithmetic and Key

Mr Wheeler requests the following to be added to his list already sent.

+2 # Beeswax yellow
×2 Doz Clothespins
+2 Elbows for 6 in Stovepipe
×3 Axes
×1 Auger 4 quarter
+3 oz Gum Shell Lac
×1 Wood saw
×1 Set Candle Moulds to run 6 candles
×30 # 5d Nails

Please to send 100 Ojibwa Hymn Book; also +100 Ojibwa Testament to be obtained of the Am. Bible Society. Also Ojibwa Spelling book +1st & 2 Pt Bound together.

Rev S. Hall
Recd May 16. 1844.
Purchases.
Ackd June 12, 1843.

71 Lapointe Lake Superior,
May 13th 1848

Rev David Greene,

Dear Sir,

Enclosed is the School account for the last quarter. This is the earliest ~~direct~~ opportunity I have had to forward it direct, since the close of the last quarter. A vessel arrived here today, which is the first communication we have had by way of the Lakes since last fall. We have had mail communication during the winter by way of the St. Croix and Mississippi, but communications are slow that way. I have received no letter from the Missionary House for several months. I see one by this mail for Mr Wheeler. Miss Spooner received one from you a few weeks ago, informing her that the Committee consented to her visiting N. England. She does not think she can accomplish all the objects she has in view in making the visit, if she goes this spring and returns next fall. She proposes therefore to go down the latter part of summer, and remain during the following winter. If there is no change in regard to our prospects here, I think it very undesirable that one of the schools should be stopped so long as she will be absent; though under the circumstances, I do not feel willing to discourage her going. I see no way however to supply her place.

What changes are speedily to take place among the Indians of this region I do not know. Perhaps none. But I should not be surprised, if there should be changes within one or two years. We are now included within the limits of the _State_ of Wisconsin and it may be that the Indians will be required to remove. We may also be flooded with intoxicating liquors to such an extent as to destroy all the good we could hope to do. Our present motto is, do good while there is opportunity, and wait quietly for the further developments of Providence towards this people.

Our present prospects so far as we can see are about the same as usual. We have a Temperance Society which exerts some influence. We have access to the Indians by going among them, though not many more are disposed to attend public worship now, than at our last reports. There has been some religious attention at Fond du Lac under the Methodist Station. They count several converts to Christ during the last winter.

I think I wrote you some time ago respecting the accident Henry Blatchford met with last fall in the fracture of his thigh. After about three months confinement he began to go out some, using crutches. In the latter part of March, ~~as~~ he was walking with crutches, he fell and broke the bone the second time since which he has been confined to nearly one position on the bed. He appears to be getting better, and we confidently hope the limb may eventually become strong, but it will be some months yet before he can use it much. This accident has laid him aside from the service of the mission for a long time. We feel the loss very sensibly.

Mrs Hall has ~~had an attack and has~~ been quite ill during the past week. She is we hope recovering from ~~the~~ attack now. With these exceptions the mission families here and at Bad River are well and prosecuting our work.

I wrote to Mr Hill the former part of the winter to supply Mr Merrit Hyde of Wakeman O. with funds to purchase supplies for us for this spring. I have not heard from him since, nor whether the purchases are made. If so we shall probably know it in a few weeks. We have only provisions enough to last about a month longer, but I presume within that time our expected supplies will arrive.

Very respectfully yours

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall

Ojibwas, 13th May: 1848.

Recd May 27.

Ans^d Jun 12

La Pointe
May 14th 48

Rev David Greene
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

10

72 La Pointe, Lake Superior
Aug. 12th 1848.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

Your letter of June 12th has been some time on hand. I expected an opportunity some days earlier to forward the report of our station for the last year, but though delayed later than I anticipated, I hope it may reach you in season to be of service for your report.

The past year has been to our station, in some respects, one of trial, and in others, of prosperity. Our native assistant and interpreter, Henry Blatchford, has been laid aside from active labour for the most part of the time since last November, in consequence of a fracture of the thigh bone. By the first of April, he had so far recovered from the injury as to begin to be abroad a little. At that time he fell and separated the bone a second time, in consequence of which he has been confined within doors most of the time since. He is now just beginning to move a little by the aid of crutches. We sensibly feel the loss of his services. Other instances of sickness have occurred in our families during the year, which, though not severe, have laid some of member aside for the a time. Some instances of sickness have also occurred among the members of the church, and in one case, has resulted in partial mental derangement. With these exceptions we have been permitted to pursue our labours with as fair prospects of success as at any former period of our labours here.

Regular religious services have been held on the Sabbath during the year, together with occasional meetings on week days, as circumstances seemed to call for. Such is the character of our population at present with respects to the languages they speak and understand, that we are obliged to hold our religious services on the Sabbath in two different languages. Consequently we have four services on the Sabbath, two in the English and two in the Ojibwa language. The service in Ojibwa commences at half past nine o'clock A.M. and is followed by one to a different audience at eleven in English. The services in the afternoon are in the same order. Much of the time I preach four times on the Sabbath. Our audiences are small, but on the whole rather increase than decline. Since Henry Blackford's confinement there has been less "preaching from house to house" and to private circles than formerly. But we hope the time is not far distant when we can act more efficiently in this department of labour.

We have a Sabbath school of about 30 scholars which meets after the public services of the morning on the Sabbath. The Sabbath school we regard as one of our most promising means of good to this people.

We have maintained two day schools which have been kept in different parts of the village. Over 90. different scholars have attended ~~belonged to~~ these schools at different times, though the average attendance has not been more than 40. The progress of those who are regular in their attendance has been generally gratifying; while others who attend but seldom are but little benefitted. In a community like this, where neither children nor parents feel the importance of education, and where there is little family government, there will be great irregularity in the attendance of the children at school. But these are difficulties which are to be expected among all unenlightened and barbarous people.

The Church consists of 30 members including the mission family at Bad River, at which place there is no organized church. Six of this number have been added during the past year, four by letter, and two by profession of faith. The two latter ~~were~~ are members of the mission families. In one or two instances there have been deviations from the path of Christian rectitude, but the individuals soon confessed their error, and have not since been known to be guilty of the same fault. The members of the Church are generally prompt and regular in their observance of the external ordinances and duties of religion. It is difficult to estimate the real amount of Christian principle and heartfelt piety among the members of the church. But at the same time we acknowledge that there is much room for improvement in this respect, we would be devoutly thankful to the Power which has kept them so firm amidst the temptations which beset them.

A Temperance Society was formed here a little more than a year ago, for the purpose of enlighening the public mind on the subject of temperance, and to resist the encroachments of alcohol upon our peaceful community. This society has been so far well sustained and is doing good. In the face of the laws of the United States, and of this state, aided by the influence of this society, whiskey dealers cannot introduce their poison here openly without meeting a firm resistance. They have heretofore been obliged to smuggle in all they got here, in the most secret manner. We hope it may be so hereafter. The Indian payments which are made at this place are the principal inducement to bring it here for traffic. These payments are made in August or Sept at which time there is a large collection of Indians, and if they could obtain the means of intoxication freely no one would be safe to reside here. The laws are sufficiently strict against furnishing liquor to Indians, and all we need is moral and physical power to enforce them. If no restraint is placed by law on the traffic of spirituous liquor among the Ojibwas, the prospects for doing them permanent good by missions or in any other way, are dark. Heretofore this traffic has been in a great measure restrained, and I trust it will be hereafter. Should they have free access to intoxicating drinks, drunkenness with their other vices would sweep them out of existence.

You enquire as to the influence the extention of the boundaries of Wisconsin over this section will have upon the Indians here, and upon our operations. What the result will eventually be it is impossible now to tell. At present it does not affect us much. I had hoped, that in forming a boundary for a new State, they would have left us beyond its limits. What is to be done with the Indians on the ceded territory, is a matter of anxious enquiry both among them and us. They have obligated themselves to remove when required by the President of the U.S. When this time will come is uncertain. Rumours have been afloat that it will be soon. But I do not see any particular reason why they should be required to remove at present. I feel certain that this region is not to be settled very extensively at present. There is too much good land in a better climate unoccupied, which will attract farmers before these icy barren regions. We have a healthy climate and some tolerable soil, but neither are particularly inviting to farmers. The mining excitement has in a great measure subsided, and most who have engaged in the business, ~~have~~ found it a more serious and expensive operation to dig copper, than they anticipated. There may be valuable mines in the country; but they do not exist every where, as was for a time supposed. I see no particular motive therefore to call a great number of settlers to this region at present. Why then should the Indians be required to remove? Nevertheless they may be. As yet no political changes have taken place to retard our operations or to abridge our influence among this people. On the whole I think there never has been a time when the missions of the different societies which operate here, exerted so wide an influence as at present. But there are many obstacles to oppose the progress of missions in this country, and we progress much more slowly than we desire. We have heathenism, and Catholicism, and above all, the deep rooted corruptions of the human heart to resist the progress of the truth. At this place especially the Catholic influence is great. They do not oppose us directly; but use every art to draw away the people from us on whom we may exert a religious influence. The Indians of this place and in this vicinity are very evidently making considerable advancement in some respects, and are improving in their external condition with considerable rapidity. They are becoming more industrious and many live much more comfortably than they did a few years ago. What changes may come over them within a few years, it is impossible to foresee. But it seems evidently our duty for the present to go forward exerting all the influence over them we can. Our present mode of operation seems evidently to be the preaching of the gospel, and the enlightening of the public mind by means of schools and intercourse with the people. Until there is a more general movement on the public mind, we cannot expect to collect large congregations to hear the gospel. They are generally to much debased, too ignorant, and too indifferent to the things of the future, to take much pains to learn what the Bible teaches. Should God pour out his Spirit and give efficacy to his word, we see no reason from present external appearances to be discouraged.

One word as to the geographical position of this place. Lapointe is on an island separated from the main land by a Channel from two to four miles wide. It is about 20 miles west of the mouth of the Monreal River, which river forms the western boundary of Michigan in this direction. It is about 10 miles west of the mouth of Bad River, and about 15 from the station on that river, the mission being some five or six miles up that river from the lake shore. The Indians of this place and of Bad River are so nearly connected that they form in reality little more than one band. They generally make their gardens or fields there. The western boundary of Wisconsin is a little more than 100 miles to the west of this place, and about 20 miles beyond the western extremity of Lake Superior, at the rapids of the St. Louis River which enters the Lake at its western extremity. This point is the western most point of land now ceded to the United States in this direction. From this point the line of the State runs South till it strikes the St. Croix River and runs on or near that river till it strikes the Miſsiſsippi.

At Fond du Lac, that is, the point where the north western ~~point~~ corner of Wisconsin terminates, is a mission station under the direction of the Methodist M. Society. There is another about 100 miles from this on the Miſsiſsippi. They have also a station at a place called L'Ance 200 miles below this place. The Western Evangelical M. Society have a station at Red Cedar Lake, some sixty miles this side of Red Lake. They also operate at Re Lake with Mr Ayer as you know. The Roman Catholics have a station at L'Ance, one at this place, and one at Pigeon River on the North side of this lake.

At present we have only one school in operation. Miss Spooner closed her school on the 20th of July and left us for Massachusetts on the 4th of Aug. You will probably ~~see~~ her in Boston soon.

Will you please to inform Mr Hill that the box of shoes for Mr Ely about which I wrote him not long since, as being lost, has to day arrived. It was found at Detroit, where it probably got separated from the other goods.

Very Respectfully yours

S. Hall

Lapointe 16th Aug. 1848

10

Rev. Selah B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Aug. 12
Rec'd Aug. 31
Ans'd Oct. 2

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Oct 9th 1848.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir,

Your Circular Letters dated July 26th & 27th 1848, were duly received. The instructions and suggestions which they contain I trust will receive due consideration from us. Enclosed you will find the minutes of the *buſineſs* matters diſcuſsed by the members of the miſsion at our meeting, held simultaneously with the meeting of the Board. You will see by them what subjects came before us. We devoted a considerable portion of the time during the days while the Board were aſsembled to religious exercises among ourselves, though from the peculiar state of things here, (it being payment time) we did not think it advisable to hold a public meeting.

Mr Ayer was not with us. We had no opportunity to communicate with him after receiving your letters, and if we had, he would not probably have met us here. We could only deliberate therefore with respect to the affairs at this station and of that at Bad River. The religious state of ourselves and the moral condition of the people around us first occupied our attention. One of the most prominent subjects of buſineſs which came before us was that of our expenses. There has been a tendency to an increase, rather than a decrease of expenses for a year or two past. It has been a matter of inquiry among us for some months past, what changes can be made, so as to reduce our expenses below what they have been heretofore. It is the desire of us all to reduce them to as small an amount as poſsible consistent with having a comfortable supply for our families, and the means of carrying forward our miſsionary operations without embarrassment. We wish our minds to be as little distracted with secular cares and anxieties as possible, and our hands left as free to labour "not for the meat that perisheth," but in breaking the bread of life to the famishing around us, as they can be. It has therefore been our study so arrange our affairs as to have as little secular business carried on at our stations as is consistent. For this purpose we have been endeavouring to arrange our affairs so as to dispense with hired help as much as we can, raise less, and procure most of the articles of living from abroad. We are convinced that as the state of things now is around us, it is more expensive & burdensome to raise the articles necessary for our consumption than to buy them.

I am anxious that you should understand the internal arrangements of our mission, and for this purpose I will go somewhat into detailed account of our arrangements ~~[illegible]~~ though at the risk of being tedious.

At the first establishment of this mission, when there were two or three families of us together and one or two single persons as teachers and assistant missionaries, all looked to me as a kind of superintendent, or head, and expected me to provide for the whole. The oversight and care of nearly all the affairs of the station devolved on me. As changes were made from time to time, and I became associated with persons of different habits and tastes, this arrangement was found not to give universal satisfaction. We then entered into an arrangement that each family or single person should give me a list of all such articles as he wished to have procured for a year to come, and I was to see that they were delivered to him. All the secular business of the station, such as making orders, procuring supplies, hiring and paying labour, providing buildings, keeping cows, furnishing wood, raising vegetables, making reports, etc. devolved on me, besides the duty of sustaining meetings, making translations, and other appropriate missionary labours. This threw more burdens on my hands than is desirable for any missionary to sustain especially those of a secular character. At length however this arrangement proved unsatisfactory to some members of the mission. Some seemed to think that they were too much cramped and restricted in their expenditures. They did not like to be responsible to one of their brethren in this way, nor did they seem pleased that all their orders and invoices must pass through the hands of a superintendent, and be subject to his inspection. It looked perhaps like being placed under a system of espionage which was at times annoying. On my part also there was sometimes, I thought, ground of complaint for others making accounts at different places without informing me, and which I knew nothing of till called upon unexpectedly for payments.

The next arrangement was, that each family or single individual should make his order and forward it directly to the Treasurer of the Board. His goods were to be packed and sent directly to himself. If he made any accounts here he was himself responsible for their settlement. All the provisions required, (which were generally procured from Ohio) I was expected to furnish. I was also expected to provide wood, take care of the stock, keep the buildings in repair, and see ~~that~~ all the farming work about the station was done. This was the general arrangement when Mr. Wheeler removed to Bad River. Soon after this, Mr Sproat left the mission, and Mr. Ely came to reside here. On Mr Wh er's removal to Bad River, the business connected with that station necessarily devolved on him. The provisions however for both stations have been procured together, and through me, and I have signed most of the drafts on the Treasurer. Mr Ely's taste leads him to prefer ~~to~~ to have ~~perform~~ the management of the business connected with his department and his family by himself. Hereafter therefore each of the three will procure our supplies, and manage our family affairs throughout, distinct from the others.

Our present arrangement is this— I am to act as nominal superintendent of the mission so far as is necessary to make reports, receive the school money, and sign official papers to the government. Farther than this the mission does not require a superintendent at present. I am also to have the general direction of Henry Blatchford's labours and see to providing for him, and for my own family, and have the charge of the preaching department of the station. Mr Ely has charge of the school, including the procuring of books, wood, etc. and provides all he needs for the subsistence of his own family. Mr E. and myself occupy the same house, but our apartments are entirely separate, and families distinct. On many accounts our present arrangement is a desirable one; and I think on the whole the best which we could adopt. Heretofore I have had more secular cares and burdens on my hands than was desirable. I shall now be much relieved in this respect, which will give me more time to preach and to prepare for my preaching exercises. The state of society here now is such, that there is enough to do in this department to occupy all my strength and energies, if done as it ought to be. This arrangement is also the most satisfactory among ourselves of any which we could adopt. It ~~[illegible]~~ divides the labours & responsibility more equally among us, and will probably lead to more economy in our ~~of~~ living and expenses. It ~~reduces our affairs~~ introduces more ~~to~~ system into our affairs; and I hope the result will be to give more efficiency to our labours.

In making our estimates for the year to come, we have endeavoured to set them as low as we think we can, and give us the means of feeding & clothing our families comfortably, and meet the other expenses which must necessarily be incurred. It should be borne in mind that all things required to subsist a family cost here very considerable more than they do in N. England.

Henry Blatchford has hitherto been employed as an interpreter and native assistant. He has frequently conducted religious meetings, sometimes alone and sometimes when one of us was present. He has proved himself very acceptable as a speaker in his native tongue, and has been useful in this capacity to his brethren, and in making religious visits among them. Should he recover in some good degree from the injury he received last fall, as we hope will in a few months more, it will probably be expedient to employ him more in this way than we have done formerly. We may then think it expedient to set him apart in a more formal manner to the work of native preacher. We allow him $130 wages annually, and a quantity of provisions just sufficient to subsist his family. He furnishes his clothing out of his wages. This is as small a sum as he can live on.

The subject of our schools at this place was considered by us. It is our opinion, that if the same state of things continues to exist which has existed for some time past, there should be two schools kept here by the mission, in two different parts of the village. More scholars have attended our schools than one teacher can well attend to. And more have belonged to them than would have attended, if only one school had existed. What our prospects will be a few months hence, it is impossible now to foresee. A part of the children heretofore attending our schools have been from Catholic families. A priest could prevent their attendance, if he chose, by his authority or by opening a nominal school of his own. As yet we have not been much embarrassed by their interference with our schools.

Rumours are afloat that it is the present policy of the government to remove the Indians soon from this region. No communication however has yet been made to them relating to this subject. Should this be done it would derange our present operations. As we now are I regretted the necessity of suspending one of our schools for the present winter. Perhaps by next spring something would be developed by which we could determine with more certainty whether or not two schools should be maintained here. Should there be two schools two teachers would be required, and should there be but one, and that as large as it has been during the summer, Mr Ely thinks he should have an assistant. We do not feel very sanguine that any material change will take place soon. If the Indians should be removed, it will take time to accomplish it. There is no demand for their removal from this region, except what the government themselves create. The land is not wanted for settlement, and if the Indians are removed, it will take away a large share of the present business on this lake. There is hardly any spot where they could be put, where they would be more out of the way than they are here. The greatest part of the land here is comparatively poor, the climate cold and the market for produce distant. The country for agricultural purposes will not soon be much called for.

Should there be no change in our prospects, it is our opinion that a female teacher will be needed here next spring. Should we maintain but one school here, and there be but one teacher, it is probable that a part of the school money now paid to the Board will be withdrawn. We shall endeavour to keep you apprized on this subject, and hope you will have a teacher in readiness for us, in case we need one in the spring.

With regard to the expediency of Miss A. Spooner's returning here we must say a few words. We suppose it would not be her wish to return, if she could find the means of supporting herself comfortably in some other employment. We are all of the opinion that she is not as well qualified to be as useful and happy here, as some other person differently constituted might be. Her services are not particularly needed at either of the stations at present, except as a teacher. We think a person of a different temperament, of different ideas on the subject of government, and of stronger nerves would perhaps succeed better than she. We think there are reasons why she would not be as likely to succeed as well in future as she has heretofore. We do not wish you to infer from this, that she has not been useful here, and has not laboured diligently in the school. There is but little ground of complaint here, but we think she fails in judgment sometimes, and that this has been more apparent lately than formerly.

The Indian payment is now just closing, and the people are preparing to disperse. They have been assembled here for six weeks, and some of them came much earlier. The long delay was caused by the money not being forwarded in season. There was much less intoxicating liquor disposed of here this year than last. All that has been furnished to the Indians at all has been smuggled in here and sold secretly, generally in darkness of midnight. Traders, Government officers and citizens united to prevent its sale, and left but a few unprincipled men to deal it out under the cover of secrecy. There has been much cold and rainy weather while the Indians have been assembled, in consequence of which there has been much sickness, and deaths among them have been frequent. There has been little disturbance, and notwithstanding the large number assembled, our village has generally exhibited a peaceful and quiet aspect.

Yesterday was the Sabbath. But the payment went on. Some 36 shops stood open for trade. Criers were the whole day patrolling the streets crying goods, and calling upon every passer to trade. Nothing but noise and bustle and confusion was seen the whole day. Our sanctuary was deserted by half our usual worshipers. Some of the professed friends of Christ were among the number of those who went on with their business;—probably trying to satisfy conscience ~~but~~ with the plea that the circumstances of the case rendered it necessary for them to set aside the Sabbath for this once. I was gratified to see those generally who were but lately redeemed from heathenism at Church, setting an example of Christian decision & consistency worthy of the imitation of their more enlightened neighbors. The Indians received their ammunition, and during the afternoon there was one almost constant report of fire arms ~~in~~ heard from some quarter. I never before witnessed such a flagrant desecration of the Sabbath at this place. If those bearing the Christian name, and the Officers of our Government, and even professed Christians set such examples before the heathen, is it a wonder that they adhere to their own religion and call it as good Christianity? I hope the scenes of yesterday may never again be repeated here.

Before I close I would say a word respecting our periodicals. I should like to have the Day Spring directed to me. It has been heretofore directed to Miss Spooner. I think the Well Spring had better be discontinued. The postage on so many copies of it as have been sent here is considerable. Please to have a copy of the Missionary Herald sent to the address of J. L. Hughes, Lapointe L. Superior, and charged to our expenses, and Mr. H. will pay me here. I should like to have the other periodicals heretofore sent me continued. Mr H. wishes to commence with the Jan. No. 1849.

Yours very truly

S. Hall

Mr Heall h. too wk-sed later
the des at sent, Med.- it prog
ment- Med. ext- Eng- pt. at
st- fur all° but the- fun p.,
well- Ready ~~sent~~ miss devout
att- — sht- of malder- Dr. Borch.

One ext- meet. b Med.- ~~fr~~ Semi
or exphat- day or so- Henry Blatt
h. a meet-" also eng. a conf- meet
12. or 20. Excell- of man- good
talent- Pleas- soc- any body
ntry be- a good deal of regt. Spt-
Consult- of any exc-ent 1- Some Med. at
him- 2- interv. with unpd people
no regular female prog ment- the
Wheeler sect° our- the W. never
visit Hell.

Mr Hall h. no seen of parts
of prog- w the Wheeler hay-

Little trouble at-, loss
latter- the Heall with Wheeler

Mr Hall & Ely get along by hav
but little to do with each other.
at fault fund- spt- in the Healthy
& Elys family- Mr Heall & with
are abrupt- not gentl- Mr Wheeler
is very sensitive- Mr Ely nervous
with Ely Indian

Mr Heall goes into superintended
of lin- each other [illegible]

Miss Spooner [illegible] 6 a 7 0 Cont
[illegible], 2 sch. [illegible] all. 20 in [illegible]
[illegible] all [illegible] 20 [illegible]
[illegible], [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] Mrs Spooner's sch.
room. Many 1/2 [illegible] mixed [illegible] ch.
an [illegible] Cath. [illegible] — [illegible] make
any [illegible]

Hall [illegible] an [illegible] at
[illegible] 30 — 25–30 — wom
ch. [illegible], [illegible] an Eng. [illegible]
[illegible] 25–30 — [illegible]
at [illegible]. at 4 1/2 [illegible] Ind [illegible] at
[illegible] sch. h. An [illegible] Eng [illegible]
at [illegible] ch. [illegible]

The gospel [illegible] a [illegible]
[illegible] at [illegible] of a [illegible]
Ind. [illegible] at [illegible] of [illegible]
[illegible] at [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] land of [illegible]
[illegible]

The [illegible] [illegible]
att. ch.
[illegible]
ch. [illegible] 3/4 mile
[illegible] Ind. [illegible] who att. ch. an near [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Whereas the undersigned
[illegible]
Mr Hall [illegible]
[illegible]
Mr Hall [illegible]

[illegible] Ind. an [illegible] La Pointe. [illegible]
[illegible] com. — Hall [illegible] an [illegible]
[illegible] labor — [illegible] — [illegible] — [illegible]
[illegible] — The whole land [illegible]
~~[illegible]~~ out [illegible] near [illegible] at [illegible]
[illegible] scatt. — They [illegible]
[illegible], [illegible] Ind.
Most [illegible] an [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] Cath. —
[illegible] 1/2 [illegible] Cath. ch. [illegible]

Rev S. Hall
La Pointe Oct. 9, 1848
Rec'd Oct. 23, 1848
Rec'd Oct. 23.
Ack'd March 20.

[illegible] at 100 [illegible]

La Pointe [illegible]

Rev. J. Hall

La Pointe Oct. 9, 1848

rec'd Oct. 23. 1848.

Rec'd Oct. 23.

Ackd March 20.

74 La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Jan. 9th 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir,

Your two letters of Oct. 2d, and Nov. 17th came to hand one week ago. Before the arrival of the mail which brought them we had received no mail for about three months, and scarcely knew any thing that was going on in the world. The same mail also brought us papers, the first we had received of later date than the first of Sept. Of course we had received no account of the late meeting of the Board. I had anticipated that the meeting would be one of much interest, as it seems that it was. I was glad to learn from the papers, that probably before this time, that the treasury is relieved from the embarrassing debt which has lain upon it so long. I hope the relief will not be merely temporary.

I was surprised to learn that you had not received the letters we sent containing an account of our meeting simultaneously with that of the Board, and our estimate of expenses for the year to come. These communications were made out and forwarded early in October, and should have reached Boston before November. Mr Hill writes under the date of Oct. 25 that he had received from me the vouchers &c. for the Government which I think I forwarded by the same mail with letters to you. I trust however, that our communications have come to hand before this time.

I was glad to hear from Mr. Greene through you. I hope he may yet so far regain his health, as to be active in the service of Christ in some public capacity. You say, "it was hard to part with him." We must also say that we regret that we are deprived of the benefits of his judgment and counsels. He enjoyed the fullest confidence of our mission, and all looked upon him as a father. His letters were always received with the greatest pleasure.

With regard to the employment of interpreters I presume our mission will not be disposed to dissent from the views expressed in your letter. During much of the time of the past year, Henry Blatchford has not been able to assist much at either station in the capacity of interpreter at our meetings. The injury he received has proved very serious. He is not able yet to move at all, except by the aid of crutches; and it will probably be some months yet before he will be able to dispense with them if he ever is. For this reason he cannot now get from one station to the other, and move about among the Indians as he formerly did. Mr Wheeler felt the need of some one to assist him in the study of the Indian language, and in communicating religious instruction. We all thought that, in the circumstances in which he was placed, he was justified in procuring an interpreter for a limited period. The person whom he employed did not prove as useful as he expected, and in a short time wished to be released, and the mission was willing he should be.

As to doing without interpreters, we all wish to acquire so perfect an acquaintance with the native tongue that we can dispense with them. We are fully aware that a perfect practical knowledge of the Ojibwa language would give us an influence among the Indians, which we cannot possibly have, so long as we are obliged to speak to them through interpreters. It would also relieve us from many other embarrassments. But in point of fact, we are all foreigners in language and must for the present at least appear to an Indian audience somewhat like barba reans. It is a language possessing many peculiarities, and not easily acquired to perfection by a foreigner. There are peculiar difficulties in communicating instruction in it, arising from the want of proper terms to express religious ideas in. I am convinced however that a missionary will produce as much impression generally to address the Indidians directly, though he may often express himself awkwardly, as he can by trying to convey his ideas through an interpreter. When I have no interpreter, I do what I can alone. It is certain that we never can preach without interpreters unless we make the attempt. The way to improve is to practice and persevere. To use your own figure, we may not expect to throw away our crutches and get to walk erect without some halting at first and an occasional fall.

On some points with regard to our field of labour at this place and Bad River, your impressions may perhaps need correcting. It is necessary to keep up our regular Ojibwa service here on the Sabbath during the whole year, except some six or eight weeks in the spring, when only our English service is required. Mr. Wheeler has Indians near him nearly the whole year, except during a part of the summer, when they remove towards this point for their payment, and for the purpose of fishing in the lake. Our present prospect is that we shall have materials to work upon at both places nearly the whole year round, if no political changes take place. This is aside from the labours to be bestowed upon my little English congregation.

As to our requiring another teacher in the place of Miss Spooner, we may not perhaps need one here. The Catholics have opened a school in one part of our village, and the larger part of the Catholic children who formerly attended our schools go there. Mr Ely thinks, that, if the school is not larger than it is at present, he shall not need an assistent. Perhaps a teacher may be needed at Bad River, should there be no change in the affairs of the Indians. Miss Wood, Mrs W.s sister, is expect to return home next spring or summer.

As to your sending some one to take Mr. Ayer's place at Red Lake in case he leaves I have time now to say but a word. My present impression is that it would be better to give up the station wholly to the other society. They have already or will furnish enough labourers for the demands of that field as I suppose. It is not probable that you could send a new missionary there who would labor as harmoniously and successfully as Mr Ayer has, and have the confidence of those mission aries as Mr A. has had. I should think if any one for this field, it would be better to place him at some other point. Lest our letters containing our estimate of expenses failed to reach you I will enclose a copy of it though without explanation.

Mrs Wheeler has been for some time past confined by sickness. Her condition for one or two days was considered somewhat critical. The last we heard from her she was thought to be some better.

Very respectfully yours

S. Hall

P.S. I enclose the school account for the last quarter. Please hand it to Mr. Hill

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Jan 11 1849
Rec'd Feb 23.
Ans'd March 28.

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Feb 10th 1849.

Rev. S. B Treat;

Dear Sir,

I was surprized to be informed a few days ago by Mr. Ely, that he had written to you, requesting, that his connexion with the Board might be dissolved. I was not aware that he had any intentions of leaving us at present, and do not see any imperious reasons in his case, for his doing so. I suppose however that the reasons which induced him to take this step are satisfactory to himself. I regret however that he feels it his duty to leave this field, especially at the present time. He has been long in the field, and has acquired a knowledge of the missionary work, of the Indian character, and of the language of the Indians, which are invaluable to a missionary, and which it must take another considerable time to acquire. He is therefore better qualified than a man who has newly entered the field can be, to discharge the duties of the station which he occupies. I do not think with him, "that a knowledge of the Ojibwa language is not necessary to the usefulness of the teacher" of the school here. I do not think our school ought to made exclusively an English school; but that the children who belong to families which use the Ojibwa language, ought to be taught to read and write that language. It is true that the character of the school has somewhat changed within a few years past. The children who have been the most benefitted by our schools, are almost all able to speak more or less English. But I think it very desirable that a teacher be able to teach the children to read and write the Ojibwa, as well as the English language. They should be taught it, if no other reason, that they may read the Testament and oth er books in their native tongue to their parents and others. Little however can be taught them in this language beyond reading and writing, for the want of books. But to read ought to be taught them.

If Mr. Ely leaves us, I think you had better send us a male teacher to take his place. As our situation now is, we need a judicious and pious man in the day school, in the Sabbath School, and in our community. In my judgment also, he had better be a married man. The influence of a family of the right stamp will be greater than that of a single individual. If a young man without a family should come here, he would probably not wish to remain long unmarried. At least it has been so in our past history. A single person would expect to be boarded in my family. As we are at present this would not be convenient. The health of my wife is very precarious, and all the time feeble. It is impossible to procure domestic help here that can be relied upon. If our family is increased we shall be obliged to procure domestic help from abroad. There is house room enough on the mission premises for two families. But if this cannot be done, you must send us such help as you can procure. A female teacher would be better than to have our school stop.

It is a severe trial, and sometimes almost shakes my own resolution, to see so many of the older missionaries quitting the field. It looks like discouragement, and somewhat like giving up the Indians to destruction. There are many things in prospect which look dark; but I do not see reason to despair; nor do I think the sympathies of the Christian public ought to be withdrawn from them; nor ought they to be abandoned by Christian missionaries. I do not see anything which renders success hopeless.

There is so much uncertainty as to their future political condition, that we cannot calculate with much confidence what will be the promise of the field a few years hence. The policy of the Government, if I understand it, is to remove all Indians from territory which may be wanted soon for settlement by whites, as fast as possible. I do not think the Government can put the Indians of this region in any spot where they will be really more out of the way, and where it would be better for them, than to leave them unmolested in the possession of the upper part of this lake, & of the country bordering upon it. But they may not think so. I see but few inducements for white people to settle much about the shores of the west and northern parts of this lake. The land lying within the bounds of Wisconsin between Lake Superior and the ridge which divides between the Lake and the Mississippi is generally poor. Very little of it is any thing more than second rate; and vast portions of it are not fit for agricultural purposes. Our winters begin early in November frequently, and last till late in April. It has however the redeeming quality of a healthy climate. It is well adapted in many respects to the habits and mode of life pursued by the Indians, having points of fertile land enough for their use, having numerous small rivers and lakes well stored with fish, and possessing more or less small game. The country occupied by the Ojeb was beyond the limits of Wisconsin, especially to the north and west of Lake Superior, is represented as poor for agricultural purposes. The South west part bordering on the lower St. Croix and onward up the Mississippi, especially on the west side, right up, is probably better. The prospect is that some parts of it will settle rapidly. Geological surveys of this region have been made during the two last seasons, and I understand that the reports will not be very favourable with respect to the portions first described. Settlements are being made all the way from the Falls of the St. Anthony to Crowwing River, where a military post has just been established, a distance of 140 or 150 miles. The Winebagoes have recently been removed to the neighborhood of this last place, and the Menominees are soon to follow somewhere ~~i~~ into the same region, it is reported. I think the prospect that emigration will push up the Mississippi in the direction towards Red River, is much greater, than that it will flow in around the upper end of this lake.

But in case the Government should remove the Indians from the country ceded, I think it will not be done without making some provision for them somewhere else. It would be very hard for the Indians, and, I think, impolitic for the Government, to require them to leave their present homes, and look for themselves a place of settlement among their more northern and western neighbors. I think therefore, that if they are removed, they will in some way be provided for and protected. There would be advantages in concentrating them more, and bringing them more directly under the influence of the Government. It might have the influence of facilitating rather than of retarding their advances toward civilization. It might be a means of inducing them to cultivate the arts of civilized life more, and induce them to subsist more on the products of their agricultural industry.

It would probably put a restraint upon their lawlessness, so that missionaries could reside among them with less annoyances, than they have heretofore been subject to. It would probably check the hostilities which have so often existed between different tribes. Larger numbers would be accessible to instruction and to religious influences. Their present scattered condition renders few of them ~~them in a great measure~~ ~~in~~accessible to missionaries at any one point, and the difficulty is increased by their roving, unsettled habits. These evils might be remedied by concentrating them more.

In case they should be removed from the ceded lands, it does not necessarily follow, that the prospects for evangelizing and saving them, will be less favorable than now. It might have a tendency to hasten such desirable results. It would break up our present establishments at these points, and subject us to much inconvenience and self denial to remove with them and form new establishments. But I do not feel that the present prospects of the Indians in a political point of view ought to discourage us, or slacken one effort to do them good. I do not think this is a reason why we should abandon the field; and I may state that I never felt more strongly resolved to use my utmost endeavours to qualify myself to preach the gospel more directly and intelligibly to them in their own tongue, by becoming more familiar with their language and by studying to gain access to their minds, than I do now. I am less cumbered with secular cares and duties, than I have been before for a long time. If my heart does not deceive me, my most ardent wish for them is, that God would appear by the converting influences of his Spirit, and show the power of his grace in their conversion and salvation.

They ought not to be abandoned by the Churches. I was glad to hear you say, that you had resolved to try to awaken more interest in the Christian public in behalf of the Indians. When I visited the Eastern States a few years ago, I was grieved to see so little sympathy in their behalf. The attention of the public seemed much more intensely fixed upon the nations beyond the seas, than upon the heathen on our own borders. A small number of them comparatively, have been gathered into Christian Churches — the majority at every point are yet either determined heathens, or Roman Catholics. They are ungrateful, and scarcely one appreciates our motives or the good we would do them. They are ignorant and their hearts full of sensuality and sin. They love darkness because their deeds are evil. But (A) I cannot but think that if the faith of Christians does not fail, and missionaries do not become discouraged, the time will come ~~be~~, when there will be a glorious harvest gathered from this field. The seed of truth has fallen into many minds. There is no hostility to missionaries, as such. They may reside at almost any point in the country. And I cannot think the word of the Lord will return without accomplishing something. I have met with many cases where it has evidently produced impressions. There is nothing in the religion of the Indians, if their heathenish practices deserve such a name, which forbids the hope of their embracing Christianity extensively. Their ignorance and indifference to every thing which does not gratify sense and appetite, seem to be the strongest obstacle to ~~their~~ being interested in the truth ~~of Christianity~~. It is difficult for them to conceive of a state of existence different from the present, ~~that they now live~~; or any other happiness than that which is derived from eating and drinking, ~~indolence~~ & from ~~the~~ gratification of depraved appetites and passions. Missionaries may be subjected to many trials and vexations; but these generally come from a few mischievous and restless spirits. The majority of the people are not disposed to injure him ~~the missionary~~. They may continue, as they have done, to look upon us ~~the missionary~~ not as their benefactors, but as their servants, and think we ~~he~~ have no benevolence, if we ~~he~~ do not divide with them ~~his~~ our little stores. But by persevering and self denying labours among them, we may hope that better sentiments will ultimately prevail. The greatest obstacle which we have to meet, aside from the hostility of the human heart, ~~the same every where~~, is their indifference to the things the gospel teaches, and to improvement generally. They are generally a very accessible and social people. Almost the only way of reaching their minds ~~of most~~ with the truth, is by private visits and conversation. They are too indifferent to be at the trouble of coming to ~~public~~ religious meetings. But when once interested in the truth, they are as constant attendants on public worship, as the people of almost any other Christian ~~religious~~ community.

You say in your letter, ~~that~~ you think "that what is needed ~~most~~ for the Ojibways more than any thing else, is faith accompanied with importunate prayer." I have often wished you had enlarged a little upon the idea, and had given the idea you attach to the term faith, and had told how it will operate practically. I suppose however that you mean such a confidence in the importance and reality of the great truths of revelation as will not let us rest while we see souls out of Christ, whom there is any hope ~~that~~ we can rescue from destruction. I am aware that there is far too great a want of such practical faith among us. We need much of it to live well, and preach well, and be successful. And it seems to me that our work in this field is becoming more and more a work of faith, and that our hopes must principally be in the promises and power of God to give efficacy to his own truth. I have felt more like relying on the simple preaching of the great fundamental truths of the gospel, than upon any other means, for some time past; and to bend my efforts and energies to this one point in future.

I had hoped to have received a reply to our communications of last fall respecting appropriations &c. before this. But our last monthly mail brought us nothing. I am some fearful that our letters never reached you.

Very truly Yours

S. Hall

Rev S. Hall
La Pointe, Feb. 10, 1849
Recd March 24
Ackd April 5.

La Pointe Feb. 14th 1849.

Rev S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir,

Mr. Wheeler was here yesterday, at which time a meeting of the mission was held, the minutes of which I am requested to forward to you. They are as follows.

At a meeting of the mission held at La Pointe, Feb. 13th 1849. the follow subjects were discussed and the appended resolutions past. The first related to Mr. Ely's application for a dismission from the services of the Board, whereupon it was resolved,

1. That we reccommend to the Committee to grant his request, as soon as his place can be filled by another teacher.

2. That Mr Ely have leave to order such supplies, as are necessary to meet the wants of his family, while he shall remain in the service of the Board.

3 That he have leave to employ such time during the coming recess of his school during the sugaring season, as he judges necessary, for making arrangements for his future settlement.

4 That we see no branch of labour in connexion with this mission, which at present, demands an assistant labourer except as a teacher.

The Station at Red Lake.

With regard to this station, the follow resolution was past.

Resolved that we recommend to the Committee, to relinquish this station to the Am. Miss. Soc. in accordance with Mr Hall's suggestions in a recent letter to Mr. Treat.

At this meeting an interview was had with Henry Blatchford respecting the alternating his labours between this place and Bad River. It was proposed to him to remove his family for a time in the Spring and then again in the fall. Mr Wheeler supposed that such an arrangement was contemplated by the Committee, from your communications on the subject of his labours, and that he reside there at different times one half the year. This would require several removals back and forth during the year. Henry stated that he was willing to do what he could; but he thought in his present state of lameness he should not be able to comply with such an arrangement. It would require the removal of furniture, and other inconveniences, and he preferred to have them stationary here. He prefers to have them here also on account of the convenience and regularity of ~~their~~ his children's attending school.

Whether the precise method proposed by Mr Wheeler was contemplated by you in your instructions respecting H. B.'s labours, or whether it is expedient for him to comply with it in his present circumstances, I will not undertake to say. But whether his family go there or not, I think he is willing to spend as much of his time there as he thinks he can employ profitable, when he is able. Such is the present state of his injured limb, that he is unable to visit the Indians much, except where they are easyly accessible. It seems to be gradually improving but slowly. He seems to be willing to do for the Indians all he can to bring them to a saving knowledge of the truth. I am not prepared to dissent from the views he takes of the subject in his present condition, and think, if the case were my own, I should prefer to have my home at one place or the other, though my labours might be divided between the two. I shall try to have him as much at Bad River in the Spring, while the Indians are collected at their gardens, as his health will permit him to be. At this place, even in his present state of heath, there is enough to do to keep him usefully employed. But I am anxious, if he should get better, that his future labours should be more directed to the duties of catechist and native preacher than they have been heretofore; and if possible to avoid it, that Mr. Wheeler and I should lean on him less. It is slow work to fix many religious ideas in the minds of such a people as this, and we need to multiply the number of hammers as much as possible. It takes many blows to break a single piece of the rock.

In regard to Mr Ely, we regret that it is necessary for him to leave the field. But he says the employment of teaching affects him so injuriously, that he thinks he ought to be released, and after consulting with him, we concurred in this opinion. He would be glad to be released from his present duties early in the spring, but if a successor cannot be sent so soon, he says he will continue the school some longer, rather than that the interests of the mission should suffer by having the school stop. We see not other department of labour here which he would ~~fill~~ engage in, which appears to us to justify the expense of supporting an additional family. His own preferences seem to incline him to leave this section of country; and we have therefore recommended to the Committee to release him as soon as his place can be supplied. During the recess of his school, he will take a journey to the Mississippi, with a view to make arrangements for the removal of his family from this place.

In regard to the Red Lake station, our resolution was based on the reasons which I stated in a recent letter to you. We have had no communication with Mr Ayer on the subject. There may be rea sons for continuing the station which we do not know. Mr Ely has just handed me a list of books which he requests to have purchased and forwarded. A part of them are for our temperance society here; the remainder are for the government farmer at Red River, and the money will be refunded to the mission here. Our temperance society is exerting some influence here, and any publications adapted to the promotion of the cause of temperance, which any friend is disposed to send us; will be gratefully received, and will be useful in promoting the cause among us.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

Rev S. Hall
La Pointe, Feb. 14, 1849
Recd March 24
Ackd April 5.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (77-83)

Hall, Sherman

77. 22 May 1849
78. 8 June 1849
79. 16 August 1849
80. 10 September 1849
81. 7 November 1849
82. 10 November 1849
83. 23 October 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

La Pointe May 22d 1849

77

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir;

The first vessel we have seen here this spring arrived yesterday, and brought us your letter of April 5th. I have not time to reply to it particularly now; but as I am writing to Mr. Hill, I will enclose a note to you. Mr Ayer, I understand has decided on leaving Red Lake, he being unable from weakness of the lungs or partial loss of the voice, to preach publickly. He went down the Mississippi a little distance below Crow Wing River, and has made a stand there, intending still to be among the Indians more or less, but to get his support by making a farm. He hopes by settling there to exert some influence for good both to white people who are pushing in that direction, and to the Indians.

Mr Ely left us the first of Mar to visit the region of the Mississippi and St. Croix with a view to make arrangements to remove his family there eventually, and has not returned. Where he is, or what he is doing, I do not know. I presume however, he is at Pokegama making arrangements for procuring a crop, with the intention of removing ~~there~~ the latter part of summer. He was to have been back by the first of May.

I very much regret that our school cannot be in operation.

As to the proposition of the Committee to him to reconsider the subject of dissolving his connection with the Board, I feel no great confidence that they will prevail on him to stay. He has probably gone too far in his plans to recede. I should be glad if he would stay and continue his labours with us. I do not look upon his duty in this case, in the same light he seems to regard it. On his return however, the subject will be laid before him for reconsideration, and the result will be communicated to you as soon, as it can be done. In the mean time you had better keep your eye out for another to fill his place. We cannot do without a school.

I have sent for several books, more perhaps than you may think we ought to ask for. The reason of my sending for some of them is the circumstances of my family. Our children have access to very few books, and we have no way to supply them with suitable reading, but to buy what they do have.

Very truly yours
S Hall

To Rev. S. B. Treat

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, May 22, 1849
Rec'd Jun 16
Ack'd July 24
Morris

La Pointe, Lake Superior,

June 8th 1849.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

In a letter to Mr. Hill two or three weeks ago, I enclosed a note to you acknowledging yours of April 5th. I expected then to be able before this time to consult with my brethren respecting our affairs here, and to send you our joint opinions & suggestions. But as I have not been able to do this, I think I ought to apprise you of our present affairs & prospects without further delay. There may be no other opportunity to send for some time.

Mr. Ely has not yet returned; but letters have been received from him by his family, by which it appears that he is at Pokegama farming and preparing for a crop next fall, with the intention of removing his family there the latter part of the summer. I have no doubt his mind is fully made up to leave the missionary service. Our school has stopped. He may be here soon, and resume his labours in it for a few weeks, as I suppose he does not intend to take his family away till after the Indian payment. But I have little expectation that the school will move forward with any efficiency, until some one can be furnished to take his place.

I am surprised and disappointed at the course Mr Ely has taken. If it had been his intention to leave us so soon, it seemed to me that he should have given earlier notice of his intentions. Ojections were made to his taking a journey to the Mississippi and Pokegama this spring, and he was advised to dispense with, if possible. But he thought it 'indispensible. I could not have given my consent to his going, if he had not declared distinctly his intention to be back in season to commence the school by the time the Indians should return from their sugar making. He should have commenced the first of May, as we expected he would be ready to do. I do not know however but he may have good and satisfactory reasons for his delay. But it is much to be regretted that the school has not been resumed before this time. If it were possible for me to attend to my other duties and teach the school, I should commence it myself. But this seems impracticable. I hope therefore you will do all you can to send us a teacher as soon as you can.

As to the qualifications of a teacher, I do not know that any peculiar qualifications are requisite, more than would be required in a person to do good any where. He should be a person of established religious character and of ardent piety. He should "be a good soldier of Jesus Christ," and one who will "naturally care" for the state of the people for whose benefit he comes; One who is willing to labour for no other compensation, than the inward feeling of satisfaction derived from the consciousness of doing good for Christ's sake. He need not expect even the gratitude of those for whose benefit he labours gratuitously. He should be a discreet, sober, common sense man. He should be impressed with the idea, that if he would do any thing on missionary ground, he has got to work hard, do many things which are unpleasant, and keep steady at one thing. There is some romance about the missionary work while a man is preparing to leave home for a distant field of missionary labour. But this all vanishes before he has been long on the ground. The rest is labour, toil, hard work, discouragement often, which requires great faith, and indomitable perseverance.

In coming to this place a person need not feel that he is going out of the world. There is some society here. The state of things generally is quite different from what it was 12 or 15 years ago, and what it is now far beyond us. There are no very advanced scholars in the school. Most of them are young, and I presume can be managed without difficulty. Besides the day school, he can have opportunity to do good in Sabbath school and in the neighborhood.

I think on many accounts it is most desirable to have a married man. But if such an one cannot be found we will accept of one without a family. And if a man cannot be obtained, send us a female teacher, if you can. A female teacher with good health will do very well. I should add to the list of qualifications, strong nerves, as very desirable at least.

Should you be able to send us a teacher, the sooner he can be got here, the better for us. It is desirable that he should be here by the first of Sept. to obtain a speedy and comfortable passage up this Lake. But it is probable he could obtain a passage through the lake as late as October. I do not know how late vessels will run this season. He should come by way of Detroit & the Sault Ste Marie.

Perhaps I ought to say that some changes will probably be required at Bad River. Mrs Wheeler's health has been poor for some months past. They have thought it might be necessary for them to leave the station for a time and visit their friends in N. England. I hope such a course will not be necessary at present. If they are called away this fall, it will be almost like our deserting the whole field. Miss Wood, Mrs Wheeler's sister is about to leave, as has been for some time expected. She was to have been married yesterday. Mr Wheeler needs more help. He cannot have an efficient school, and attend to other duties required without it.

Very Respectfully yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe
Lake Superior
June 8. 1849
Recd " 22. "
Ansd July 24

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Aug. 16th 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir,

I have had it in contemplation for some time past to write you and make some statements respecting the present state and prospects of our mission which may perhaps aid you in making your annual report to the Board. This however may reach you too late to be of any use for that purpose. I have delayed to do it at an earlier period, waiting week after week for Mr. Ely to return, that I might get his report of the school, and that the mission might act in relation to his dissolving his connexion with the Board. He arrived last week, and on Monday of this week, Mr. Wheeler being here, we had a meeting of the members of the Mission, when we came to the following results in reference to his case, viz.

We would recommend to the Committee to grant Mr. Ely's request for a dismission without further delay, if they have not already acted upon it.

Mr Ely asks for funds sufficient to remove his family and effects from this place to Pukeguma on the Snake River, to procure two cows there, a stove, and fifty dollars with which to procure clothing for his family. We think the request reasonable and recommend to the Committee to grant it.
We have made an estimate of the probable cost of his removal, and of the other expenses contemplated, and recommend that $250 be allowed him for this purpose, with the understanding that he withdraws from the service of the Board and Mission from this time and has no further claim on the Board for support

after this time.

He also asks leave to take for his use a few books which have been purchased with the funds of the Board, a cooking stove which he has used, also his earthen and tin ware, bedding etc. which he has used in his family, and a few joiner's tools. All these articles are not very valuable. We consider this request also seasonable, considering his family and circumstances. He has six children, all young, and not much means beyond his own industry for the support of his family. We recommend therefore that this request be granted.

Mr Ely left his school and the station at the end of Feb. with the consent of the mission, and went to the Upper Mississippi and Snake River, for the purpose of obtaining business, and of making arrangements for removing his family ultimately from this place. It was understood at the time of his leaving, that he was to return by the first of May, and resume his labours in the school, and continue in it till his place could be supplied by another, supposing this could be done before the close of the present summer. Circumstances which he will explain to you, have detained him, and consequently our school has been suspended since he left it in February.

During the time he had charge of the school from July, 1848, till the time when he left it, the whole number of scholars connected with it was 34, and the average daily attendance 16.

The Catholics opened a school at this place last fall, which is taught principally in French, since the commencement of which not many children from Catholic families have attended ours.

We very much regret the necessity for suspending the school as has been done. The school seems to us a very im portant part of our operations here, as giving the mission present and permanent influence. We should have been glad to have retained Mr. Ely in his connexion with us, when it seemed to us that he was filling a station of usefulness. But he does not regard it duty to remain in connexion with the Mission and the Board, & we feel bound therefore to acquiesce in his decision. As he has made his arrangements with respect to removing, with the expectation that the Committee would release him, and that his place would be supplied before this time, it is our opinion that he had better go on and complete his arrangements, and have therefore made the recommendations above. He is expecting to leave soon.

It is indeed a trial of our faith to see our number gradually diminishing, till now our schools are without teachers, and ~~we~~ are reduced to two families. Yet we do not feel that the time has yet come when God calls us to quit our post and leave the field. There is yet work to be done here. On the other hand, we think, for the number in the field, that there never has been a time when the mission could exert more influence than now. There is nothing to cloud our prospects, so far as appears to human view, more than has ever been. The greatest of all is the ignorance, stupidity, sensuality, sin, and degradation of the people. The larger share are still wedded to their idols. We are sure the gospel contains a remedy for the leprosy which so widely prevails. And we see no reason why God cannot, and will not, in his own time, give it power to awaken and save these dying souls, as he has done in thousands of other cases, apparently as hopeless as these. We think our duty is to persevere, and call for more help. We hope therefore that both stations will be re-enforced as soon as they can be. Both need teachers especially.

At the same time our numbers are diminishing, other societies are sending more labourers into other parts of this field. To us it makes but little difference who does the work, if it is only accomplished. The Mission at Red Cedar, and Red Lake has recently been re-enforced and they are about establishing a new station at Little Lake Winepeg. The Methodist society continue their stations at the Ance Kewawenan, Fond du Lac, and Sandy Lake.

The external condition of the Indians at our stations we think is improving. The majority of them are becoming more industrious, and of consequence live more comfortable than they formerly did. They are from year to year enlarging their gardens, & are better supplied with the necessaries of life. They are far better clothed now than they were a few years ago, and a portion of them are supplying themselves ~~are supplying~~ ~~themselves~~ with comfortable and durable habitations. A considerable number now have horses, who but a few years ago possessed no domestic animal except the dog; and some are beginning to learn the value of the cow and ox.

Owing to the want of labourers, and sickness in the mission family, and the pressure of other labours, there has not been a school at Bad River so large a part of the year, as otherwise there might have been. A larger number of families remained near that station last winter, than formerly.

Religious instruction has been given at both our stations as usual during the past year. The number of regular attendants at our meetings is still comparatively small, though rather increasing, than diminishing. There have been no additions to the church during the past year. The members of the Church are generally punctual in their attendance of public worship, and the ordinances of religion. We have had no serious case of discipline. When made acquainted with their duty as Christians, they seem disposed cheerfully to perform it, at least so far as external character is concerned.

What we seem most to need now, as heretofore, is that the quickening, converting, and sanctifying influences of the Spirit be given. We, as the disciples of Christ & professors of his religion, need this unction from on high. The dying mass around us need it, that the dry bones may live. We need it as missionaries, that we may feel suitably the weighty responsibilities resting upon us, and the connexion between our own faithfulness, and the salvation of those dead in trespasses and sins. We do not despair that this blessing may be granted us. Occasionally there seems to be some movement on individual friends. We long to see one general movement among the whole mass. We know God is able to do this thing for us. It is our earnest desire and prayer, that our eyes may see what our hearts have so long desired.

The subject of Temperance we feel to be one of deep interest among us at the present time. By a certain class of people there is a strenuous effort made to introduce the sale of ardent spirits openly. It has not yet been done; but ~~[illegible]~~ very much has been clandestinely disposed of and drank. We have strong laws to protect us, and the influential traders and others are with the missionaries in endeavouring to resist the current of iniquity, which is setting in upon us in this direction. These Indian payments are no help to the morals of our place. We shall probably excite some against us, but we feel that it is our duty to act both as missionaries and citizens, (since we are brought within the pale of the State) to stay the evil. We shall endeavour to act pru—

dently and consistently in whatever we may feel it duty to do, feeling that God only can protect us from the evil.

Aug. 22d.

I have to-day received your several letters of July 24, & 25. I trust we shall all be thankful for your suggestions and kind advice, and that they will be attended to. I have made some effort to obtain a teacher for our school, in this neighborhood but without success. I know not what I can do further. I have heard of a man in Ohio who it is thought might possibly be got, (hired perhaps for a time) by the name of Irwin Nettleton. He lives in Medina, Medina Co. O. His brother-in-law is the farmer for the Indians at Bad River. You might perhaps by writing to Mr. Coe learn all you would wish to know of him. He has a small family. The labours we should require are to teach our school, engage in the Sabbath school, and do all the good he can in our community as a pious layman. He might have a small garden and raise his own vegetables, if he choose. We see no objection to hiring a man to fill this place, if none are to be found who are willing to fill it under an appointment from the Board, and especially as the Government will probably allow us a portion of the school fund if we keep a good school. I hope you will do all you can to furnish us a teacher this fall.

The Indians are now assembled here for their annual payment which will take place in a week or two. Thus far it has been very healthy here during the season. We are not however without apprehension that there may be some cases of Cholera here. There have been several cases of it recently at the Sault Ste. Marie. But I have heard of none on this Lake yet.

I had expected an opportunity to send this letter several days ago. But none has occurred till to-day. It will probably be too late for you to make any use of in your report.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Aug. 16, 22, 1849
Rec'd Sept. 7
Ans'd Sept. 8

La Pointe, Sept. 10th 1849.

Rev S. B. Treat:

80

Dear Sir;

From one expression in your letter of July 24th. I infer that the absense of Mr Ely from this station during the past summer has left an unfavourable impression upon your mind as to the propriety of his conduct in the affair. I am desirous that the matter should be fully and correctly understood, that justice may be done Mr Ely, and also that you may know the grounds on which the mission have acted in his case. And perhaps a brief statement of the whole business from the beginning is the best way to place the subject before your mind in its true light.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe
Sept. 10. 1849
Rec. Nov. 23.
Ans. 17 Dec.

Some days after Mr. Ely's letter to the Committee asking for his dismission, had gone, he gave me a copy of it, accompanied by a note addressed to the members of the mission, stating what he had done. This was the first intimation he had ever given me that he had any intentions of leaving the service of the Board. I have since learnt that he had hinted such a design to Mr. Wheeler and to some others not connected with the mission. I know of no other reasons for his asking a dismission of the Committee before consulting with his associates on the subject, except those given in his letter to them. I have no evidence that it arose from any want of confidence in his brethren. ~~Had~~ he chosen to do so, he might easily have conferred with us on the subject. My impression is, that it was a somewhat hasty movement on his part, on which he did not reflect much, & in which he did not once think he was not conforming to the rules of the Board. The movement may perhaps be considered somewhat characteristic of the man.

Soon after he informed us that he had applied for a release, he stated that it would be necessary for him, in order to carry his plans into effect, to visit the Upper Mississippi country, and wished to obtain our sanction to do so. It was with some reluctance that we gave our consent to the proposal, and not till we learnt from him that such a trip was indispensable. We gave our consent for him to go only on condition that he should be back and ready to commence his school by the first of May, at which it was expected the children would be back after the season for making sugar.

After he arrived at Crow-wing River, where he met Mr. Russell, he entered into an arrangement with him to have the use of his farm at Pokeguma for the present year, expecting the Committee would release him & supply his place by another, so that he could remove in the summer or fall. His arrangement with Mr. R. required him to go to Pokeguma on his way back to this place, and hire men and direct them in regard to the cultivation of the farm the present season. He did not then suppose the arrangement would interfere with his being back here early in May. When he arrived at P. the men necessary to carry on the farm could not be obtained. And instead of throwing up the whole arrangement and returning to his post, he went to work himself and planted his fields, and remained till he could hire men, in consequence of which he did not arrive here till some days into August. ~~had past~~ When he entered into the arrangement, he says he had no expectation that it would prevent his being back here by the first of May.

I think his mistakes lie principally in his being too hasty in his movements. He should have commenced his correspondence with the Committee some months earlier, if he intended to leave this season; and also have made known frankly his plans to his associates and advised with them. He presumed also on the certainty of a release early this summer, not realizing the difficulty of procuring a successor; and I presume his course afterwards was much shaped by this expectation. I think he ought not to have made any arrangement with Mr. Russell, by which he should have felt himself bound to remain at Pokegama after he found he could not hire men in the Spring. And if he was not bound to remain there, as he says he was not, or at least his arrangement did not contemplate his remaining there, then he ought to have left and come home. The interest of Mr. R. and perhaps his own, might have suffered by his leaving; but so has the interest of the mission by his ~~[illegible]~~ absence; and he acknowledges his first duty was here, till he should be released by the Committee. I do not think however, that he had any design to violate his obligations to the Board and the mission; but in the dilemma in which he found himself at Pokegama, he yielded to the pressure of the circumstances in which he unexpectedly found himself. I have no evidence that he acted designedly under the influence of improper motives.

On his arrival here he found no letter, as he expected, informing him of his discharge, and laid the subject before the mission. The result of their deliberations was given you in my letter a few weeks ago.

When he arrived here, and found he was not formally dismissed by the Committee, and that the school was without a teacher, and very likely might remain so during the winter, he said he would give up his arrangement with Mr Russell, and remain here till he should be discharged by the Committee and his place filled, if the mission should so decide. We however after considering the case, decided ~~[illegible]~~ to recommend his immediate release, and his removal this fall. The mission was unanimous in this recommendation. The reasons which induced *me* (I speak only for myself) to come to this decision were these. I understood that it was Mr Ely's wish to be released immediately, if he could be with the approbation of the Committee and the mission. He stated to me that his views of his duty had not changed, and that he still intended to leave the service of the Board, as soon as the Committee could fill his place and release him. I thought therefore, if this opportunity of obtaining business should be lost, a short time hence considerable more time and expense would be consumed in looking for another place of settlement, while his family must receive support from the Board after he should cease to render missionary service. Nearly six months had already been consumed in this way, and some expense additional incurred. His arrangements were already made, and he could not recede from his engagements to others without disappointing them. It was generally understood that he was to leave and had virtually ceased his connexion with the mission. For him to change all his plans after he had gone so far, and remain here, would indicate a fickleness of purpose which seemed to me not very well to comport with missionary character. From these considerations I thought it best for him to remove his family this fall, as he had expected to do, feeling assured that the Committee, if they understood the whole case would approve of the decision. Besides it was necessary to decide then, else it would be too late for him to remove this season. We had some expectation that another teacher might be sent us this fall.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

La Pointe, Nov. 7th 1849

Rev S. B. Treat;

81

Dear Sir,

You may be disposed to censure us perhaps, that we have not before this forwarded our estimate of expenses for 1850. For a month we have been expecting a vessel from below, but no one yet appears. A part of our winter supplies are behind. It is getting too late for vessels to be out on this Lake with safety, and we begin to fear that we shall have no more arrivals by the Lakes this fall. As an opportunity now occurs of sending by the Mississippi, I will forward our estimate, but cannot make our returns of last years expenses until I get intelligence from below. We have had no mail since Aug. I wrote to Mr. Coe in the summer for provisions, but have heard nothing from him or the provisions since.

We have entertained some little hope that we might get a teacher this fall, and have delayed partly on that account to forward our estimate till we might know more on that subject. As we were destitute of a teacher for our school here, and as there was not a prospect that many Indian families would remain at Bad River this winter, we decided that Mr. Wheeler had better remove to this place, and unite his labours with ours here this winter. Accordingly he has just removed his family here, and is himself now in the school. We waited before completing this arrangement till we had given up nearly all hope of seeing any other ~~one~~ person to teach the school this winter, and till the season was so far advance ed, that it was neceſsary for them to remove them, if at all. This arrangement appeared to us to be the best we could make for the time being. We have not yet seen any account of the last meeting of the Board.

Yours truly

S. Hall

P.S. Please to tell Mr Hoit to stop the Herald sent to J. L. Hughes of this place, and charge for 1849 to my account. Mr H. has deceased. (nothing due)

We present the following estimate of expenses for this Mission for 1850.

Station at La Pointe.

Mr. Hall's family, including repairs of buildings, and other incidental and general expenses of the station ---	600.00.	
For school, including books, stationary, fuel & repairs.	30.00	
H. Blatchford's allowance	290.00	
Medicines for Indians	5.00	= 925.00

Station at Bad River.

Mr. Wheeler's family, including repairs of buildings and other incidental and general expenses ------	564.00	
For school, including books, fuel etc.	30.00	
Medicines for Indians ----	6.00	= 600.00
Total ----		$1525.00

This estimate is made from the actual expenses of our families during the past year, and from a careful and detailed calculation of the provisions, clothing, repairs, etc. which will be required to sustain our families and keep our establishments in repair, and carry forward our operations for the year to come on the same general plan which we are now pursuing. To each of our families we have added fifty dollars above the estimate for last year. The reason for our asking more is, that more expense will be incurred this station for repairs, and my family will require more clothing than it was necessary to purchase for the present year's supply. At Bad River it was found that the estimate of last year did not cover the actual expenses of the station.

This estimate is made on the supposition that the number of labourers remain as now. But for both stations we have asked for additional labourers, and hope we may obtain them. Should others be sent us, an additional sum necessary for their support will be required. What this sum may be, we, of course, are unable to judge.

Mr. Wheeler makes the following statements respecting the expenses of his station. "In regard to our expenses for the next year I can only say judging from the past, that our current expenses for our family, the school, necessary repairs on buildings, and work to be done on our farm, would amount to six hundred dollars. I asked for five hundred and fifty dollars last year and drew on the Treasurer for almost six hundred dollars. I lost three head of cattle, one shot by the Indians, and two drowned; part of which I had to replace at an expense additional to what I had anticipated. Our family is increasing somewhat in expense, and six hundred dollars, we think, would no more than sustain us for the year to come, and this must be considered additional to the expense of sustaining a teacher, should one come to our aid."

In behalf of the Mission,

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall,
La Pointe, Nov. 7, 1844
Rec. Jan. 1
at Northr

La Pointe Nov. 10th 1849

Rev S. B. Treat, 82

Dear Sir,

I wrote you two or three days ago, stating that we had had no vessel nor mail for a long time, and had almost despaired of seeing any this fall. This morning a vessel arrived bringing Mr & Mrs Pulcifer and a mail. They have been long detained at the Sault Ste Mary for a passage up the lake. We had your two letters of Aug. 31. & Sept 9. and one from Mr Hill of Sept 7th. I have no time to reply now as the vessel returns immediately.

I enclose our estimate, and my account of funds &c. for the past year. A copy of the estimate you will probably receive some time by the Mississippi, as I have just sent it that way. That letter also will inform that in our despair of getting a teacher this fall, Mr Wheeler removed his family to this place a few days ago to unite his labours with ours for the winter. This arrangement will not hinder him from labouring as effectually for the Indians as if he had remained at Bad River, though now his labours will not be needed in the school.

Please to tell Mr Hill that a matrass was lost from Mr Pulcifer's Goods somewhere between Boston and the Sault Ste Marie, which the forwarders should be required to find. It is called a Bale on the receipt. His other goods arrd safe.

Please also to tell Mr. Hoit to stop Mr. J. L. Hyges Herald ~~and~~ forward one copy for 1850 to Charles H. Oakes, La Pointe, Lake Superior. He has paid me for it. And it is should be charged to our mission.

I am sorry to learn that your health is still feeble. We pray you may be spared to labour in your present office, and that we may still enjoy your counsels and prayers. We are all well at present and are pursuing our accustomed labours. In haste

Very truly yours

S. Hall

P.S. Enclosed is an order which please to hand to Mr Hill.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe
Nov. 10. 1849.
Rec'd Nov. 23. 1849.
Ans'd Dec. 5.

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Oct. 23d 1849.

Henry Hill, Treas. of the A.B.C.F.M.

Dear Sir:

We present the following estimate of expenses for this Mission for the year 1850.

Station at La Pointe.

Mr Hall's family, including repairs of buildings, and other incidental and general expenses of the station	600.00	
For school including books, repairs of school house, fuel, etc.	30.00	
H. Blatchford's allowance	290.00	
Medicines for the Indians	6.00 =	925.00

Station at Bad River.

Mr Wheeler's family, including repairs of buildings, and other incidental and general expenses.	564.00	
For school, including books, fuel &c.	30.00	
Medicines for Indians	6.00 =	600.00
Total		$1525.00

This estimate is made from the actual expenses of our families for the past year, and from a careful and detailed calculation of the provisions, clothing, repairs &c, which will be required to sustain our families, keep our [illegible] establishments in repair and carry forward our operations for the year to come, on the same general plan which we are now pursuing. To each of our families we have added fifty dollars above the estimate of last year. The reason for our asking more is, that more expense will be incurred at this station for repairs, and my family will require more clothing than it was necessary to purchase for the present year's supply. At Bad River it was found that the estimate of last year did not cover the actual expenses of the station.

This estimate is made on the supposition there be no more labourers than now. But for both stations we have asked for additional help, and hope to obtain it. Should others be sent to us, an additional sum necessary for their support will be required. What this sum may be, we, of course, are unable to judge.

Mr Wheeler makes the following statement respecting the expenses of his station. "In regard to our expenses for the next year, I can only say, judging from the past, that our current expenses for our family, the school, necessary repairs on buildings, and work to be done on our farm, would amount to six hundred dollars. I asked for five hundred and fifty dollars last year, and drew on the Treasurer for almost six hundred dollars. I lost three head of cattle, one shot by the Indians, and two drowned, a part of which I had to replace at an expense additional to what I had anticipated. Our family is increasing somewhat in expense, and six hundred dollars, we think, would no more than sustain us for the year to come; and this must be considered additional to the expense of sustaining a teacher, should one come to our aid."

Our estimate of expenses for 1849 was 1,846 dollars. We have expended about $1700. Mr Ely, leaving the station before the close of the year, has not drawn all he would have been authorized to draw, had he continued his connexion with us. Two hundred and fifty dollars have been furnished him for the removal of his family, and to procure clothing and two cows which the mission judged it reasonable to allow him. Besides this Mr Ely's family were supported here until Sept. last. At the commencement of the year he had on hand a supply for his family which lasted till the beginning of summer. The deficiency was supplied from supplies which I had procured.

The following sums have come into my hands during the past year.

1848.	On hand and reported last fall, --	35.00.
Oct.	For a bell sold,	35.00
	For school books sold,	3.25
1849 May 1.	Rec'd of J. S. Livermore of school fund,	500.00.
23.	Draft on H. Hill, Treas. for C. Mendenhall,	80.00
	Mr. Coe's Bill for provisions, etc.	213.52
July	Mr Hill's Bill for Goods etc.	227.00
Aug.	Money received of Mrs. Hall to be invested by Mr Hill,	180.00
	For a small building sold ---	20.00
Nov.	~~[illegible]~~ Messrs Coe's and Handy's Bills	232.60
		$1526.37 over

Brought over	1526.37
Recd J. L. Hughes for Miss Hld for 1849	1.00
	1527.37

Disbursements:

Paid to Mr. Ayer	50.00
" " Mr. Ely	250.00
" " Mr. Wheeler	195.24
H. Blatchford's allowance	290.00
S. Hall's allowance	550.00
Paid to Mr Pulsifer	22.75
Cash on hand	169.38
	$1527.37

Nov 10th Since Mr Pulcifer has arrived we have made an estimate of the probable amount which will be required for his expenses for 1850, and think that three hundred dollars additional to the above will be required for the mission, which we would ask the Committee to allow us.

In behalf of the Mission

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Nov. 23. 1849.
A.
Estimate.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (84-90)

Hall, Sherman
  84. [1849]
  85. 30 June 1848
  86. 6 December 1849
  87. 25 February 1850
  88. 28 March 1850
  89. 28 March 1850
  90. 24 May 1850

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Receipts of Rev. S. Hall.

Apl. 1 to June 30, 1846,	$37.59
〃 Sep. 30, 〃	41.52
〃 Dec. 31, 〃	62.20
〃 Apl. 30, 1847,	41.82
〃 June 30, 〃	35.13
〃 Sep. 30, 〃	38.89
〃 Dec. 31, 〃	76.50
〃 Mar. 31, 1848,	47.22
〃 June 30, 〃	39.58
〃 Sep. 30, 〃	27.69
〃 Dec. 31, 〃	31.09
〃 Feb. 20, 1849,	20.16

Do. of Miss Abby Spooner.

To Mar. 31, 1846,	25. 〃
〃 June 30, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Sep. 30, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Dec. 31, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Apl. 30, 1847,	25. 〃
〃 June 30, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Sep. 30, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Dec. 31, 〃	25. 〃
〃 Mar. 31, 1848,	25. 〃
〃 June 30, 〃	25. 〃

Receipts of
Rev. S. Hall
&
Miss Spooner.

85

The United States, to Abby Spooner, Dr.

Date.		Dolls.	Cts.
	For my services as Teacher for the Chippeways of Lake Superior & the Miſsiſsippi from the first day of Jan. to the 30th day of June, 1846, at the rate of $333.33 1/3 per annum,	166	$66\frac{2}{3}$

Received, at Lapointe June 30, 1846, of Sherman Hall, One Hundred & Sixty six $\frac{66\frac{2}{3}}{100}$ dollars, in full of this account.

Abby Spooner

(Duplicates.)

I certify, on honor, that the above account is correct & just, & that I have actually, this day of 184 , paid the amount thereof.

The United States To Abby Spooner, Dr.

Date.		Dolls.	Cts.
	For my services as Teacher for the Chippeways of Lake Superior & the Mississippi from the first day of May to the 31st day of Dec. 1847, at the rate of $333.33⅓ pr annum,	250	

Received, at Lapointe, Dec. 31, 1847, of Sherman Hall, Two Hundred & fifty dollars, in full of this account.

$ Abby Spooner

(Duplicates.)

I certify, on honor, that the above account is correct & just, & that I have actually, this day of 18 , paid the amount thereof.

The United States, To Abby Spooner, Dr.

Date.		Dolls.	Cts.
	For my services as Teacher, for the Chippeways of Lake Superior & the Mississippi, from the first day of Jan to the 30th of June 1848, at the rate of $\$333.33\frac{1}{3}$ per annum, . .	166	$66\frac{2}{3}$

Received, at Lapointe June 30, 1848, of Sherman Hall, One hundred sixty six $\frac{66\frac{2}{3}}{100}$ dollars, in full of this account.

$

Abby Spooner

(Duplicates.)

I certify, on honor, that the above account is correct & just, & that I have actually, this day of 18 , paid the amount thereof.

The United States, To Abby Spooner, Dr.

Date.		Dolls.	Cts.
	For my services as Teacher, for the Chippeways of Lake Superior & the Miſsiſsippi from the first day of July, 1846, to the 30th of April, 1847, at the rate of $333.33 1/3 pr annum,	250	"

Received, at Lapointe, April 30, 1847, of Sherman Hall, Two hundred & fifty dollars, in full of this account.

$

Abby Spooner

(Duplicates)

I certify, on honor, that the above account is correct & just, & that I have actually, this day of 18 , paid the amount thereof.

Vol. 15

La Pointe Lake Superior
Dec 6th 1849

86

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir;

The accompanying papers will require an explanation. I find myself in a perplexing dilemma with regard to the Educational Fund and the Government. I cannot perhaps make this subject plain to your mind better than by giving a history of the management of this Fund heretofore, and the manner in which the portion of it allowed to the Board has been received and expended.

In the Treaty of 1842 with the Ojibwa Indians of Lake Superior and the Missisippi, the Government stipulated to apply for educational purposes among them $2.000 annually for 25 years, holding the right in their own hands to direct how this fund shall be applied. After the ratification of the treaty, the late Robert Stuart was sent here to enquire into the state of affairs in the country, ~~and among other things,~~ and among other things, as to the manner in which the Educational Fund could be best applied to accomplish its object. He recommended to the Department at Washington to divide it among the several religious societies operating among the Ojibwas on the land ceded; giving to the Am. Board $1.000, and to the Methodists $750, and to the Roman Catholics $250, on condition ~~that they~~ latter should maintain a school, which they had not at the time. He considered this a just division of the funds considering the number of labourers supported in the field and the amount of funds expended by the different societies. The Methodists have never been satisfied with the division of these Funds. The Catholics have never received any, because they have never maintained a school till the past year; and in ~~that~~ the French language only was taught, and the Government declared to patronize it on that account. The recommendation of Mr Stuart was adopted at Washington, the money was forwarded with other monies to fulfil treaty stipulations with these Indians, to the Sub-agent here, and he directed to pay it over to the several societies. The Sub-agent informed me that the money for the first payment was ready and enquired who was authorized to receive it for the Board. I then wrote to Boston in relation to the subject, and received a paper signed by Mr Greene and Mr Hill authorizing me to receive whatever funds the Government chose to put into the hands of the Board for them. Since that time this money has been paid into my hands at the rate of $1000 annually to the close of 1848, and I have receipted to the Sub-agent for it, as I have received it. This was all the instructions that I had from the Board or the War Department on the subject.

Some months after the first payment was made, I received a letter from the 2d Auditor of the Treasury informing me that I was charged on the books of that office with a certain sum of the Educational Fund paid to me by Mr. Hays who was then Sub-agent, and requiring vouchers to show that the money had been expended for educational purposes. I went to Mr. Hays for advice how to proceed, and he told me to make out a form of account (see accompanying paper No. 1.) and have it receipted in regular form by the teachers, and forward it to Washington. I did so, and soon received an answer that the vouchers were accepted, and passed to my credit and the books balanced. I was called upon in the same way several times afterwards, but with no other instructions. The voucher were made out in the same form and accepted. Since 1845 or 46, I have not heard from Washington on this subject, till last summer, when I received another communication calling for vouchers to cover $500 paid to me by J. S. Livermore the present Sub-agent, for the first two quarters

1848. I had ~~gotten~~ receipts signed from time by the teachers, so ~~that~~ in case they wanted any further vouchers at Washington, I might have them ready. I forward those which covered the time for which the money was received. They have been returned with the accompanying letter (see paper No. 2.). I am also informed that I am charged with $3.000 for which accounts have not been rendered. Though I have receipts signed by the teachers for this money, I am required to substitute new vouchers for them because not in the right form to please those in power at Washington. I shall be obliged if possible therefore to obtain Miss A. Spooner's signature to the accompanying receipts, which account and receipt are made according to a form sent me from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. I request therefore that you would forward the papers to Miss S. and see that they ~~papers~~ are properly executed, and then forward them to me.

There are some other things also to which I would like to direct your attention connected with this business. I am required to "certify *on honor*, that the above account is correct and just, and that I have *actually* paid the amount thereof." Now the fact is, I have never *in form* paid any of this money ~~of~~ to the teachers as a compensation for teaching the schools. The money has been used as any other money of the Board at my disposal has been, and the teachers have had their support at the expense of the Board. I am not certain that it will not require a little stretch of conscience to make that certificate. At any rate if I am to receipt for any more of the Educational Funds, under the present rules of the Department, I should wish to have the *form* of applying it different, corresponding more in fact to the language of the certificate. As for the past I suppose we must get out of it the best way we can.

I do not see the propriety of requiring all these vouchers. We are required to report our schools annually which

I have endeavoured to do honestly. Besides this the Government keep a Sub-Agent here a part of whose duty is to inform himself with respect to the character of the schools and report from time to time. But I suppose to reason with those at Washington on the subject would be labour thrown away. That they should in fact make me a disbursing officer of the Government, is an honor which I do not covet.

There another thing also which has struck me as proper to be looked at. For a number of years back the Board have received something from the General School Fund in consideration of the schools which have been kept at this place. Vouchers are required quarterly of the teacher of our school, who ~~for services rendered to~~ signs a receipt for pay from the Treasurer of the Board for teaching the school, ~~for~~ covering the same time that he is receiving pay also from the Educational Fund. These receipts are necessary to Mr Hill in order to draw these funds at Washington. The receipts for the same time are necessary to me also in order to receive from the Ed. Fund. Now if they take pains to look into this subject at Washington, these vouchers will look as if they were paying for our school twice. It is possible they may charge us with a want of Christian integrity, if we proceed in this way. If you say all the funds allowed do not more than support the schools of the Board here, then it ought to be so understood at Washington, if it is not now.

With regard to the future, I think a different division of the Ed. Fund will be made, unless we keep more schools. In consequence of our school stopping last summer, the Sub-Agent declines to pay us any more till he can get instructions from Washington. He has stated the case and is waiting for instructions. The Methodists have now three schools and we only two. The Catholics have suspended theirs.

Please to show this to Mr Hill who has had much experience in these matters. Advice and instruction will be gratefully received.

No. 2.

Copy

Department of Interior
Office of Indian Affairs
Sept 15, 1849.

Sir;

The 2d Auditor of the Treasury, having referred to this Office your letter to him of the 15th Ultimo, with the enclosed receipts, I in answer have to state that the Rules of the Department require that the allowances granted to the different Societies for educational purposes among the Indians shall be accounted for on regular accounts and vouchers, that is, evidence shall be furnished that the money is expended by the Society for the purpose for which the allowance is made. As the vouchers sent on by you do not contain that evidence, they are returned. If the payment to the teachers, as shown by the receipts, were for services rendered by them in that capacity, new vouchers should be substituted expressing it. I enclose the forms requisite for you to use.

Very Respectfully
Your Obt Servant
Orlando Brown

Rev. S. Hall
Lapointe Wis.

Correctly

[illegible] Dec. 6. 1849
Rec'd Feb. 15
Ans'd March 22

I would say further that I see no impropriety in presenting accounts for rents of schoolhouse, [illegible] &c, superintendence of school, etc. both here and at Bad River, if the Government are willing to allow them. These items do not profess to be provided for ~~by~~ in the allowance of Ojibwa Education Fund.

We are pursuing our labours regularly at present, and with prospects not more discouraging than usual. For some time past our Indian service had been rather better attended than usual. I should be glad to have these papers returned as soon as convenient.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

P.S. Perhaps it may be well to have duplicates of these papers signed, one copy being retained at Boston in case of the other be lost.

Please to procure for me a gold pen and enclose it a letter. I have a holder.

Lapointe, Lake Superior
Feb. 25th 1850.

87

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Dec. 6th was received a few days ago. We were glad to learn ~~that~~ your health was improving. We hope it may be fully restored, and that you may be allowed to discharge your useful and laborious duties at the Missionary House for a long time to come.

Since I last wrote you, by the blessing of a Kind Providence, the mission families have all enjoyed comfortable health, and we have been pursuing our labours as usual. The School has been well attended and has done well under the instructions of Mr. Pulsifer. I think he will prove himself a useful and diligent ~~and~~, ~~useful~~ labourer ~~with~~ us. The number of attendants ~~at~~ the Indian service has been rather on the increase lately. More of those who attach themselves to us are here at this time than usual. They are now about to resort to their sugar camps, and will be scattered in the woods for some time to come. Henry Blatchford proposes to go and stay in their camps with them. It is difficult for him to get about while the snow is on the ground on account of his lameness. But I am glad to see him propose cheerfully to make the sacrifice and effort necessary to stay among them for their good. Some few appear unusually willing to be instructed who have not till recently attended our meetings. One young man we think gives evidence of piety, who we hope before long to receive into the church. The state of the public mind among the Indians never appeared more favourably inclined towards us, ~~than~~ at present, so far as we can judge. Our English services are attended by most of the Protestant white population here.

But as to our prospects for the future it is not easy to say what they are. The Indian Agent at this place was officially informed a few days since, that it was in contemplation at Washington to remove the Indians soon from the ceded territory. He was ordered to ~~discontinue~~ dismiss the farmer at Bad River, which will deprive the Indians of aid from Government in plowing their ground next spring. The Indians have been informed of this, but they manifest no great excitement. In the treaties of 1837 & and 1842, they agreed to remove when they should be required by government, though they did not expect to be called upon to do so, at least till the time they should receive the last payment for their land.

What course the Government will take to remove them we have no information. It is thought that a proposition will be made to them by the Government to sell the rest of their lands, east of the Mississippi, and that they will locate the Ojibwas somewhere about the head waters of that river or to the west of it. It is stated also that the Indian Agency will be removed from this place to some point on the Mississippi. Of course the annuity payments will be made there, when that is done. It is said that they may be removed next season. But this seems to me to be impossible.

How they will be affected in case the Government actually order them to remove, I do not know. I am inclined to think, that if a conciliating course is pursued with them that most of those about this place will make no resistance. If they are removed, some provision ought to be made by the Government for their settlement, more than is provided by any former treaties. They need more aid in farming and building than there is now any provision for.

How this change, if it takes place, will affect missionary operations among them, remains yet to be seen. It may operate favourably in the end. It seems to me that it must operate to concentrate them more. It may be that it will have a tendency to civilize them, and may protect them more from the pernicious influence of the worst class of White men. At present the Government cannot protect those on the ceded lands from the terrible influence of the whiskey trade. It appears to be the object of the Government to maintain military posts on the Mississippi, ~~in the neighborhood of the Mississippi,~~ in the neighborhood of the Indians already settle there, for the purpose in part to execute the intercourse laws with respect to the whiskey trade.

It is thought by some that the Indians will not be required to remove from this immediate vicinity immediately, as there are no inhabitants who urge their removal. The land is not wanted for settlement. Most of those here would prefer ~~that~~ they remain on account of the fish and fur trade.

Should these changes take place, what will be our duty? I feel this to be a question of no small interest. It looks like a great undertaking to break up and abandon every thing here, and remove 500 or 600 miles further into the wilderness, and commence every thing anew, at my age. To go through again all the labour and hardship and difficulty which I had to encounter to get established here, I hardly feel as if I, or my wife, could endure. But on the other hand I cannot think of abandoning the Indians, especially at this crisis. They already begin to enquire "What will you do, if we ~~must~~ go? To whom shall we look for instruction if you leave us? We shall all go back to where we once were." And what shall we tell them? That we can do no more for you because it will cost sacrifices?

It seems to me wrong to give them up as lost, if there is any hope of saving some of them. I fear there ~~is~~ not the deep sympathy, and care, and prayers for the Indians ~~that there~~ ought to be. Another thing to be considered is ~~that~~ we have the means of operating among them now, which we had not a few years ago. It must require a good deal of time in a new missionary to acquire the knowledge of their language and customs, and the experience which we have acquired. We have books both for schools, and for communicating religious instruction. These books will be of little use to them unless they have teachers to use them, and learn them to read them. It seems to me that there is no doubt but that there will be field enough to operate in, but like their land, it may be barren and hard to cultivate as it always has been. I cannot but hope however that it will not always be so. There is a Power that can turn the heart of the blind and sensual Indian to himself. I cannot relinquish the idea that the day will come, when God will pour out his Spirit & many of them will be born again.

The thought has occurred to me, that in case the object of the Government should be to draw the Indians away to the Mississippi or beyond, whether it would not be best to remove our station somewhere into that region, as soon as the Indians should begin to move that way, and to encourage the Indians who attach themselves to us, to remove with us. The Catholic influence at this place is a pretty formidable obstacle to us. I would be glad to get out of its reach if I could. In case we find it necessary to break up here, we might hope to feel less of its power at some other place. I think it would be well to keep our eye out, and look early for a good location. At no point probably would there like to be concentrated so many French and half-breed Catholics as at this place.

My family is another objection to my moving farther away from the abodes of civilization. On the subject of missionaries' children, the Committee invite us to speak freely. I have often thought of introducing the subject to you, with respect to ours, but have felt a reluc tance to trouble you with it unnecessarily.

We have five children between the ages of 18 and eleven years. The oldest and youngest are daughters and the others sons. Their education has been much neglected for the want of suitable schools, and from the multiplication of cares & labours on the hands of their parents, which have prevented us from giving them the attention to their education at home, which we could wish. They ought to have different advantages for their education from any they can have here. You of course are well aware of what are the morals in a heathen and semi-barbarous community. I think the hazard to the morals of our children, especially of our sons, is too great, for us to think of keeping them here much longer, and especially of removing them farther from civilized society. There is no business here to form a suitable occupation for them for life. There is nothing but the Indian trade which offers for a living, unless they should sink down to the level of the French and half-breed voyageurs & fishermen. There are no examples of enterprise to excite and instruct how to make themselves any thing. The highest ambition of almost every one here is to supply his natural wants in the best manner he can without working for it, and if he is lucky enough to obtain any thing, to eat it up and waste it as soon as he can. They have no idea of the value of property, and never expect to possess any. It would be a trial beyond endurance to see our children form connexions for life with such as they could find for companions in this Indian Country. And what security that they might not do it, if they were to remain here? If they see no better society, how can they appreciate the value of better? I have seen many connexions of this kind formed which proved any thing but happy, by persons brought up in very different society.

Very few of those who have been employed as Indian traders, have ended with a good character, good morals, or with property. Most of these contract indolent habits, and in a few years are unfit for any other business, while they have a miserable Indian family growing up around them.

You may ask wether I have any plan matured to suggest to you. I have none and do not know what is best to be done. But the subject has been one of anxious thought for some time past.

I wrote you a few weeks ago respecting the school appropriation requesting ~~the~~ signiture of Miss A. Spooner to some receipts, and instructions from you. I hope the communications will be duly attended to.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Feb. 25. 1850
Rec'd April 6
Ans'd April 19.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
March 28th 1850

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

In my last letter, I informed you that the Indian Sub-agent at this place had had official information that it was in contemplation to remove the Indians residing on the ceded lands in this region to those which remain unsold, farther to the north and west, during the coming season. He has just received an order from the President of the U. States revoking the privileges granted by their treaties of remaining temporarily on their ceded lands, and requiring them to remove early next summer. The question is therefore settled, ~~that~~ an attempt is to be made for their immediate removal. Enclosed is an extract from the Instructions of Gov. Ramsay relating to their removal, which the Sub. agent here, J. S. Livermore Esq. has permitted me to copy. It will inform you of the present intentions and policy of the Government towards the Ojibwas.

Those on the ceded lands are to be removed without delay. The Sub. Agency is to be removed from this place to some point on or near the Miſsisippi. Sandy Lake is the place designated. It is about 200 miles from this place. The annuities are to be paid in future on the Miſsisippi. Farmers, mechanics, and schools supported by the Government and under their direction, for the benefit of the Indians, so far as practicable are to be placed west of that river. The policy of the Government is to remove all the Indians now residing on the east side of the Miſsisippi, to the west of it as soon as it can be accomplished. This policy has been announced in several of the annual reports of the Commissioner of Indian affairs.

With regard to schools, the Government intend to take them more under its direction than they have been heretofore. The also intend to support those of a different character. They are to be conducted on the manual labour system. Another feature in this policy is to concentrate the Ojibwas more, and bring them to feel and act more as a single tribe. Heretofore they have been divided into separate bands, in a measure independent of each other and having many separate interests.

Whatever we may think of this policy, if we wish to continue our missionary efforts for the Ojibwas, we had better conform to it. In its main features I see little to object to it. Any thing which will concentrate the Indians more, and unite them in their interests will operate favourably towards civilizing and Christianizing them.

The removal of the Indians will of course break up our establishments here and at Bad River. The question before us is, What is next to be done? Shall we abandon the Indians and leave the field? or shall we remove with them and seek new locations some where else, and try to instruct and save them? In reply we say we are not ready to abandon them at this crisis. They need our sympathy and encouragement now if ever. We must stay by them at least till we see what can be done. Their removal does not discourage us. If they remove, I think in a short time, they will again become settled, contented and satisfied with their new homes. Their removal may in the end result in their decided benefit, and give us an influence over them which we have never had.

As to schools, in future if we receive aid from the Government funds, we must conduct them on a different plan from what we have done heretofore. They must be on the manual labour system. You will perceive that the Government are disposed to give ~~the preference to~~ the preference to those societies whose establishments are broken up by the removal of the Indians, and who have operated longest in the country, if they are disposed to fall in with their views, and participate in the system of schools which they propose; and that they are disposed to place in the hands of ~~these~~ societies, the "charge of any manual labour schools that may be put in operation, or constitute them their benevolent agents in the expenditure of any of their funds which can be so applied."

Do the Committees approve of the plan of manual labour schools? and are they disposed to co-operate with the Government in carrying their plans here into execution? We all think favourably of them, provided the Government will bear a considerable proportion of the expense. We are somewhat tired of the system we have heretofore pursued. By it we have been able to benifit but a limited number, and many of these to no great extent. The nearly universal opinion in this country is in favor of Manual labor schools.

If we are disposed to co-operate with the Government in any such schools as they propose, we ought to move in it without delay. I propose therefore to meet Gov. Ramsey, who is Superintendent for Minnesota and to whom this business will be principally entrusted, at Sandy Lake where he is to meet the Sub-agent on his removal about the first of June, and consult with him on this subject, and get definite propositions from him. At the same time I hope to learn more definitely what are the details of carrying the present policy of the Government towards the Indians into effect. It will also be a favourable time to make examinations and enquiries respecting suitable places for the future location of our stations, if we continue to prosecute missionary operations in the country.

In my last letter I mentioned the subject of my family, and expressed a desire to give my children some advantages for education, if possible, which they cannot have here. As these movements will break us up and leave us unsettled for a year at least, perhaps more, I have thought of the plan of taking them to the N. England States in the summer or fall, and see if places cannot be found there for them for the present. What would the Committee think of this plan? What expense will they be willing to incur towards their removal and education. It would cost but little more probably, to support our children then, and give them opportunities for school which they cannot have here, than it will here, aside from their transportation, for a limited period. I expect to be necessarily absent from my family a considerable part of the time, if we remove with the Indians, until we become again settled.

Mr Wheeler has been for some time past wishing to visit the eastern States with his family. The present seems to afford a favourable opportunity, and he is expecting to go during the summer. He has probably communicated his wishes to you on this subject before this.

I hope this may reach you with no very long delay, and that you will give these subjects your attention as early as you can conveniently, and inform us of the views and wishes of the Committee. In the absence of their instructions we shall have to act on our own judgment, but shall be careful not to commit ourselves to any measures till we have their views.

Very truly Yours

S. Hall

Extract from the ~~Superintendent~~ Commissioner of Indian Affairs to Gov. Ramsey.

"The policy of the measure here referred to, is announced in my late annual report, and its execution during the present year has been determined on. Enclosed is a copy of an order ~~of~~ of the President revoking the privileges given temporarily to the Chippeways by article 5th of the treaty of July 29th 1837, and article 2d of ~~that~~ of Oct 4th 1842, in the one case of "hunting, fishing, and gathering the wild rice upon the lands, rivers, and the lakes, included in the territory ceded"; and in the other "the right of hunting on the ceded territory, with the other usual privileges of occupancy, until required to remove by the President of the United States." The order of the President, you will perceive, requires also the removal of the Indians to their own territory: and it is desirable ~~that~~ this be accomplished, and the Indians comfortably settled, as early in the season as practicable, so as to become accustomed to and satisfied with their new homes develop sources of subsistence, and be otherwise prepared, as well as may be, for the ensuing winter. You will therefore be pleased to take the proper measures to have the Chippeways on the ceded lands within your superintendency, notified of the order of the President, and that they must be prepared for removal at such time as you may deem it best to fix upon for them to go."

This measure renders necessary and proper the removal of the Sub Agency at La Pointe, to some proper position on the Mississippi: ~~and You,~~ will please designate the prop or points on or near the Mississippi - either east or west of it - for the establishment of the Agency: and give the necessary directions as to the time and manner of removal &c.

The Indians should be given distinctly to understand, that there will be no further payments of annuities at La Pointe; but that hereafter they will be paid, and all the goods and provisions to which they are entitled be distributed on the Mississippi: and that those who do not remove to, and remain permanently within their own country will not be allowed to participate therein: as if they do not conform to their treaty obligations, they will forfeit all right so to participate.

Those removed should be encouraged to settle as near the Mississippi as practicable, and if possible on the west side of it - it being the policy of the Department, as at present informed, to endeavour to concentrate them west of that river, where as far as expedient and proper, it is intended to locate their farmers and mechanics, and also the schools which may be established for their benefit.

It is the desire of the Department to bring about some arrangement by which all the Chippeways may benefit equally in the annuities - money, goods and provisions, and other objects of a beneficial character, secured, or which may hereafter be secured to them by treaty: that with the means provided in the treaties for education, farmers, mechanics &c. with such addition as may be practicable to make thereto, out of the Civilization fund, a general system applicable to, and including all, may be devised and put into operation for their benefit and improvement: and that the whole tribe be so far concentrated and located in suitable and advantageous positions, as to receive the greatest practicable amount of benefit from such a system. It is believed that a prominent feature in this system should be the establishment of man ual labour schools; so far as the funds applicable will admit—to be placed in the charge of missionary societies, like those now elsewhere in successful operation to the great advantage of the Indians. By this measure, it is thought, a far greater amount of good will be accomplished, especially for the rising generation of the Chippeways, than by the system hitherto pursued, of apportioning the funds among different missionary Societies to be expended as they might deem best—one in one way, and another in a different way—without any well defined and progressive plan, prescribed by the Department: and by which it is feared comparitively little good has been done, considering the amount expended, though the Department is satisfied that the societies and those employed by them, that have been so commendably engaged in this good work have laboured with great disinterestedness and zeal. As the removal of the Indians will of course break up the stations in the ceded territory, and put a stop to the missionary labors there, ~~th~~ ~~Societies~~, the societies in whose charge they are, will have the best claim to participate in any new system that may be devised: And the Department is every way disposed to place in their charge any manual labour schools that may be put in operation, or to constitute them its benevolent agents in the expenditure of any of the funds that can be so applied.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, March 28, '50

Recd - May 1.
Ansd - May 8.

La Pointe. Lake Superior,
90 May 24th 1850

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

Yours of March 22d was received yesterday. The vouchers I hope will give satisfaction at Washington, at least I think they ought to do so. I think there will be no difficulty in regard to receipting for the school money in future. I think your suggestions will satisfy all the members of our mission. The point of the greatest difficulty in my mind has been in relation to making a charge for the same teacher and the same time both to the Civilization fund and to the Ojibway Educational fund, especially if we receive from the latter a fair compensation for a teacher's services. As to superintendency, school house rent, books &c. there can be no question as to the propriety of making a charge to the Government. If you have received my letters you will have learnt that the Government will require a change in the plan of our schools if they appropriate to them any part of the Ojibwa school fund in future. Nothing has yet been paid us for our school since the close of 1848. I shall present an account for what time the schools have been kept and try to get it.

As to our prospects in future I know little more than I communicated in my last letter. The Government are taking measures to remove the Indians. but so far as we are informed they appear to be moving slow. Until we know more of their plans and movements, we think best to make no movement ourselves but keep quietly on with work as we have done. The excitement among the Indians is not very great, though most of them say they shall not go this year at least. It is my present purpose to visit the country to which they are to be removed, as soon as we ascertain where the agency is to be located, and the farmers and mechanics are to be placed. I shall endeavour to keep you informed of all movements and plans as much as possible. In the mean time we hope to receive replies to the communications which have been sent, that we may be aided by your counsel and instructions.

As to your enquiry about Mr Morris, I know of no person by that name, who has ever been employed as interpreter for the Government or any one else in this country. Indeed I have no recollection of ever having heard of a person of that name residing any where in the Indian Country since I have been here. There was a person at this place last summer for some two months who called himself Morrison. He came here from the St. Croix. He said he originated from Vermont, I think in the N. west part; that he had travelled pretty extensively in the western States, and had been a Methodist preacher, but here made no pretentions to religious character. Mr Wheeler employed him a few days to labor for him. Mr Ely knew him last Spring on the St Croix and Snake River, as engaged in selling whiskey to Indians and said he was considered there as ready to engage in any thing. He was engaged, it was supposed, in secretly selling whiskey to the Indians at the time of payments along with many others of the same character. The impression left on our minds by what we saw of him was, that he was a person of no moral character, and was not to be trusted, and that he would be as likely to obtain money on false pretenses as in any other way. He was a person of very good appearance, had considerable command of language and a full toned voice. We suspect that it is the same person who has been at Plymouth, and about whom Mr Pulsifer's friends have written us, saying that he stated that he was acquainted with us, and spoke of our mission &c. He told some one, as it is reported, that he intended to go below and go to preaching.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

Rev. Sherman Hall

La pointe - May 24. /50

Recd June 12. 1850

Lapointe Wis.
May 24th

Free S. Hall P.M.

Rev Selah B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston
Mass

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (91-97)

Hall, Sherman
- 91. August 1850
- 92. 30 December 1850
- 93. 24 February 1851
- 94. 10 March 1851
- 95. 24 March 1851
- 96. 15 May 1851
- 97. 19 May 1851

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Lapointe Lake Superior
Aug 1850.

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir.

In April last an order was received by the then Indian Subagent, J. S. Livermore, at this place, from the President of the United States, to the Ojiwa Indians residing on lands which they have ceded to our Government in this region, to hold themselves in readiness to remove from the same, according to treaty stipulations, whenever they should be called upon to do so. At the same time they were informed that it was the purpose of the Indian Department to remove them early the present summer. This arrangement, of course when carried into effect would break up our mission establishments here and at Bad River, and compel us also to remove to some other portion of the Ojibwa country, or abandon them altogether. The latter alternative we did not feel prepared to adopt. If anything more can be done to benefit and save them, we felt that, at this crisis of their affairs, we were not at liberty to leave them.

They were ordered to remove to lands which yet belong to them lying to the west and north of those sold, and already occupied by other bands of the same tribe. Where the bands to be removed should be settled, and to what point the mission ought be removed, appeared to us questions of considerable moment, and required to be carefully examined both by the Agents of the Government and by the mission. There were other questions of importance to the mission to be settled before we should take any decided steps towards commencing anew in any other place. The Department had informed us that if we are aided in supporting our schools in future from the funds of the Government, they must be changed into manual labour schools. The mission was desirous to ascertain what character they would be required to give these schools, and to what extent they would be patronized by the Government. In order to settle these questions it was thought best for the mission to confer with the Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Minesota, ~~and Gov. of the Territory~~, Alex. Ramsey, Gov. of Minesota, in connexion with the Sub agent for the Ojibwas.

As they were to perform a tour of exploration ~~thro~~ of the Ojibway country in the early part of the summer for the purpose of deciding the point where the Sub agency should be located, and the points most suitable for the future location of the bands to be removed, we thought it a favourable time for a delegation from the mission to meet them, and confer with them on these subjects. We were also desirous to explore the country ourselves, and to ascertain if possible, ~~[illegible]~~

~~ascertain~~ the most desirable places for the establishment of future mission stations, and where there were lands suitable for tillage, and other facilities for living, ~~and~~ where we might properly encourage Indians to settle. John S. Watrous Esq. who had been recently appointed to the Sub-agency of the Ojibwas arrived here on the first of June, and informed us that he intended to meet Gov. Ramsey on the Mississippi as soon as possible. I immediately resolved to accompany him, and informed Mr Wheeler who had made arrangements to visit the country about the Upper Mississippi about this time. During this tour of a little more than five weeks I kept the following journal, which is now submitted to your inspection.

June 5th 1850.

Having made arrangements for a journey to the Upper Mississippi, I left La Pointe this morning, accompanied by Mr Wheeler and two French voyageurs. Our craft was an Indian bark canoe just large enough to carry ourselves, & our necessary traveling baggage and provisions. Whoever travels in this wilderness, must carry with him his tent, and his provisions with utensils for cooking them on the way, and whatever else in the shape of comforts, or protection from storms and weather he may expect to enjoy. He will often travel several days in succession without seeing a human being besides his own traveling companions; and if he should meet any, very few will be found to poſseſs any thing which they can impart for his subsistence or comfort. Joseph G. Norwood M.D. of Indiana, who has been employed as one of the Geological Corps under the United States Government for making geological examinations of these northwestern regions for several seasons past, left La Pointe at the same time with us, to coast around to the north shore of Lake Superior, to make some new examinations in that region. Mr Watrous, United States Subagent for the Ojibway Indians was also in company. Each of these travelled in his own canoe. We started a little before the other canoes. Doct. N. came up with us at the Detour ten miles from Lapointe.

We stopped at Raspberry River for dinner. Started from there at 2 o clock P.M. While we were stopping Mr Watrous paſsed us making from point to point acroſs the bay without our noticing him. We saw his canoe after rounding the point, but did not know who it was. Supposed him still behind.

During the forenoon the weather was fine. The sun broke out from behind the clouds which had obscured it in the morning, and shone in all the lovelineſs of June; the winds were hushed to silence, there were no rolling swells, and scarcely a ripple to ruffle the mirror like surface of the clear and beautiful lake. About noon however there sprang up a light breeze from the east. As we put out upon the lake after dinner, we hoisted a blanket which we had rigged for a sail, and ran before it nearly all the afternoon. The wind and sea had so increased by the time we reached Siskawet Bay, that we were on the point of putting ashore. Our small canoe and heavy load we began to fear rendered it unsafe to contend with the heavy swells. The wind however lulling a little we held out and crossed the bay, and having rounded Bark Point we found a smoother sea on the other side, where the wind now came partly quartering from the land. We proceeded on to Cranbury River before encamping, at which place our friends had arrived some time before us. We reached their encampment at 9 o'clock P.M.

6. Soon after we were encamped last night, it began to rain, and the wind shifted to the N.E. For several hours it rained very hard. This morning arose early and found a heavy surf rolling into the bay before a strong north east wind. A dense fog lay upon the lake most of the forenoon. We were wind bound. About noon the clouds and fog began to dissipate and the sea to run down. At two o'clock P.M. the swells had so much subsided that we commenced loading our canoes. I was obliged to stand in the water to the depth of two to three feet to hold the bow of the canoe to the waves as they came to the shore, to prevent it from filling and being broken, while the men put in the lading. The water felt as cold as if filled with ice. I was obliged to stand there some fifteen or twenty minutes. I then embarked thoroughly wet to

the middle and cold, with no opportunity to change my wet clothes.

After passing beyond the point which had sheltered us from the direct action of the wind during the forenoon, and by which the swells had been much broken, we found them still rolling long and heavy. Soon the wind shifted to the west. It had been blowing from the North and east during the preceding night and forenoon. The wind blew slightly, but enough to produce a cross sea, and ~~produce~~ give a very uncomfortable motion ~~of~~ to the canoe. Mr Wheeler was sick. I had to take the bow of the canoe and perform the duties of a voyageur in order to keep up with those travelling with us. We arrived at the Brulé River about sundown, and there encamped for the night. This place is sixty five or seventy miles from La Pointe, and a little more than twenty from Fond du Lac at the place where the St Louis river enters the Lake. At this place the Rev Mr Pitezel, of the Saut Ste Marie, superintendent of the Methodist missions among the Ojibwas came to our camp about eleven o'clock at night. He was on his return from his annual visit to their stations at Fond du Lac and Sandy Lake, and had been detained during the day at the mouth of the St. Louis by the wind and sea. In the evening he embarked and came on.

7. Rose early this morning and were in our canoes at four o'clock. A slight breeze was blowing down the lake when we started. By nine o'clock it

had died away into a calm. The heavy swells which were rolling yesterday had subsided, and the water in the great bay which forms the western extremity of Lake Superior, as we passed over it, was as smooth as a mirror. The water near the shore and for some distance out was turbid in consequence of the late storm. The water in this part of the lake is less transparent than it is further down, owing to the quantity and color of the water discharged here from the St. Louis. This is the largest river whose waters are discharged into Lake Superior.

We arrived at the entry of the river at noon and were now ninety miles from home. At this point we parted company with Dr. Norwood who contined to coast around to the north shore of the lake. There were a few Indians encamped at this point, obtaining their subsistence by fishing. Just before we entered the river, the wind sprang up from the north west and contined to blow all the afternoon, giving us a strong head wind to contend against. The sun beat upon us hot and powerful all day. We reached the trading post and mission twenty miles from the lake about seven P.M.

This place was formerly a mission station of the Am. Board. After the Board withdrew, it was chosen as a station by the Methodist society who have occupied it most of the time for seven or eight years past. Rev J. W. Holt is the present missionary. He and his predecessors have met with many difficulties and discouragements in the progress of their labours there. So unpromising is the field at this time, that they have resolved to abandon it for the present, and we found Mr Holt making preparation to leave and join the station at Sandy Lake. They have suffered many annoyances from the Indians from time to time, besides difficulties which have arisen in the mission itself in consequence of the improper conduct of interpreters in their employment. Some of the Indians here profess to be Catholics, and very few are disposed to listen to the gospel, or appreciate the labours of a missionary.

8 Having spoken last evening for some men to help us across the portage around the falls and rapids in the St. Louis River, we made preparation for moving this morning. We reduced our baggage as much as we could, changed our canoe for one more suitable to ascend rivers in, and left all we thought not necessary for our voyage. When we got our baggage arranged and thought we were ready to embark, and came to call for our men, we found a part were missing. They had probably thought of some way in which to spend the day more agreeably than in packing a heavy load over the hills and through the mud of the portage. Others had to be procured in their place, which delayed us for some time, and we did finally leave the village of Fond du Lac till two o'clock.

The foot of the rapids, which is the limit of canoe navigation, is about two miles above the village of Fond du Lac. The portage commences here. Our baggage was divided into packs. Each man tied his pack and arranged for a march. The portage commences with a high bluff which must be ascended at an angle of forty five degrees. Two men took the canoe, and each one of the rest his pack weighing from 100 to 150 pounds. Those who carry canoes across portages usually move on a trot or pace, and of course at a more rapid rate than a common walking gate. The packers follow each other in single file, a portage road being nothing else than a single foot path, usually crooked and obstructed by brush and fallen trees. The sun was pouring upon us a powerful heat. We had a number of high hills to ascend and descend. Each portage is divided into a convenient number of stopping places called *poses*. The packers proceed about one third, or one half a mile and then throw off their packs and rest. When we reached the upper end of the Grand Portage, it was nearly five o'clock. We immediately dismissed our packers, and prepared to embark. About sundown we reached the foot of Knife Portage, a distance of two or three miles from the head of Grand Portage, and much of it rapid water. It was Saturday, and we made our camp with a view to remain over the Sabbath.

9 Sabbath. We have remained in camp today, Mr. Watrous remaining with us. We were all tired last night and seemed to need a day of rest to recruit our exhausted energies. It was not an arbitrary command of Jehovah, so much as a merciful provision of his government, adapted to the physical and moral wants of man, that we should look at in forming ~~a~~ the estimate of our obligations to keep the

Sabbath. We need it, and the comand originated in his care for us.

A little before sundown I noticed that a part of our baggage had been removed, and on examination found that our men, unbeknown to us and contrary to our wishes, had taken it and our canoes across the portage, a distance of a mile and a half. They were Catholics, whose sabbath closes at the usual time for closing public service in their churches on the afternoon of the Sabbath. We regretted this circumstance as some may think they did this with our approbation.

10. We were up this morning at half past three, and commenced carrying our things across the portage. On returning myself to our camp for a second load, as I was stepping down a steep bank, my foot slipped, and I sprained my ankle badly. It soon swelled and became painful. I was scarcely able to use it on that and the following day.

We employed about fourteen hours in labour during this day, and advanced a good distance. The St. Louis is a beautiful stream on that part which we have travelled to-day. The land on the Grand Portage appears to be of a good quality a part of the way. The timber on the better portion of it is pine, maple, oak, and various other kinds of hard wood and indicating by the size a strong soil. We noticed some apparently good portions of land on the river above the portage, though much of an inferior quality. Much of the land on the shore above the Grand Rapids is covered with the aspen, basswood, elm, some white oak and various other species of timber. The timber generally did not appear to indicate a very fertile and productive soil.

11. This evening we reached the east end of the Sa

vanna Portage. This portage is estimated at seven miles in length, and is celebrated for being difficult to pass on account of its low swampy ground. We reached the junction of the East Savanne and the St Louis at 10 o'clock this forenoon. This river is narrow and crooked, in the lower part flows with a considerable stiff current though it has no rapids, and is considerably obstructed by logs. The upper part is more sluggish, and flows through a grass valley with an exceedingly winding crooked course. There is little timber on its banks, and the country in its vicinity appears to be poor. The grass valley as near as we could judge, is from 40 to 80 or 100 rods wide, and the river passes continually from side to side.

The land on the St. Louis, at least so far as indicated by the timber, appeared better to-day than that which we passed yesterday in the afternoon. I should judge that there are sections of good land, which might be cultivated along that river.

13. Yesterday we crossed the Savanna Portage. We left our camp at four o'clock in the morning, and passed the tamarack swamp some mile or a mile and a half, to the first hard ground, where we stopped for breakfast. The weather was warm with a lowery atmosphere. By seven o'clock the clouds grew thick and heavy in the west, and it began to thunder. Before ten the shower reached us, and the rain poured down in torrents. We did not stop to pitch our tent, but continued on with our baggage. The trees and brush were as wet as they could be. The portage path was filled with mud and water. It continued to rain at intervals till the middle of the afternoon. We all worked without cessation till all our baggage

and canoe were across the portage. Our clothes were wet through and well covered with mud. This portage is noted for mud and musquitoes. If what we encountered today is a fair specimen, it has not been in these respects very greatly misrepresented.

We embarked on the west Savanna which we reached at the end of the portage, at four o'clock in the afternoon. The river in the upper portion of it was shallow, and portions of it filled with boulders. Our men had to get out frequently and wade in the water, and conduct the canoe along by hand. They put us ashore and sent us on on foot for a piece. In this way we made but slow progress for the first hour. The river passes through a grassy valley which is from twenty to fifty rods in width, and winds incessantly from side to side of this valley. We worked till some time after the sun was down to reach the mouth of the river where it enters Sandy Lake. We were unable to see the buildings which were on the opposite side of the lake. The men took a wrong direction, and finally got bewildered and lost. At length however we got on the right direction, but did not reach the settlement till ten o'clock. Wearied with our long and toilsome day's labor we were glad to find a kind welcome in the hospitable family the Rev. S. Spates, the missionary of the Methodist Society, who is stationed here. We found him and his family well, and he told us that he was labouring not without some more than usual encouragement.

14. We left Sandy Lake this morning at nine o'clock, and passed on from its shallow waters, to the bosom of the Mississippi. This was my first view of the great Father of Waters. I was

disappointed with its first appearance. I had expected to find it a broder and more sluggish stream. I supposed it ran through more marshy grounds than I found it did. The banks I found to be generally high and covered with timber. The bottoms were covered with a heavy growth of elm, soft maple and other kinds of hard wood. ~~Most~~ of the bottom lands, however, are liable to overflow, and on that account are not valuable for tillage. The current of the river nearly all the way here is strong. Were it not for the liability of all the lower lands along the river to overflow, there would be much valuable land in its vicinity. Back of the bottoms, so far as we could judge as we passed, ~~from the river~~, the land is poor, much of it probably worthless.

The musquetoes on the shore were numerous, and seemed ready to devour us, if we approached to land. While we kept the channel of the river they troubled us but little in our canoes. We concluded that there was but little prospect of our finding much comfort on shore during the night, and as we were in haste to reach Fort Gaines, we ~~struck~~ held a parley with our men to continue on all night. We therefore stopped a little before sundown and made our supper amid swarms of musquetoes who seemed to be determined to have theirs at our expense, and after being tormented an hour by them, we embarked and proceeded onward. At eleven we passed the camp of some persons going to Sandy Lake with loaded canoes. And during the night we passed another camp of ~~of~~ voyageurs. I contined to ply the paddle till one o'clock at night, when I became so sleepy that I resigned the work wholly to our two men, and composed myself as well as I could in the bottom of the canoe for a nap. I found it no bed of down. I was obliged to lie on one of the tent poles which I could not remove, but by changing my position frequently I made out to endure it till morning.

14. Rose from my hard bed, little refreshed, at five this morning, and took my paddle again. The weather was hot and sultry. The bottom lands which skirted the river almost the whole way yesterday had disappeared, and were succeeded by sandy bluffs. A part of the ground was open or had on it a few scattered trees, and a part was covered with two or three species of pine. The further we proceeded down the river the more pine timber we saw on its banks. In the course of the day we began to see pine logs on the banks and islands of the river which had been drawn on to it during the preceding winter for floating down its current.

At five o'clock P.M. we reached the mouth of the Crow-wing River, which is the southern boundary of the country owned by the Ojibwas in this quarter. All south of this they have ceded to the United States. This place is a trading post with a few houses and three large stores two of which are not completed.

At this place we ~~found~~ learned that the principal Chiefs and warriors of the Ojibwas in this region, and their principal traders, had gone to St. Peters to hold a treaty of peace between the Sioux and Ojibwas to put an end to the murders which have for some time past been carried on between these two hostile tribes. After remaining at Crow-wing a short time we left and proceeded down six miles to Fort Gaines. This is a military post established last year. It is situated on a bluff on the eastern bank of the Mississippi nearly opposite to the Nokay Sebi a river which enters the Mississippi on the east side. The situation of the Fort is pleasant as it overlooks the river, and an extended plain on the opposite side which is naturally bare of timber except a few scattering trees, and is covered with grass. The buildings and grounds are only partly completed.

We pitched our tent, and while our men were cooking our supper we went into the garrison and called at the quarters of Captain Lay. The officer in command had gone to St. Peters with the Indians. Here we learnt that Governor Ramsey whom both Mr Watrous and ourselves were desirous to see, was expected to make a visit to this region very soon, but no one could tell when he would come. It had been our purpose to proceed to St. Paul and meet him there. But as it was supposed he would come with those who ~~[illegible]~~ had gone to the St. Peters, on their return, & as they were expected tomorrow, we decided to wait for further intelligence before proceeding further. We spread our blankets and laid our selves down under our tent to rest, at an early hour, being weary & uncomfortable, having travelled two days and one night without encamping, and having been thoroughly drenched during the afternoon by a heavy shower of rain which we chose to encounter in our canoes, rather than be hindered by stopping to seek a shelter, and in consequence of which our clothes were still wet.

16 Early this morning we had a very heavy fall of rain. The spray beat through the tent and the water ran under it. At eleven o'clock I embarked with our men in our canoe and proceeded down the river nine miles to the residence of Mr Ayer. Mr. Wheeler chose to walk the distance. My ankle which still continued lame and painful and was much swollen, pre-

vented my accompanying him. I however left the canoe some two miles above Mr Ayer's and proceeded across some very beautiful prairie lands on foot. I was happy to meet this old missionary associate and friend and his family, and find them well and prosperous. He has located himself in the midst of one of the handsomest plats of ground I ever saw. He chose this situation hoping here to establish a manual labour school and to occupy a large tract of land for its use, and in part of its support. He has erected upon it a very small log house which he & his family occupy. On the front next to the river is a point of bottom land containing eighty or 100 acres covered with elm, basswood, maple and other kinds of timber common to the wooded bottoms of this river. Back of this is a tamarack swamp, affording a considerable quantity of fencing and building timber. From this swamp and from the river bellow the point of woodland, rises a bluff thirty or forty feet above the bed of the stream. Here commences the table land. The front of this prairie next to the river is covered with scattering oaks of various sizes with branching tops, resembling at a distance a orchard of fruit trees. Beyond, on the east, the land is entirely barren of trees and shrubs for two or three miles back, and extending up and down the river as far as the eye can reach. The soil is generally rather sandy and covered with grass which gave the country a beautiful apperance at this time. On this open ground Mr Ayer has commenced cultivating a farm. The land is easily tilled but appear to be too light and sandy to be long production without much manuring. He said his crops succeeded tolerably well last season, though the ground was newly

5. broken and not tended as it ought to have been. His oats, barley, wheat, and potatoes now look promising. Back of the ground which he has fenced and plowed there is a valley of lower ground, though not sufficiently depressed to appear lower than the ground on each side at a little distance. Through this valley runs a small stream which is skirted on both sides with wild grass which affords large quantities of excellent hay.

Mr Ayer is desirous to establish here a kind of charity school where the children of traders and others who have no other means for educating their children, may be taken and educated. He intends to make it a manual labour school to some extent, and hopes that if he can get it once started it may grow into a permanent and useful institution. There are many children in this region whose parents are unable to support them at school abroad, who would be able to bear a part of the expense of their education, if there were a school for them near by. These children must go uneducated unless a school is provided in some way near their home. To supply this want in the country was reason 5. why Mr. A. conceived the plan of a school at the spot where he has located himself. The location appears well chosen for the object. But Mr. A. has met with unexpected embarrassments thus far, and has not advanced much in the execution of his scheme. He needs funds and can not advance far, till he can raise something for this purpose. Could he carry his 5. plan into effect, it would doubtless be a great benefit to the surrounding country which is probably destined to settle to some extent at distant day. Its tendency would be to elevate the intellectual and moral character of a very much neglected portion of the community.

Another plan Mr. A. has, is to induce pious and benevolent persons to settle near him, and thus form a kind of colony whose influence shall ~~shall~~ be salutary on the future istitutions destined to be established ~~in~~ this region, and to be a kind of barrier to the introduction of evil into the Indian country which lies near. Such a colony here could do much to prevent the introduction of ~~intoxicating~~ liquors among them. He has not yet been very much encouraged in this plan. I fear he will not realize all he has hoped in the success of his projects. This region is a great moral waste. At Crow-wing River there are now a considerable number of inhabitans. The number will increase as business increases. They have no one to preach to them the gospel, not even occasionally. There is a small school supported by two or three individuals for the benefit of their own families, and taught by a worthy and pious lady, Miss Smith, from Ohio. At Fort Gaines six miles below, there is a large garrison of soldiers, besides at present many labourers on the works; but they have no chaplain, and I did not learn that any one ever preaches there. No officiating clergyman resides nearer than Fort Snelling, 130 miles below. There are settlements scattered along the whole way from St. Paul and Crow-wing River. The sabbath is scarcely recognized here. At Fort Gaines I am told by those who have been there on the sabbath, that there scarcely a perceptible difference in the transaction of business between that day and the other days of the week. Teams and travellers were continually passing the whole day, during the sabbath which I spent at Mr Ayers.

And I am told that it is common to employ the sabbath for the transaction of secular business on this whole line.

The Winebago Indians, who were removed from Iowa to this region two years ago, are settled on the west side of the Mississippi in two bands. One band, and the largest are located at Long Prairie which is on Long Prairie river, a branch of the Crow-wing, and some 30 or forty miles from Fort Gaines. The other band are settled on the river some ten or twelve miles above Sauk Rapids.

The transportation of goods and provisions to fulfil treaty stipulations with this tribe, for the supply of Fort Gaines, for the Indian trade, and the annuities of the Ojibwas, makes a large business and employs a large number of men and teams. This class of people as well as the settlers, are without the means of religious instruction. Gambling, profanity, drinking, and almost every other vice, are said to prevail to a fearful extent. Business must necessarily increase in this region, and unless religious institutions are early established, and the means of educating the rising generation furnished, there must soon accumulate here an immoral and ignorant set of inhabitants. There is much needed here of a good, pious, active, judicious, laborious, & self-denying missionary, to go from end to end of this route, preach when and where he can collect a little audience, visit the people at their homes, and talk with them by the way. He should not be afraid of exposure, hardship, nor toil. He must expect to labour without pay or thanks; often perhaps he will be ill treated. But if he is a man of faith and perseverance, he may hope to do good and find his reward in heaven, though the more abundantly he loves those he labours for, the less he may be loved.

16. Sabbath. I spent this day in the family of Mr. Ayer.

During the day we ~~spent~~ had several seasons of prayer together and found it good to mingle our supplications for ourselves, our families, and the desolations of Zion around us and throughout the world. As we saw people constantly passing and repassing, we were constrained to feel, that surely there is no fear of God before their eyes. Corrupt are they. They keep not thy law.

Late in the afternoon Mr Watrous arrived from Fort Gaines and informed us that Governor Ramsey was expected at Sauk Rapids on Wednesday next.

17 I embarked with Mr. Watrous on board his canoe this morning for Sauk Rapids, there expecting to meet the Governor. In passing down the river we found more points covered with wood than we had seen for some distance after leaving the Crow-wing River. On going ashore for dinner opposite a bluff, we ascended it, and found a beautiful prairie of a mile and a half in width, and extending up and down the river a long distance. We walked across it, and found the soil apparently light and sandy. These prairies produce a great variety of very beautiful flowers. At this season they are clothed in their richest hues. Some of them are very beautiful. Mr Ayer's son told me he had counted 40 different varieties this season. There are some kinds which I have never noticed elsewhere. The prairies of this region when open are generally covered with a low kind of grass which grows sparsely, weeds and flowers, and in some places, particularly the rolling prairies with small, low bushes. Among the oaks on the openings there is the same kind of grass, weeds and flowers, together with frequent bunches of small oak bushes.

We arrived at Sauk Rapids about six P.M. just in time to escape a very heavy storm. We saw the cloud rise in the west, and grow blacker and heavier as it approached. Within five minutes after we entered the house, the rain commenced, accompanied with a powerful wind and almost incessant peals of thunder. It beat through the walls of the house which were of hewed logs so as to cover the floors of the rooms with water. The ground all around was covered with water from one inch to three inches deep.

18. On arriving at Sauk Rapids we learnt ~~that~~ Gov Ramsey was expected here on the boat which was ~~ex-~~ due ~~pected~~ this evening. We concluded to wait the arrival of the boat before proceeding further. About 7 o'clock this evening the boat arrived, and brought him. We have had heavy rains again to-day. Every low place is filled with water. Every little brook is swolled to the size of a mill stream. The Mississippi is fast rising. The small rivers are overflowing their banks. The roads are filled with mud and water, and have become almost impassible.

19 Procured a passage back in a heavy lumber waggon sent from Fort Gaines to convey the Governor and his party to that place. It was drawn by four mules. The travling was extremely bad in consequence of the late rains and the swollen streams, none of which are bridged. We had two now wide and deep rivers to cross, besides many smaller ones. We crossed our baggage in canoes, swam our mules across, and then tied a rope to the waggon, crossed it over the river, and some eight or ten men drew on the opposite bank and pulled the waggon across. In one of the rivers the waggon upset and reached the opposite bank bottom up. We at length got it righted and

drew it up the bank upon dry land. We arrived at Mr Ayer's about sundown.

20 Started this morning for Crow-wing River. Our men took our canoe up the river, and Mr Wheeler and myself walked. We had gone but a short distance when we began to meet Indians. We soon found one lying dedd drunk in the road. We saw several others afterwards in a similar condition, and others still, men and women, so intoxicated as to be scarcely able to walk. We learned that a party of Ojibwas had started on a war excursion against the Sioux, but were stopped through the interferance of the officers of the Garrison at Fort Gaines. They then obtained intoxicating liquor and were drinking for several days. During this time they killed several oxen belonging to a team which was passing this road. There are in this region a number of unprincipled men who furnish intoxicating drinks, to Indians or any one else who can pay for it. Though there are good laws in force in this Territory relating to the liquor trade, especially against furnishing to Indians, yet such is the state of society on the frontiers that it is almost impossible to convict a person when he violates them. He usually finds some way to escape. The pioneers on the frontier settlements are many of them unprincipled men, who seem resolved to have a living, but ~~seem to~~ care but little by what means they obtain it. It is by such men that the Indians are corrupted and distroyed.

We called at Fort Gaines and procured supplies for our future journey. Proceded on to Crow-wing River at which place we arrived at 4 o'clock P.M.

21 Having made our preparations for proceeding to

Leech Lake and from thence on to Cass Lake, Little Lake Winnepeg and down the Mississippi to Sandy Lake, we started after breakfast for Gull Lake which was to be the terminus of this day's journey. At the junction of the Crow-wing and Mississippi rivers, we leave the latter and proceed through small rivers, lakes and across portages till we reach its head waters at Leech Lake and Lake Winibagoshish and the other lakes and connecting streams which communicate with them.

We now crossed to the west side of the Mississippi. Our men took our canoe round by the Crow-wing and Gull Lake rivers, while Mr. Wheeler and myself walked over the land route to Gull Lake, a distance of about 15 miles. Our road for a short distance was on a bluff running parallel to the Mississippi. We soon lost sight of that stream, and shortly after came in sight of the Crow-wing running through a valley which lay far below us. We had not gone far before this river also disappeared. Our road was principally nature's work, very little improved by human skill, except that occasionally a small tree has been cut. It is used however for carts and carriages, and is tolerably passable. Capt. Todd of Fort Gaines came over to day and brought Gov. Ramsey and his party in a covered carriage drawn by two horses. This country is generally level with no stones, and very few obstructions exist to going in any direction, but the forest trees and occasionally swamps, aside from the lakes which abound in it. The land for almost the whole distance from the mouth of Crow-wing to Gull Lake is composed of coarse sand and gravel, making a hard soil for a road, and is covered principally with the cypress, a species of evergreen found on the poorer lands of this whole region of country, interspersed here and there with the Norway or red pine. It lies nearly level, or is slightly undulating. Most of it is entirely unfit for cultivation. We passed several beautiful lakes of clear white water on our way. The road passed near the margin of some of them; others were seen at a distance through the trees. All this sandy country abounds with these lakes. One can travel but a few hours in any direction but ~~[illegible]~~ he meets with them.

A short distance before reaching Gull Lake, we came to another called Round Lake. As we came into the vicinity of this lake we began to find hard timber, oak, maple, elm, basswood and other species of hard wood were intermingled. There seemed to be a considerable extent of bottom land covered with this kind of timber, which doubtless will be found of good quality and profitable for tillage.

At Gull Lake there is a farm commenced for the Indians, and 30 or 40 acres of land cleared of most of the timber. There is a blacksmith here supported by the Government, or rather by funds stipulated for this purpose by treaties made by the Government with the Indians. There is also a farmer stationed here, who has under his care a team, furnished also by the Government for the benefit of the Indians. He receives a salary from the Government, and aids the Indians in plowing their grounds. There are some small buildings for the accommodation of these establishments.

The plat of ground on which the Indian farm is situated, lies between Round and Gull Lakes. It is a narrow tongue of land which separates these two bodies of water. At the point where these two lakes approach the nearest to each other, at which place they are united by a stream running from one to the other, ~~they are~~ it is ~~are~~ not more than 15 or 20 rods ~~apart~~ from one to the other. The strip of land grows wider as it runs west.

A very small portion apparently of the Indian farm has been plowed the present season. A part of it is planted with corn, potatoes, pumpkins and other vines. It looked like Indian farming. It was cut up into little patches laid

7 off without order or taste and much neglected. They will probably not realize much produce from it this season. The bodies of two Indian houses have been erected here, and the roof of one of them is covered with barks. Neither of them are habitable. These are all the advances towards civilization or general improvement which I discovered among this band of Indians. There are quite a large number of Indians encamped here at this time. These lakes abound in fish during the spring and early part of summer. The timber around them is hardwood and pine. The pine is generally of a good quality for building. The stream which connects the two lakes has several feet fall and possibly may be used to turn a mill.

There is but one objection apparently to making this place the site of a mission station; this is its near proximity to the White settlements. It is but about twenty miles from Fort Gaines, and the whole line of settlements below the military reservation is thickly studded with Whiskey shops. The Indians go down this way as much as they please, and can procure this destructive article at pleasure in any quantities they choose.

The chief of this place, who is one of the most influential chiefs in this region, professes himself desirous to have a missionary reside here. He has had some correspondence with the missionaries of the Methodist Society on this subject, and also held some conversation with Mr. Wheeler about it at the time of our visit.

22 We rose and loaded our canoes this morning soon after sunrise. We crossed Gull Lake and followed a narrow arm around some points for some two miles, and at length arrived at the portage which crosses from this lake to the next on our route. We made the portage and stopped at the farther end for breakfast. The Governor's canoes followed up the course of the stream which connects these two lakes and came round to the place where we were, without making a

portage. The stream is rapid and difficult to pass.

We started at 9 o'clock, and in the course of two hours had crossed the lake and came to another portage. The first portage was about a mile in length. This was about two miles. Between two and three o'clock P.M. ~~the~~ we had got all our baggage across and were ready to embark. We passed across the end of a lake about a mile, and entered a small stream ~~covered with~~ having a beautiful grassy margin, which took us in the course of half an hour into a round lake some two miles in diameter the longest way, of beautiful clear white water. This lake is called by the Indians Wabito Sagaiigun. We crossed near one end of it, and passed into a smal shallow stream which took us after going a very short distance, into Whitefish Lake, through which Pine River runs. This river unites with the Mississippi more than a half a days travel above the mouth of the Crow-wing. Whitefish Lake is the largest we have crossed to-day. I should judge it to be from five to seven miles across. The shores so far as we could judge from the view we had of it, were generally considerably elevated and covered with pine. Probably some points are covered with hard wood. Another lake of considerable size called Trout Lake I was told lies very near this below.

We passed a distance of some three forths of a mile near the shore of the lake, and came to the ~~mouth~~ point where Pine River enters it. This is a rapid river of considerable size, and enters the lake with a strong current. There are several points of elm and other hardwood timber for a mile or two after entering the river. They appear from the river to be narrow and not very valuable for farming purposes. This ~~place~~ lake has been mentioned as a favourable place for locating a missionary establishment, but we saw nothing which looked inviting in this respect, unless it be that fish may be obtained in considerable quantities from the lake at certain seasons.

The country which we have passed to-day in its general features is similar to that between Crowwing and Gull Lake. Back from the lakes, and often on their margin, it is covered with a scattered growth of the kind of pitch pine which is found so abundantly through all this region, interspersed occasionally with a scattered grove of indifferent Norway Pines. Most of it is utterly valueless for agricultural purposes. Its soil is little else than sand and gravel.

In ascending Pine river we had to oppose a very stiff current which was frequently broken into strong and rocky rapids. The skill and strength of our men was often severely taxed to make headway against the opposing force of the stream. We travelled till sundown, and encamped some two or three miles from where we entered the river on a level table land at the first still water.

23. Sabbath— Yesterday we pushed forward a little ahead of the Governor's party, because they intended to travel on the Sabbath, and we resolved to rest according to the commandment. We expected they would pass us early this morning, but as we have waited all day and have not seen them, we infer that they have taken a different route from ours, as we are told there are several. I felt a tinge of loneliness in this solitude to day. We are surrounded by a vast wilderness extending on every side of us; there is no habitation of man near us. The day has been bright and sunny and scarcely a sound has been heard the whole day; not even the rustling of a leaf. But God is as near to the heart that seeks his presence in the wilderness, as in the crowded city. The sun has beat upo

on us with a powerful heat, and the flies and musquitoes have been annoying; but under these circumstances it is better to "remember the Sabbath day", than to travel. How can men expect the blessing of God upon them, unless they keep his commandments? Many think they have a good excuse while travelling and exposed, as we are, for not resting on the Sabbath. But ought such an excuse to justify continuing on during the Sabbath day? What virtue is there ~~there~~ in obedience, when that obedience costs no self-denial?

24. Rose this morning at half past three. The men gummed# the canoe and were ready to start about four. Travelled some hour and a half when we found our canoe fast filling with water. We went ashore and unloaded. On examination we found ~~[illegible]~~ we had broken a hole through the bark by striking the canoe against a stone in the bottom of the stream. We had many rapids to pass, and the river bottom was full of boulders which the dark color of the water prevented us from seeing distinctly. About ~~noon~~ ten o'clock we came to the place where Pine River divided. We took the right hand branch which in its general course leads in a western direction. We passed Indians twice during the forenoon. Just before we stopped for dinner our guide disembarked. He said we might go on, and he would shortly come up with us. We went on a short distance and stopped, cooked our meal, ate, and again went on. But we saw not our lost man. We called, waited, and fired guns, but obtained no answer. At length however he made his appearance, said he had been back to the Indians we had last past to enquire the way. He became bewildered and was not certain

---

# The bark of the white birch forms the covering outside of an Indian canoe. The pieces are first sewed together, and the seams and holes are then covered with the gum of the white pine and spruce.

what direction to take. We found on enquiry that he had never passed this way, but once; and that was many years ago when he was a young boy.

At the place where our guide came up with us we entered a lake. He did not know how to direct us to find the portage from this to the next lake. We took the wrong direction, and after crossing the lake, we followed a narrow arm of it, winding around points of hard land, and widening again at length into broad patches of wild rice. We pursued our course in this direction for an hour or more, ~~and~~ when we became satisfied we were lost. We returned and crossed the lake which we first entered in another direction, and as we drew towards the opposite shore, we saw a foot path leading up the ~~ground~~ bank from the lake. We landed, and found it to be the portage path. We had lost two or three hours time by our confusion and by getting out of the way. The portage we had now to cross was about a mile which brought us to another small lake. We crossed this lake and made the portage from this to the next lake on the margin of which we encamped for the night.

The country which we have passed to-day has exhibited nearly the same sandy and barren appearance ~~to [illegible]~~ which we have noticed heretofore. We have seen but a very few acres which appeared suitable for cultivation. There is in this neighborhood less of the cypress or pitch pine, and more groves of the Norway pine. We have noticed some very handsome groves of this species of timber about some of the lakes.

On the river bank there was occasionally a point of land covered with hard wood, elm, ash, and white oak. There is little white pine in the region which we have traversed to-day. Small white Oakes were frequently seen on the margin of the streams. This whole region seems to be a barren, light, sandy or gravelly soil, bearing very sparcely, tufts of coarse, stunted grass, winter-green, and blueberry bushes.

We encamped at 8 o'clock this evening having been at work for sixteen hours. We have neither seen, nor heard any thing of the Governor and his party, and presume they are on a different route from ours.

25. We rose at sun rise and were soon in our canoe, crossing the lake on the margin of which we had slept. After an hour's travel we reached the opposite side, and made the portage which passed over a high piece of ground and terminated in a swamp. The portage was about half a mile in length. We crossed the next lake and stopped for our breakfast. The portage was short and terminated at a very small lake from which our guide expected to pass to the next by a small stream. We found the stream closed up and we were obliged to make a short and muddy portage. This took us to a small pond from which we passed to a small lake through a muddy channel filled with flags and rushes, and through which we were obliged to drag our canoe walking on the bogs and in mud and water. We proceeded a short distance and came to the last portage we have to make in this direction, which took us into a ~~system~~ series of lakes joined by small rivers and outlets and leading at length into Leech Lake.

At the end of our second portage this morning we had reached the highest land in this direction and passed the ridge which divides the waters which flow into Leech Lake and those which flow into the Mississippi through Pine River.

We were now on one of the extreme sources of the Mississippi, and saw it where with ease a man could step across it. The waters of this region which abounds in small lakes all discharge themselves into the great Father of Waters through Leech Lake the outlet of which forms one of the two principle branches of that river near its upper sources. We were now descending towards Leech Lake. On the ridge we passed one portage of hard timber, maple, white Oak, etc. which indicated a good soil. How extensive this kind of land is here we could not tell. We saw patches of hard wood land in several other places, but of small extent.

We passed on till three o'clock in the afternoon through lake after lake connected by narrow passages, when they began to assume more the appearance of a river. At first it was wide and sluggish, though there was evidently some current. At length it began to grow narrower till it become a channel from twelve to eighteen yards wide with a strong current. Towards evening we ran two very strong rapids, one of which was very long. They were full of boulders on which our canoe got some pretty hard blows, and occasionally stuck fast. We encamped at half past six in the midst of a heavy fall of rain. In the morning it was lowery, and in the early part of the day it rained for an hour. At two in the afternoon the rain began to fall heavily, and for the last three hours of the day it poured down upon us in torrents. We and much of our baggage were thoroughly wet. The musquetoes in our camp last night and on the portages to-day have been very numerous and annoying.

About three o'clock this afternoon we passed an Indian encampment where they told us the Governor passed the night and left this morning for Leech Lake. So it seems we have at length fallen upon his track.

As we advanced, the country appeared more barren and the land less adapted to agriculture than on the portages above. Most of the way on the margin of the river there are tamarack and cedar swamps. There are some bluffs and some small spots of table land. The red and white pine is more abundant than on the other side of the ridge. There are some handsome groves of the former species. Very little of the cypress or pitch pine now appears along the river.

26 We had a heavy rain last night. For a time it fell in torrents, and I was apprehensive it would run under the tent and cover the ground under us with water. Our tent however kept us tolerably dry. The musquetoes visited us in swarms and resolved to have a supper at our expense, notwithstanding we tried to smoke them and drive them out of our tent. They were so annoying as to prevent quiet sleep.

The rain this morning prevented our starting at our usual hour for embarkation. The rain and the musquetoes rendered our situation not much more pleasant in camp than we should be in our canoe. We resolved therefore at 10 o'clock to embark. Just as we were decamping the rain ceased, and soon the clouds began to break away. Ten or fifteen miles travel brought us into Boy Lake. At the ~~South~~ north end of this lake is a point of land rising gradually from the margin of the lake and running back some distance till it terminates in a ridge of pine. Near the water's edge is a beautiful grove of scattered oaks, and the ground around and among them is at this time covered with a beautiful carpet of rich green, and looks at a little distance as if the hand of man had been employed to make it what it is. In reality, however it is as nature made it. As we entered this lake our guide became confused as to the points of the compass, the weather being cloudy, and took a wrong direction. We traveled to the southwestern extremity of the lake before we were convinced we were wrong. We had to return to near the place where we first entered the lake before we could get on to the right course. By this mistake we were hindered between two and three hours. But we did not regret this so much as it gave us an opportunity to see the land on the borders of this lake for nearly its whole extent. Here we found hardwood land and apparently some of the best we have yet seen. A skirt of land of this quality is seen for a considerable extent on one side of the lake.

About five o'clock we reached the mouth of the river where it enters Leech Lake and had a view of portion of that lake. We entered it on the east side and passed across it in nearly a western ~~[illegible]~~ direction. At seven o'clock we reached the point on the north side which is nearest the trading post, which is on the west side. The wind was blowing fresh from the north, but we resolved to cross. When we got out from the land we found we had a heavy and sharp sea to contend with. The traverse was longer than it appeared, and we were till nine o'clock in reaching the trading post. After sundown the wind increased, the seas frequently broke into the canoe, and as I sat ~~on the side~~ ~~next~~ on the windward side, I got thoroughly wet. When we landed we had much difficulty to keep our canoe from filling with water and from being broken on the rocks. We all sprang into the water and held the canoe and got our things out as soon as poſsible, but not till the canoe was half filled with water and much of our baggage thoroughly wet.

Mr. Bonga the trader, invited us to his house, made up a cheerful fire, and provided us with supper and a place to lodge in, all of which kindneſs was very gratefully received by us. We arrived wet and cold, and must have spent an uncomfortable night in the open air. After drying some of our clothes we laid down upon our blankets and slept.

This is the point where Mr Boutwell had his establishment while he was at Leech Lake. It was afterwards occupied by the miſsionaries of the Oberlin Evangelical Miſsionary Society for a time. After they left Leech Lake they sold their establishment to Mr Bonga.

Leech Lake is the largest lake in this region of lakes. It abounds in fish of an excellent quality which are taken in greater or leſs abundance at all the seasons when it is open. The shores of the lake are very irregular, the points jutting far into it and forming deep bays. There is much maple land around it which is of a good quality for tillage. There is also abundance of pine on its shores and in its immediate neighborhood. It can be approached by the Miſsiſsippi and Leech Lake Rivers, both of which it is said are large enough for small steam boats to navigate, and with no serious obstruction above the Pokegoma Falls. It can also be approached by the route we came in canoes. Canoe navigation on this route is easy to the highest land, about half the way from Crow-wing River. Boats carrying four or five tons I think would navigate the rivers in this direction without difficulty. It is said, and is believed, that a road might easily be made from Crow-wing River to this Lake acroſs a hard country, which would be practicable for loaded teams.

This place seems to me to combine the most advantages for locating ~~an~~ missionary establishment, and for the Indian Agency, of any we have seen in this region. Its remoteness is the greatest objection. But if a road can be found from Crow-wing River to this lake, or even to the navigable waters which run into it in that direction, this objection is in a measure obviated. There are some very important advantages to be secured by having such establishments remote from the White settlements.

27. We left Leech Lake this morning for Cass Lake at five in the morning. We passed through a long bay of Leech Lake and came to a small river which led through marshy ground an hour's travel, and then opened into a lake. From the further side of this we commenced our first portage. This portage is about two miles long. We next passed a small lake and made another portage of less than half a mile, and came to a lake which is connected by an outlet with Cass lake. We have now passed the dividing line which separates between the waters which form the two upper large branches of the Mississippi, those proceeding through Leech Lake, and those which run through Cass Lake and the Little Lake Winnipeg. We passed round the point and crossed the lake to the mission station which is on the side of the lake opposite to where we entered it. The missionaries at this station are Rev. Alonzo Barnard and Mr Fisher and their wives, and a young man from Ohio. The band of Indians residing here is not large. Mrs Fisher we found confined to her ~~room~~ by sickness.

The mission premises bore marks of good management, industry and economy. Mr B. has a field of winter wheat growing which has already reached nearly its full hight and promises a fair crop. He has also a considerable extensive field of corn and potatoes. In this remote region the larger part of the provisions to sustain a mission station must be raised on the spot, or procured from the lakes. The ~~station~~ missionaries have also several cows and other cattle. We saw several patches of corn belonging to the Indians, some of them of considerable extent. Several of the Indians also have log houses which they have been aided in building by the missionaries. The school which the station has usually sustained ~~is~~ suspended at this time. The missionaries find it extremely difficult to keep the children regularly at school. This is universally the case among the Ojibways of this country. Neither parents nor children appreciate the advantages of education, and are strongly averse to the restraints of school discipline. If they would appreciate and improve the privileges proffered them by the missionaries, they would find their circumstances very much ~~improved~~ changed for the better in a few years. But they are too ignorant and degraded to see this. They hate the light because it condemns their present mode of life. For the same reason they will not attend to religious instruction.

29. Yesterday morning we parted with Governor Ramsey and his party, he to return homeward down the Mississippi, and we to go on to Red Lake the former residence of Mr. Ayer and where the American Missionary Union have still a station. This place is about sixty miles North west from Cass Lake, and on the borders of Red Lake which is next in size to Leech Lake. We left Cass Lake at nine in the forenoon. It rained when we started, but soon ceased and the clouds partially broke away. About one o'clock we were stopped by a heavy shower of rain attended with heavy thunder which passed over in the course of an hour, and left us to pursue our journey. Our course was through small lakes, and small rivers which connected them and over portages from one lake to another. In the course of the day we passed over two portages, one very

short, and the other a mile and a half in length and slept at the farther end of the latter. This morning we started after breakfast, passed on as yesterday alternately through lakes, rivers and across portages, till in the course of three hours we came to a portage passing over a considerable rise of land, which took us from the waters which discharge themselves through the Mississippi into the Gulf of Mexico, and from those which run into Red Lake and from thence into the North Red River and through that into Hudson's Bay. The portage over this dividing ridge is not more than one third of a mile long. We had now followed the Northwestern branch of the Upper Mississippi to near its extreme source.

Soon after noon we arrived at the end of the fifteen mile portage which was to take us to Red Lake. At this place we left our canoe, and all our baggage which we could dispense with, hiding them away in the woods, tied up our packs and prepared for a march. The weather was cloudy and damp and the musquetoes very numerous and annoying. We had to pass rivers and mudholes in abundance, sometimes wading to our middle through the rivers, and then passing low grounds to our knees in mud and water. Heavy rains had swollen the streams and filled all the low grounds. On the high ground the walking was good. After four hour's travel we reached the trading post, and in an hour more the mission.

At this station are three mission families, Messrs Wright, Lewis, and Coe. We found them well, and happy, though far off from society, and deprived of many blessings and comforts they ~~have~~ might have enjoyed among their friends and kindred at home. Every thing about the mission premises appeared in good order, indicating enterprise, industry and economy. There is no doubt but the missionaries at these stations are hard working, self-denying and devoted men To see the Indians saved, would be an abundant compensation, for all the privations they endure to live in this remote and desolate region.

There is a narrow belt of very excellent land around this lake; it probably exceeds all other land of this region in fertility. But it is very narrow, not exceeding half a mile, and much of the way it is much narrower. Back of this the land is miserably poor, having a hard gravelly or sandy soil and covered with the pitch pine of small growth, and the poplar. The missionaries had very fine crops of wheat, oats, corn and potatoes growing. They say they have raised at the rate of sixty five bushels of shelled corn to the acre here. The Indians have pretty extensive gardens of corn, potatoes, and pumpkins here. Their fields looked well, and showed more care and skill in cultivating them, than I have seen exhibited by any other Indians in the country. There is more corn raised by this band of Indians than by any other in the country. By the aid of the missionaries some families have houses.

30. Sabbath. This morning I preached to a small congregation of Indians who assembled for worship at one of the mission houses. From fifteen to twenty were present, besides the missionaries, and most of these were women and children. Mr Wheeler addressed the same in the afternoon. After these exercises the mission families held a meeting for prayer and mutual Christian conversation.

The missionaries have gathered a small church here which has several Indian members most of whom are females.

July 2. We started yesterday morning from Red Lake and reached Cass Lake at three o'clock this afternoon. We found it wet crossing the long portage as it rained a part of the way. The musquetoes were as thick as they could be, and seemed determined to devour us. The weather is cloudy most of the time & it rains more or less almost every day.

July 3. This morning at seven o'clock we left our missionary friends at Cass Lake, and proceeded on to the mission station on Little Lake Winepeg, or as the Indians call it, Winebegonsish. About three miles from the mission station at Cass Lake we entered the river which connects that lake with Little Lake Winepeg. The entrance of the river was through low, grassy lands. Soon we began to find points of higher ground timbered with the red and pitch pine. As we passed down the river it winded its course through a valley of flat low lands covered generally with heavy grass growing in the water at this stage of the river. Back of this the ground rose into low sandy bluffs. This higer land was generally covered with groves of Norway or red pine, and the pitch pine. Most of the land appeared to be of a light, inferior quality of soil, ill adapted to purposes of agriculture.

After passing down the river about 15 miles we entered Little Lake Winepeg through a long stretch of low swampy grounds. We passed on in nearly an easterly direction some twelve or fifteen miles directly across the lake from where we entered it, and reached the mission station. Here we found the families of Messrs Adams and Spencer in good health, but not abundantly supplied with a variety of other things which mankind generally think necessary to human happiness in this life. The station is new, having been commenced late last season. They have a small and not very comfortable log house. They have a few potatoes, but very little else for food except the milk they derive from one cow, and the fish they take from the lake. This latter supply is very precarious. The fish taken at this season is poor and but a little of it. They have a small spot of ground cleared and planted, but the potatoes and corn which is growing on it, does not promise much of a crop. We saw but few Indians here. The greater part of the band usually resident here being at this time absent.

There is said to be considerable good land about this lake and Cass Lake. About the latter however there is not a very large tract worth cultivating. The Indians of this region make considerable part of their sugar near Winnepeg. This lake is fifteen or twenty miles in length and perhaps two thirds as wide, and is a beautiful sheet of water.

July. 4. This is the birth day of American Independence. We have remembered it as such, not with the noisy parade and senseless dissipation with which many have doubtless spent it; but by trying to lift our hearts in gratitude to God for the rich temporal blessings he has bestowed upon our land for the last three fourths of a century. The day was not by us ushered in by the firing of cannon. But we rose quietly from our slumbers in our tent at four o'clock in the morning, and prepared to part with our missionary friends here, and pursue our journey homeward. We embarked in our canoe a half past six in the morning. Our course lay along the eastern shore of the lake towards the south for an hour and a quarter, when we entered the river which leads from it through a low, grassy valley. After passing a short distance we came to another small lake which was principally covered with grass and rushes. After passing this, we entered a valley from one fourth of a mile to a mile, in width covered with high grass and rushes, except where the channel of the river runs.

Through this the Mississippi makes its zigzag course constantly passing back and forth from side to side. Of course the channel is very crooked. The water at this time being high we often drove our canoe through the grass, cutting the points and thereby saving considerable distance. Occasionally at points the river came close up to the high land which appeared sandy and barren. Some of the way the grass valley appeared to terminate in tamarack and cedar swamps. There seemed to be no land worth cultivating. About noon the valley seemed to be narrowing, and we entered a piece of the river where the dry lands nearly enclosed it on both sides. The current became much stronger than it was through the marshes. We stopped for dinner on a low bluff of sandy land. From this point the valley of the river began to increase in width till it was from one fourth of a mile to three or four miles wide. Our afternoon's work was to cross back and forth through this valley, and to cut the grass points so as to intersect the river without following its tortuous course. We often seemed to pass miles around this valley and at length come back near to the point from which we started. At length the river began to assume a more direct course

In the course of the afternoon we passed a spot of ground by the river which rose into a low bluff having on it but a few scattered trees, most of them oaks. It was narrow apparently and extended a mile and a half or two miles down the river. It was covered with green grass and looked at a distance like a cultivated meadow. It looked as if it might be cultivated and easily made productive. It was the only spot of good land we have seen to-day.

At evening we emerged from the swampy valley we had traversed all the afternoon, and came to a place where the timbered land enclosed the river on both sides. On a small bluff at this point we made our camp. The wind was blowing from the south, and for some time we were free from musquetoes. At length however they came upon us in great numbers. Our tent got full and we found we must commence war upon them, or sleep none. At first we tried to smoke them out of the tent. This stilled them as long as the smoke lasted; but as soon as that was gone they were as busy as ever. After trying in vain for two hours to sleep, we lit up a candle and set about the work of burning. As they would light on the sides of the tent we applied the candle and burnt off their wings till we got our tent tolerable clear of them. By keeping ~~the tent~~ it shut close we made out to endure them till day light, and slept a little.

5 We were driven up at four this morning by the musquetoes, and entered our canoe feeling the need of rest. Travelled till half past eight before stopping for breakfast, at which time we reached the Falls in the Mississippi below Pokegoma Lake. The valley through which the river ran this morning was narrower ~~than that~~ we passed through yesterday. The river continued to wind from side to side through its low bottom lands. Three fourths of an hour before we came to the Falls we passed Pokegoma. This is a lake filled with grass and wild rice, through one end of which the channel of the river flows. Near where the river leaves the lake, we saw some lodges of Indians.

A short distance above the Falls we began to see rocks in the banks of the stream. These were the first rocks *in place* we have seen any where in this region. We have seen small boulders occasionally in the bed of the streams. But these are seldom seen. The rivers generally have a sandy or muddy bottom. There is here no perpendicular fall of water; but in the course of fifty rods, the water falls a considerable number of feet by slides and shoots over the rocks. The river is contracted to a narrow channel. This fall would afford one of the best mill seats in the world. The expense of turning the water on to a wheel would be comparatively trifling. A few miles below the Falls is another pretty stiff rapid, but is safe for canoes to run.

Below the rapids the marshy margin of the river disappears, and the banks are wooded. Early this morning we began to see groves of white pine, which have continued more or less all day. As we continued to descend the river, we began to find bottom lands covered with oak, elm, white maple, etc. But nearly all the land of this description is subject to overflow. The higher land back appears sandy and poor being covered with small stunted trees, except where the pines appear.

6 Contrary to our expectation, we were but little annoyed by gnats and musquitoes, which gave us an opportunity to make up in some measure for our loss of sleep on the previous night. We improved the opportunity till near five o'clock this morning. We travelled two hours before we breakfasted. The river is evidently becoming wider, and the current stronger. The banks for some time continued much as yesterday, when they began to appear higher, and there were less of the elm and maple bottoms. The timber in sight of the river was white birch, aspen, pine, and various other kinds, much of which was of a stunted growth, indicating a soil of secondary quality. Portions of it might possibly be cultivated. We passed ex-

tensive tracts where nearly all the timber had been killed by the fire on both sides of the river.

Between three and four o'clock this afternoon we reached the outlet of Sandy Lake, and before five we arrived at ~~reached~~ the mission station and trading post. Met our friends of of the mission enjoying health and prosperity, and apparently glad to see us.

7. Sabbath - Last night there was a heavy rain attended by heavy thunder, and the storm has continued nearly the whole of to-day. We are glad therefore to enjoy the hospitality of the mission. In the morning I preached to a small company of Indians - men and women, who assembled for worship at the mission house. They listened with apparent interest. It was arranged to hold a similar exercise in the afternoon, but a heavy shower of thunder and rain coming on at the hour appointed for meeting, only one or two came in. We had a social meeting for prayer and conference which was highly interesting and profitable. It was pleasant to have Christian intercourse with these brethren and sisters though of a different denomination from us. We felt the deeper sympathy with them from the fact ~~that~~ they are labouring for the same cause, and for the good of the same people with ourselves. There has ever been harmony among the missionaries of the different societies which have laboured for the conversion of this people. We hope this harmony may continue. When we have met sectarian differences have been forgotten, and our intercourse has been characterized by a spirit of fraternal love.

July. 9. We are this evening encamped at the upper end of the Grand Portage near Fond du Lac, after a long and hard day's work. Yesterday morning dawned with a heavy northeast wind and rain which had been falling for 36 hours previous. We had intended to start from Sandy Lake early yesterday morning, but the wind and rain prevented. The storm having abated somewhat we embarked at nine o'clock. The weather continued cloudy, cold, and damp all day. The late rains had raised the Savanna River, and we found no difficulty in ascending it, except that we had to contend with a strong current. We reached the Savanna Portage at three o'clock in the afternoon, and tied our packs to cross it. Mr Holt accompanied us from Sandy Lake to the upper end of the Savanna Portage to take across some goods which had arrived there for him from Fond du Lac. We got his men to pack a part of our things so that we had only one load each. The portage was as bad probably as rains could make it. There was mud and water almost the whole way, sometimes to the ankle, and sometimes to the knees. This portage is far famed for its muddy road; but no description have I ever heard given of it which equaled the reality at this time. The musquetoes were sufficiently annoying, though not as bad as they would have been had the weather been warmer. We reach the east end of the portage between six and seven o'clock, where we were to make our camp. This is the most celebrated place for musquetoes in all the country. It is open ground here, and as the weather was cool and the wind blowing from the east, we had the satisfaction of being quiet from them.

This morning we rose at four o'clock and parting with Mr Holt who returned to Sandy Lake, we pursued our journey down the east Savanna and St. Louis rivers. The river was up to full banks, and we were able to cut most of the points through the marshy ground on the upper part of the Savanna. At ten o'clock we reach the mouth of this river, and found ourselves floating down on the broad and beautiful St. Louis at a rapid rate. The water was so high that we could seen all the rapids without danger of touching the stones or breaking our canoe. At five o'clock we were at Knife Portage, a distance we were two days in making on our way up. We made this portage, and at half past seven arrived at the Grand Portage, tired and glad of rest.

10 We were up this morning shortly after four, and making preparations to cross the portage. We got our breakfast before starting, after which we tied our packs and prepared for our march, leaving our canoe at this point, expecting to find another at Fond du Lac. The mud and water on the portage rendered it almost impassible. Some three miles from the west end of the portage is a river of some size which we had to cross. We found it so swolled by the late rains and the current so swift that it was impossible to ford it. After a long delay spent in looking for a place to cross, we at length discovered some distance below the ordinary crossing place, trees fallen across the stream on which we made out to get over. We were obliged to make our way with our heavy packs to the lower landing at the east end of the portage, the water being too high to ascend to the second rapids with a canoe. The ground in this neighborhood is all cut up into sharp steep hills and deep ravines. We reached the river about eleven o'clock after a diligent and fatiguing forenoon's work of carrying heavy packs through the mud and water and over these hills and ravines, when the portage road could hardly have been worse.

Some time before reaching the river we sent Mr Wheeler forward by a more direct course to the village to send up a canoe to the landing for us and our baggage. After waiting for a canoe an hour or more, Mr. W. came to us saying he had walked hard all the time since he left us but has not found the village. He had taken a foot path which led in a wrong direction and followed it till he became convinced he was wrong, and then returned. We now all started together for the village which lay below us some mile and a half. The ground over which we travelled was all cut up into hills and ravines. As soon as we reached the top of a hill we immediately descended into a deep valley, and as soon as at the bottom, we ascended another hill. At length we emerged from the woods, and the first object which greeted the eye was a steam vessel lying along side the bank of the river. This is the first steam vessel which ever entered the St. Louis, and her arrival at this place will almost form an era in the history of Minnesota. There is now no doubt of the practicability of boats passing the first twenty miles of this river to the village of Fond du Lac.

We now sent a canoe up to the Rapids for our baggage. Here we met several of our friends from Lapointe by whom we learnt that our families were well.

11 Having made arrangements with the Captain of the Manhattan for our passage to Lapointe, we went on board the vessel ~~this~~ last evening expecting to sail early in this morning. It rained during the night, and this morning the atmosphere was dark and full of mist. It was six o'clock when the boat left. It proceeded slowly and cautiously down the river feeling her way carefully among the sharp turns in the river, and its shallow places. We proceeded on without feeling the bottom, and finally passed the sand bar at the mouth in safety and found ourselves on the expanded surface of Lake Superior. At this time the clouds were dispersing, and the sun began to shine. The wind which had been blowing strongly from the

east during the preceding night, had died away and gave us a smooth sea. Till past noon occasionally a low fog arose from the lake, and obstructed our view on one side or the other for a time. Most of the time the shore was visible from the vessel, with all its points and bays distinct. The dark outline of the north shore of the lake was most of the time visible in the distance on the other hand. In the afternoon we arrived among the Islands, and going outside of some of them, we had a near or distant view of the larger part of them. The scenery here is beautiful, and the whole scene of vision during the day was on the whole enchanting, and the passage as pleasant as could be desired. The boat was not crowded with passengers, and the company was agreeable & intelligent. We arrived at Lapointe at six o'clock in the evening, glad once more to see our home and greet our families and friends, after an absence of more than five weeks in the wilderness. The distance between Fondu Lac and this place is over one hundred miles.

Conclusion.

It has been the aim in taking the above notes to notice such things as may have a bearing on ~~the~~ our future plans and movements, if the Board should still continue to prosecute missionary operations among these Indians. The Indians will without doubt, at least most of them, be removed from the lands which they now occupy, and have sold, lying in Wisconsin and the Southern part of Minesota Territory. They must go to some part of the country which we have passed through, and which has been described above. We were desirous to know whether there is any tract of country in this region to which we can remove, and invite the Indians to go with us, where there is a fair prospect that a mission can be sustained, and where the Indians can find the means of subsistence. They must in future resort more to agricultural pursuits than they have done heretofore to obtain the means of living. The game of their country is diminishing rapidly. They are shortly to be brought into narrower limits. If there is therefore any good land which is accessible and suitable for cultivation in the country which they yet own, it seems to us desirable that it be searched out, and that the Indians be encouraged to settle on it. To search for such spots was one of the principle objects we kept before our minds on this journey.

The impression left on our minds respecting the country we passed through, as a whole, was that it is most miserably poor. There is a great deal of gravelly, sandy, and barren soil. which is not fit for tillage. There is some pine timber on portions of it, especially on the margin of some of the lakes and streams which at some future time may be valuable. But I cannot conceive that much of the country will ever be called for for actual settlement by the white inhabitants of these states. What can they make of it, or from it? It has nothing to recommend it but its climate. This is good; probably none in the world more healthy.

It abounds in lakes. These lakes are stored with fish a certain seasons of the year. Many of its streams and lakes produce the wild rice, which furnish the means of sustenance to the Indian when he can obtain it, but neither fish or the rice can ever become articles of commerce to much extent. These are at present the two principle resources of living for the Indians throughout this region. Very few large animals are taken. Comparatively little corn and vegitables are raised; Wild waterfowls are found here in more or less quantities in the spring and fall.

There are small tracts of land in various places which might be cultivated. There is probably enough good land to accommodate and subsist all the Indians which will be likely ever to settle here, together with what means of subsistence the may derive from the natural productions of the country.

The best portion of the country which we saw, was in our judgment around Leech Lake and Red Lake. These lakes are the largest in this region. The land on their borders is of the best quality of any we saw, and the fish in them is more abundant and better than in the others. Leech Lake is the largest and has the most extensive tract of good land on its borders. It is the nearest and most accessible. There is at present no mission there. Several stations at different points on this lake might be established. The bands of Indians now inhabiting here are larger than at any other place in this vicinity. They are the worst to manage probable at present of any of the Ojibwas. They have long been known by the name of the Pillagers, a name which they probably merit. They have never till recently come much under the influence of the Government of the U. States. They will hereafter be placed more under restraints than they have been.

Governor Ramsey, who is Superintendent of the Indian Affairs of the Government for this North west country, has expressed it as his opinion, that Leech Lake is the place where the Indian Agency for the Ojibwas ought to be located. This I believe is also the opinion of other Government officers, as well as of ourselves. It probably would have been put there, instead of at Sandy Lake, if an arrangement could have been made with those Indians, so that ~~these~~ the Indians who are to be removed might be received cordially and peaceably among them. But this is not now the case. A jealousy at present exists on account of the Lake Superior and Mississippi bands receiving a much larger annuity than the Indians of this region. It is to be hoped that an arrangement will soon be made with the Indians of this whole Northwestern region, by which they will share equally in all annuities, & the aid of farmers and mechanics, and the privileges of schools sustained among them by the funds of the U.States' Government, and that they will feel that all the country they have left belongs to them all in common. Such an arrangement will tend much to promote harmony among the Indians, and give the Government much more influence over them than it now has. The Government have expressed a desire to effect such an arrangement. Should it take place it is not improbable, I think, that the Agency may be removed to Leech Lake.

As things now are we do not see any spot where we should wish to make much of an establishment, or to which we could encourage our Indians generally to go with us. I think if we remove from this lake we ought go beyond the Mississippi. It is the policy of the Government to draw the Indians west of that river. But nearly all land west of the Mississippi is claimed by the Indians now residing there, and they will not at present, without compensation, permit the Lake Superior Indians willingly to settle there.

We do not wish to interfere with fields already occupied by other societies. We are waiting for further developments of Providence, and I feel considerable confidence, that something will be done in a few months to open the way for our Indians to remove, if they choose beyond the Mississippi; or they will be suffered to remain in the region of this lake. It is now certain, I suppose that nothing further will be done to remove them this fall.

If by their removal they can be withdrawn in any good measure, from the influence of bad white men and of whiskey, I shall not regret to see their removal accomplished. These are evils which are every year growing upon them, and sinking them deeper in ~~hopeless~~ degradation and hopeless misery. The Government have it in their power to do much for them, and I believe are well disposed towards them; but how much they will really accomplish for their good is doubtful. It is difficult to place the right kind of men here to accomplish what they wish to see accomplished.

One of the objects I had in view in this journey was to ascertain what plan the Government have in view in the establishment of schools among the Ojibwas in future, and what propositions they have to make to us on this subject. But in this respect we failed to obtain the information desired. Neither Governor Ramsey, nor the Subagent had received any definite information or instructions on this subject, except what I last Spring communicated to you. We conversed freely with them on the subject of the removal of our mission, the establishment of manual labour schools, etc. And requested to be informed if any new instructions on these subjects should be communicated from Washington. But no communication has yet been received.

Respecting the property here and at Bad River, the probability is that there must be considerable sacrifice on it if we remove. The stock can probably be disposed of for nearly its full value. There may be an opportunity to dispose of the buildings and improvements for something; but I fear the Board will not realize ~~for~~ them any thing what they have cost. The fences and buildings will fast go to decay, unless expense is every year laid out to keep them in repair. It would be better, in my opinion, to sell them at a low price, when the mission no longer wants to occupy them, than to keep them, with the hope that they might be sold for more a few years hence. I do not know that there will be any market for them.

The land here has never been surveyed and laid off into sections, and of course has not come into market. All we can hold is our improvements and the right to buy it, when it shall come into market. The removal of the Indians will probably take away nearly all the business from this place for the present. There is not a great amount of other property that would be sacrificed by our removing.

S. Hall.

Rev. Sherman Hall
La Pointe, Lake Superior
August 1850.
Recd. Nov. 8, 1850.

Ansd April 9.

Extract from a letter of Rev. S. Hall, dated

La Pointe, Lake Superior
92 Dec 30th 1850

Rev S. B. Treat

Dear Sir:

I suppose by this time you have returned to Boston, to resume your labors at the Missionary House. I hope you find your health much improved.

I have sent several communications to Boston during your absence designed to keep the Prudential Committee informed of the state of things here. Since I wrote last, more than two months ago, I have been to Sandy Lake the present location of the Ojibwa Ind. Agency. I was there during the annuity payment. My object in going was to learn what are the intentions of the Government towards the Indians, and what course they intend to pursue with respect to their removal. On these points however I obtained but little new information.

Early last spring the Indians residing on the ceded lands were informed that the President required them to remove in accordance with treaty stipulations. They were also directed to hold themselves in readiness to start when ordered, and were told that their removal would take place during the past summer. Much was said to them by the agents of the Government to induce them to remove, & preparations were made to some extent to effect their removal. But no order came from the Government for them actually to remove. Things remained in this state of suspense till October, when notice was sent them that their annuity would be ready for them at Sandy Lake by the 25th of that month. The season was now so far advanced that many of those residing at the greatest distance from the Agency found it impracticable to attend the payment. When those who attended arrived at Sandy Lake they found the Agent absent. He had gone to St Louis for the money with which to make the payment. The goods had previously been forwarded. On the 24th of Nov. the Agent returned, but brought no money

For some reason or other, it was not ready. On his return the Agent distributed among the Indians, the goods due to them for this year. The payment did not close so that the Indians were dismissed, until the 3d of Dec. Thus, besides being called there at a season altogether too late, they were detained between five and six weeks, when, if the preperations for payment had been duly made, they need not have been detained over two. The consequence of so long detention was that the Government had not provisions to feed them as they ought to have been fed. After they had been aſsembled some two weeks, sickness began to prevail among them, and spread extensivly through their camps. Many deaths occurred. The number of deaths was variously reported. Some estimates make it over a hundred. My opinion is that not less than 70 or 80 were buried at Sandy Lake. In some instances as many as eight or nine deaths occurred within 24 hours. Many of the Indians had to transfer their claims to the money due them, to traders for provisions with which to get home, for which they had to pay an enormously high price. By the time payment was over i was high winter. The ground was covered to nearly one foot in depth with snow. The streams and lakes were all closed. The Indians were from one hundred to three hundred miles from their homes. Of course they had to throw away their canoes, and carry their goods to their families on their backs. Many had relied on their money, to purchase articles much needed for their comfort and subsistence the present winter. Others had relied on their annuity, but were unable to get either goods, or money, and must suffer in consequence.

I think there is evidently injustice done to the Indians in such management. It is not fulfilling to them promptly, and in good faith their treaty stipulations. If it is asked, who is in fault, the answer is, Congreſs should have made the appropriation for the payment of these annuities much earlier, and the Officers of the Government should have been ready for the payment at least one month earlier than the Indians were called to Sandy Lake. The course that has been pursued with the Indians this season, is bad policy. Their smith and farmer were removed from this band last spring. They were ordered not to plant their grounds. They were told that they would be removed during the summer, and that they would be aided in their new homes, by the Government during the present winter. They have not been removed. They have not been aided by the Government this winter, and had they obeyed the Agents of the Government, and neglected to provide for themselves here, and had resolved to remove at their call, they would have been in a very destitute condition this winter. They all feel that what they received this payment has cost them more than it was worth. Many say they are resolved never to go to Sandy Lake to attend another. They are disgusted with the place and will remember their visit there a long time. Many talk of relinquishing their payments altogether, and are resolved to remain where they are. It seems to me the Government could not have taken a more unwise course than they have pursued for the last few months, if they wish to effect peacably their removal. This payment has done much to disaffect ~~the [illegible] of the~~ minds of the Indians toward the Government. I do not think they have the confidence in the Government, nor the respect for its agents and officers, which they formerly had.

No orders have been issued from Washington respecting the removal of the Indians since early last summer, so far as I can learn. An appropriation was voted by Congress for this purpose last session, as you know. The removal will be attempted, I have no doubt, next season. In my opinion the first step to be taken, if the attempt is succesful, is to make a treaty with the Indians, whose lands are not yet sold, and purchase these lands for the Indians to occupy in common, and give them all an annuity in common.

If this is not done the troubles will increase every year. I suppose that representations to this effect have been made to the Department at Washington. But no appropriation has been made for holding such a treaty as I can learn, and whether anything will be done appears to me uncertain.

No communication has been received from the Department respecting the removal, and change in the character of our school, since what I communicated to you before on these subjects. I do not think any thing more will be done about it until it is determined where to locate the Indians who are to be removed. I think there is no prospect that this subject will be settled so that we can become established at any new post under a year and a half or two years. My mind has become settled in the conviction that it is our duty to keep quietly about our work here until there are other developements of Providence. All is quiet here at present, and there is as much encouragement to labour for the spiritual good of the Indians, as at any previous time. The number at our meetings has rather increased during the past year. Our meetings are interesting at present. Some seem to be inquiring after the truth.

Yours truly

S. Hall.

S. Hall
La Pointe. Dec. 30. 50
Rec'd Feb. 12
Regd April 9

Lapointe, Lake Superior
Feb. 24th 1851

Rev. Selah B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Your letters of Dec. 17 & 19 to the Members of the Ojibwa Mission were received by our last mail. We are glad to hear of your return to your labours at the Missionary House, and congratulate you on the kind Providence which delivered you in time of peril, and has restored you partially to health.

The sentiments which you utter in your letters respecting the importance and influence of deep practical piety upon our happiness and usefulness as missionaries, we feel to be important. Missionaries are truly the centres of light in the communities that surround them; and if the light in them be darkness, the darkness is great indeed. I trust we are in some measure aware that it is not enough to preach the doctrines and precepts of Christianity; but that we should first allow them to have their proper influence upon our own hearts. The light and heat they kindle there is the source, under God, of the Missionary's success. He who walks most with God is best prepared to reach the heart with the truths of the gospel, and will most effectually recommend it in his life!

I have sent a number of communications to the Missionary House since you left. These I suppose you will see. In one long one last fall I gave an account of our trip last summer ~~to~~ the Upper Mississippi. I suppose an attempt will be made to remove the Indians next summer. I understand ~~that~~ an additional sum had been voted by Congress for this purpose at the present session.

The Indians in some parts of the country are muc dissatisfied about the occurrences at the payment last fall, and think themselves to have been wronged. Some time ago a chief of the Mississippi of considerable influence, named Hole-in-the-day, went to St Paul and there made a public speech in which he speaks strongly of their wrongs by the Government, and intimates that the friendship hitherto existing between his tribe and the Whites may be interrupted, if their wrongs are not redressed. He says that treaty stipulations have not been carried out on the part of the Government. He attributes much of the present poverty and suffering of the Indians to the fact of having sold their lands, and says that they have to go so far to obtain their annuities, that they cost them more than they are worth. He attributes the cause of the sickness at Sandy Lake last fall, by which many lost their lives, to bad provisions which were then dealt out to them. It is my opinion that the Government did not deal by them as they ought. They should have been ready for the payment as early as Sept. They should have had the money and goods all on the ground at the time set for payment. They should have furnished them all the provisions due to them at the payment, which I suppose was not done. They should have paid them their money in full which was not done. Some of the flour dealt out to them was much damaged. How much influence this has in producing disease and death among them I cannot say. But I believe there were other causes than bad provisions to produce disease at the time. It is stated that two hundred died. I think this number is too large. But it is certain there was great suffering and mortality among them.

It is reported that there will probably be an attempt to make a new treaty with them next summer by which the whole of them will be allowed to share equally in future annuities. I do not think the Indians from these parts can be removed peaceably unless some such arrangement is made; and other provisions made for their future subsistence and improvement than those existing at present. The country unsold will hardly subsist those now occupying it in their present mode of life. To crowd as many more into it must be disastrous to many, especially with the present state of feeling among the Indians themselves, unleſs in some way they can be made to derive more of their living from the cultivated products of the earth.

There is a petition now getting up to allow the half breeds and white men married Indian and half breed women, and also civilized Indians to remain in their homes and still share, as formerly, in the annuities paid to the tribe. The order for the removal deprives all who refuse to remove from sharing in the annuity payments in future. Should this petition be succeſsful, I have no doubt many of the Indians will adopt the dreſs and many of the habits of civilized life, and remain where they are. This claſs of citizens are entitled to vote at elections by the constitution of this State and the laws of Minnesota.

At present all is quiet here. Our little Indian congregation has not diminished during the winter. Those who ever attend our public meetings have been punctual and regular in their attendance. Good attention has been apparently given in the house of God. Most of the church members appear at present to be in a good state of mind, and I hope are advancing in the road that leads to life. One or two profeſs to have had their minds unusually exercised on religious subjects within a few months past. Most of our people will soon remove to their sugar bushes on Bad River, where we design to be with them more or leſs, and hold meetings regularly on the Sabbath.

It is a time of uncommon scarcity for food among both Indians and half breeds. On account of the contemplated removal of the Indians, the traders provided but a small quantity of provisions for the trade last summer. Fish were very scarce last fall and many were away at the payment at the time they are usually taken in the greatest abundance. No stock was therefore laid in. They are very scarce this winter, at the same time they are almost the whole dependance of a large portion of the people. We have from five to fifteen visitors almost every day begging for a little quantity of food. We have seen some cases where they were apparently very hungry. But I think there have been no cases of very severe suffering. For a month yet to come many will have short fare.

I send herewith an order for our annual supplies from Boston. I have also sent to Mr. Merwin to procure some books published in N. York, which I wished to obtain, which he will send to Boston to be packed with our goods, and will also send his bill to Mr Hill. Some of the books sent for are for others. My Biblical Repository for has not yet come. As it is to be hereafter connected with the Bibliotheca Sacra, I have thought, that possibly the subscription may be discontinued. I should like to have it.

You have, I presume, before this seen Mr Wheeler, and you will confer with him upon all important subjects connected with our mission. I have written him several times and have endeavoured to communicate all the information of importance which I have in my possession.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall,
La Pointe, Feb. 24, 1851.
Rec'd April 5, 1851.
Acknowledged April 9.

Lloyd Green & wife - full - & Lemar
Mr Morreau
. Mr Morrin & daugt . 4 in traders fam-
Hz & wife Some blind - some away

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
March 10th 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

In forwarding a list of articles to be furnished for the use of this station, which I did by our last mail, I omitted a few which I will thank you to add to the list. They are the following:

1 oz. Onion Seed
1 " Raddish do.
1 Paper Lettuce do.
1 do. Drumhead Cabbage, do.
1 oz Early Scalloped Summer Squash.
1 " " Crookneck " do.
1 " Long Prickly Cucumber. Seed
1 Paper Early Frame do do.
1 " Long Blood Beet do.
1 " Turnip. do. do.
1 Pr Men's Thick Boots, No. 8.
1# Alum.
4 vols. Barnes' Notes, viz. on the Gospels, Acts, and Romans, for one of our neighbors.

The Bibliotheca Sacra & Am. B. Repository for Jan. 1851 has come to hand.
The mission family are all well.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Lapointe, Wis.
March 11.

Free
S. Hall P.M.

Rev. Selah B. Treat
Missionary House.
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

Rev. S. Hall,
Lapointe L.S. March 10, 1851.
Recd. April 22, 1851.
A. " " " , by H.H.
Pur.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
March 24th 1851.

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

Since I last wrote you a letter has been received by the chief of this band, from the Indian Agent, informing him that his "great father" at Washington has sent him word that he must remove from these lands early next summer. He was requested to tell his young men not to plant next spring. The agent promised that he would plant for them at Fond du Lac. From all I can learn I suppose the present plan is to remove the Indians from this quarter to the nearest point on the land yet unsold. For these Indians that point will be Fond du Lac and the north shore of this lake. A considerable quantity of provisions are advertised to be contracted for, to be delivered at this place and Fond du Lac, to be furnished the Indians who remove. I understand a large quantity of net twine and other aparatus for fishing is to be furnished to those who will remove to Fond du Lac and the north shore of the Lake. The Indians from the St. Croix and Pokeguma I am told are to be removed to Mille Lac which is on the southernmost border of the Indian land. The line runs through that lake, and gives most of it to the United States. The land on that lake is among the best in the country and will probably soon be settled. There is but little hope therefore that they will remain long undisturbed there.

What the ultimate plans of the Government are I do not certainly know. But I think they will try to effect another treaty soon, and that they will try to draw the Indians further to the interior. I see little hope for them, unless they will abandon their present mode of life, and go to work tilling the ground, and will follow other industrial pursuits. They have country enough, if they would develop its resources, to furnish them with all they would need. But the course of Providence seems to say that they must work or starve.

What course it will be our duty to pursue does not yet appear to me plain. I have so far refrained altogether from advising the Indians to any course, for I do not know what advice to give. My opinion is, that not many of them from this place will remain about Fond du Lac much longer than they are fed on Government provisions. They will be back on long visits to their old homes, especially as they in nobody's way, so long as they conduct properly. I think it our duty to wait awhile and see what turn things take, before we take any steps involving much expense.

Nothing further has been communicated respecting the establishment of manual labour schools, since what I communicated to you last spring. The plan I believe is still adhered to, but when it is to be carried into effect is beyond my knowledge.

The Indians are very unwilling to remove, but I suppose most of those about us will submit and go quietly if they must. There seems less agitation now than there was last summer. Probably most do not intend to remove not to come back again.

There have been some rather hopeful appearances for a few months past among a few. But what changes a few months to come will produce we can hardly anticipate. But we are sure all things are in the hands of Him who can bring order out of confusion, and who is able to make all these events which look as if they were against us, accomplish the very object for which we have been long labouring. We are sure that all these things do not transpire without his notice.

Yours truly

S. Hall

P.S. I have just returned from Bad River in company with Mr Pulsifer, whither I went on Saturday to spend the Sabbath with the Indians in their sugar camps and preach to them. The ice on the lake and rivers has become suddenly bad; on account of the danger of crossing the river not more that half our usual number were present. In crossing the lake to-day we found the ice very weak and dangerous to walk on. Once the ice gave way under Mr Pulsifer and he fell through to the shoulders. Had he been alone there is scarcely ~~a probability~~ a possibility ~~that~~ he would have escaped drowning. But through a kind Providence we have, after much difficulty and danger, reached our home. May our lives which have been graciously preserved be devoted with renewed ardor to the service of Him who has preserved them.

Rev. Sh. Hall

La Pointe, March 24. 51

Rec April 26.

Ans'd May 30

Lapointe, May 15. 1851

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir.

Your letters of April 9th addressed, one to me, and one to the Mission, came to hand on the ninth inst. They came by the way of the Mississippi and St. Croix, and came quicker than any other communications we have ever received by that route.

The changes which the Prudential Committee propose to make in the plans, and operations of our mission were to us somewhat unexpected. It seems to me probable that there are considerations which were overlooked, or were not fully weighed in all their bearings, in deciding some points where important changes are to be made. Before these changes are adopted and carried into effect, I would respectfully submit a few considerations which it seems to me are of sufficient importance to call for a review of some of the decisions of the Committee.

As to the remark, that these Indians in your opinion will not be required to remove at present, for want of the necessary preliminary arrangements, these arrangements, in the estimation of the agents of the Government, are soon to be completed, and the Indians are already sent for for this purpose. But that they will not be _driven_ away from their lands by _force_, I agree with you. But assuming that this band shall be permitted to remain on the lands they now occupy, what then ought to be the policy of the mission? Ought the station at Lapointe to be abandoned, and that at Bad River retained and strengthed?.

In your reasoning in relation to this point, you assume that the true policy, in every point of view, is for the Indians to devote themselves to agriculture. I suppose you mean exclusively, or nearly so. Though this may be true with regard to most of the Indians in the interior, I think it is not a thing to be taken for granted with regard to the Indians on the Lake. They are universally fishermen. The water is the element from which they derive the principal share of their living. This has been the case with them for time further back than memory can reach. To them a necessary article of diet is wanting if they are not supplied with fish, as much as to you when your bread fails. Nor do I see any objection to their following fishing as a means of subsistence, or of acquiring property. I do not see why they may not improve in these employments. I do not see that any thing of material ~~advantage~~ importance would be gained by breaking up these tastes and habits, and by making them exclusively agricultural, especially considering the nature of the country they inhabit, and its climate which, with its soil generally, are not very well adapted to agricultural pursuits. Fishing does not operate so deliteriously upon their character as the chase does. It necessarily keeps them much more stationary, and hence those savages who obtain their living principally by fishing are less ferocious and untamable than those who follow the chase. And to this too I attribute in a great measure the difference in this respect between the Lake Indians and those of the interior.

This is the character and these the habits of the Indians of this band generally. To induce them to abandon their fishing, and give themselves wholly to agricultural pursuits, is no easy task. I believe it is impossible. As long as they can pitch their tents by the lake shore, and set their nets at night, and find in them the next morning a supply for the day, they will not be found felling large forest trees and clearing and cultivating the ground under them extensively. From the time I first came to this country, now nearly twenty years, it has been the habit of the Indians generally of this band and of a considerable portion of the half breeds and French to make their sugar on Bad River. After the sugar season closes they retire from their sugar camps, ~~they retire~~ to the place where the mission there is located, and a considerable portion of them remain there for some time, while they can obtain fish in the adjacent rivers. During this season they make small gardens. Some stay there a longer and some a shorter time, but nearly all have retired from there by July. They go back there in the fall while they are gathering in their small crops. Then they generally retire to the lake, a few perhaps to their hunting grounds, and do not return till the next season for sugar making.

The habits of the Indians being so, I doubted the policy of establishing a permanent station at Bad River, and objected to it. Mr Wheeler was of a different opinion. I proposed Lapointe be made the central point of our operations, and that a portion of us go to Bad River when the Indians should be there and retire when they retired, and that only some temporary buildings should be erected till we should be able to ascertain whether anything more would be needed. Mr Wheeler had formed a plan for settling the Indians there, and was somewhat sanguine of success. I was not certain he was right and I wrong, and yeild- to those who entertained different views from my own. A house was erected and the station established. About this time the Government placed a farmer and a carpenter there for the benefit of the Indians. A few indifferent log houses were erected. Some were rendered habitable and some were never finished. All but two or three are now gone to decay. The Indian gardens were considerably enlarged, and some other improvements were made A few families of Indians have passed one or two winters there. But still the habits of the Indians are not materially changed — not of any of them. They still leave Bad River a large portion of the year. I think there is only one who regards Bad River as his home for the year round, and he is a Catholic and not a very desirable member of my community. Such is the past. I can see nothing which promises much better results, if the experiment is continued, with the aid the mission can give to the Indians in building and farming. The Government may do something for them in this respect, but I fear that this is doubtfull. A boarding school might draw a few to the place to remain more permanently.

But suppose some were disposed to attach themselves to the mission and settle by it. There are some serious difficulties to be encountered. Bad River is not a Paradise. A man must labor there to get his living by farming. An Indian has no capital to begin with. He has not food for his first weeks subsistence. He must hunt and fish for it. He has no fixed habits of industry. He has not stability of character and resolution, such as every man must have to meet difficulties and overcome them. It will take a long series of years to give him this character under the most favorable circumstances. He lacks enterprise too. You cannot expect him therefore to take his axe and his hoe, and follow steady hard labor the year round. If you calculate on this you will be disappointed. Then what can he raise at Bad River? Corn, potatoes and turnips are about the only things he can be expected to cultivate. Corn is then a very uncertain crop and at best not very abundant. And will he live on these exclusively? Not if by placing himself on the lake shore, he can obtain abundance of fish. He will be absent from his farm a considerable portion of the year.

These are some of the difficulties of settling the Indians at Bad River. I think there is much reason to fear that the result will not answer the expectations of the Committee. To carry out the plan must involve considerably heavy expense to the Board or the Government, unless conducted on a very small scale. I should make no objection to a small manual labor school there particularily if the Government would bear the principle part of the expense. But as to the hope of settling many of the Indians there, I fear it will prove delusive. The theory is captivating, but facts are all against its realization. The Indians will still prefer to get their living by fishing rather than by farming. Especially will this be the case with the more industrious of them; particularily with those who adopt civilized habits and wish to improve if there is a market for fish, as no doubt there will be, if they are permitted to remain on this part of the Lake.

What is needed most to induce them to improve, aside from religious motives, is stimulus to industry. They need employment. Can the mission afford them that employment? To do that would give it too much of a secular character, and make it a farming establishment rather than a missionary establishment.

Is it expedient to abandon Lapointe.? I think not: and for the following reasons. All those families who feel any attachment to the mission from religious considerations regard Lapointe as their home. They are the only ones who feel much interest in religious instruction or in schools; and the only ones who attend religious meetings with much regularity. To take the mission away from this place, they would regard as abandoning them and would be discouraged. These families are improving and the children belonging to most of them bid fair to obtain such an education as shall be useful to them. A part of each of these families are the members of the church. We have such a hold on the remainder that we may hope with the blessing of God, that others from them will become subjects of renewing grace. They are regular attendants on our meetings generally. Now what will be the effect on these families of withdrawing the mission from this place. The progress of improvements in these families will stop in mid way, and much of our past labor for them will be thrown away. They will have no Sabbath, and very little religious instruction from the mission. The consequence will be that they will go to the Catholic meetings, because they have no other to attend; and the younger part of them especially will be as much Catholic as any thing else. Ought we to abandon them to such influences and give up the ground to the Catholics entirely?. Is it best to give up what we have got for the doubtful uncertainty of being more successful by removing all to Bad River.?

But if this station is discontinued will not these families remove to Bad River? I think not. I do not think there is one of them that will remove permanently to Bad River, and am very confident that most of them will not, for the reason that they must have fish to live, and from their attachment to this place. But most of them who adhere to us are half breeds and we ought to devote our labors to the Indians. I have ever acted on the principle that we ought to do good to all as we have opportunity, whoever we can draw within our influence. Protestant missionaries found these Catholics, scarcely elevated mentally, morally, or religiously above the Indians themselves. If abandoned now, they will fall back to the point from whence they started, in a short time. If the Board think it worthy of their efforts to save and elevate the Catholics of other parts of the world, why not those here? Besides these persons are to remain for life among the Indians and virtually to constitute "a part and parcel" of them. They will intermarry with them, Whatever we do for them we do in an important sense for the general cause. It is said that this band are not numerous enough to justify the maintenance of two stations. I have usually found as much that could be done in our work as I could attend to, notwithstanding the station at Bad River. You express a desire that a portion of the Indians should be settled beyond Lapointe on the lake. I suppose you must mean between this place and the mouth of the St Louis river: for the Indians own all beyond, and the Government will of course make no objections to their residence there. But where would you put your settlement? I know of no desirable place for one beyond the vicinity of Lapointe, certainly none so desirable as this. Of what Indians would you compose this settlement? None reside that way now, this side of Fond du Lac. If you would take the Indians from this place to form it, why not then just as well let them remain here, and keep a station here. Perhaps you would compose such a settlement of the Indians who are to be removed from the interior in this direction. In my opinion if the Indians from the interior were removed to the Lake, and could be allowed their choice, they would remain in the vicinity of Lapointe rather than go much beyond. If the Indians are permitted to remain on this part of the Lake there will be business done at this place. There will be trade in fish and furs, and this will be the central point of trade and commerce. Of course the Indians will be attracted here.

It has always been my opinion that as many or more heathen families are accessable to this station through the course of the year, as ~~to~~ the station at Bad River. If the Indians remain unmolested I do not see what influences are to effect any great change in this respect for the future.

As to Mr Pulsifer's removal to Bad River I would make the following suggestions. He has at present, and has the prospect of having for some time, an interesting school which is doing well. If he leaves it now it must be broken up. If he goes to Bad River what is there there for him, to do at present? I do not think he can have a school there for months to come, except of children of the mission family. I doubt whether the Government will establish a manual labor school there this season. In this however I may misjudge. The Indians will plant very little there this spring, and of course cannot support themselves there next fall and winter. Where then are the children to come from, The policy the Government is to pursue towards the Indians this summer will draw them away from that place.

If it were expedient for this station to hire a female teacher; they do not know where to find one, and probably a year would be consumed before one could be procured. A female teacher would not be able to manage the school successfully unless she possessed rare qualifications for managing a school. It seems to me that a female if employed at either station would be more proper for Bad River than for this, though I do not know exactly what the character of the school there will be. I would suggest the propriety of retaining Mr Sawyer there for another year, if the services of any one are needed, and he will stay.

If there is only one station to be maintained for these Indians I think it is a question which place ought to be given up. Nothing we have already gained will be lost by giving up that at Bad River, while something will be thrown away here. I however will not take the responsibility of deciding that question.

The above remarks are offered on the supposition that the Indians will not be removed from this place, and that their condition will remain substantially as it has been This however I do not expect. They will be called upon to remove. Though they may now refuse to go, such an influence will be exerted upon them in future as will gradually entice many of them at least, towards the Mississippi. It is certain I suppose that the agency will not be continued at Sandy Lake. It will be removed further down and to the west of that river. And the policy of the Government will be to draw the Indians that way all they can. Their continual calls and invitations will keep them always uneasy. Their plan this summer is to draw them to Fond du Lac and furnish them fishing materials and provisions to content them to so much of a change. What will be done after this I do not know. My view is that we better make no material change in our mission at present, certainly none which involves new expenses for buildings. Within three months new developments may be made. It is possible the aspect of things here will be very much changed in that time. I wish Mr Wheeler would not think of abandoning the field just now even if his plans at Bad River should fail. Let us hold on and see what can be done. Providence may open a field of usefulness for us yet. The idea of our abandoning the Indians is exceedingly painful to my mind.

Mr Watrous, the Ind. Agent, is to meet the Indians here in council about the tenth of June. When he comes I expect to learn more of their future plans and shall communicate all important information to you as soon as I can. On the other points discussed in your letter I need not remark now.

Yours truly
S. Hall

P. S. In reply to your remark about postage under the new law, I would say, that so long as I am Post Master be careful to have all letters adressed to me weighing less than half an ounce mailed free. In order to this satisfy your Post Master that I am entitled to have my letters postage free by law. Mr Hills all come so marked. Yours do not. With regard to letters addressed to other members of the mission, it makes no difference whether they are prepaid or not. If prepaid it is three cents the half ounce. If not it is five cents, but I get two out of the five for my commission so that it amounts to the same thing. If an unpaid letter is lost the Government must lose the postage. The case is different in sending letters to you. They should be prepaid. Forty per cent on all such postage comes back for commission The more there is collected at our office the better do the quarterly returns look

I wish you were on the ground and could judge with your own eyes. Is it not possible for you to take a trip this way this summer. You might come up the Lakes, cross over to the Mississippi by Fond du Lac and Sandy Lake, and by the Sioux Mission, and have a good view of the whole field. In the present state of things in this country would not such a trip more than pay the cost? I am sure it would conduce also to your health. We need your counsel very much.

Rev. S. Hall;

Lapointe, May 15, 1851.

Recd. June 7/51,

A.N.J. Aug 44

Lapointe Lake Superior,
May 19. 1851

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir,

Though I wrote you a long letter but a few days ago, there are still some points touching our mission on which I wish to express my views. You say in your letter to the mission, that you wish our system of operations made more aggressive, by which you mean that there be more preaching to pagan Indians. On this point my views correspond with your own. It has long been my opinion that the point in which we have been most defective in our system of operations, is that we have not bent our energies enough to the simple preaching of the gospel directly to the Indians in their own language. But this is the most difficult part of our work in this field. (1) Their language is one very difficult of acquisition for a foreigner who has already grown to years of maturity. It requires a man of very peculiar talents to acquire such a knowledge of it that he can preach in it intelligibly without long continued study and ~~effort~~ practice. (2) The difficulty of obtaining the means of subsistence in such a country as this, and the time necessarily given to the erection of buildings and to other indispensable improvements, & ~~to~~ the efforts of the mission to induce the Indians to build houses and become settled, has at some periods of our residence here occupied considerable of our attention. (3) But the greatest difficulty to be met in this part of our work is found in the character of the Indians themselves. They do not wish to hear the gospel, nor come under its influence. For this reason the majority keep out of its reach as much as possible. They will not attend religious meetings where the gospel is preached. They will not visit the missionary privately to hear the words of life. They come to him for food and clothes, and medicine, and for other favors; but not to beg for the bread of life. If offered them they have no relish for it. They seem scarcely to have a distinct idea of any thing beyond the present life — certainly of any thing different from it; and it is almost impossible to excite a particle of interest in their minds by telling them of the immortality and future destinies of the soul and of kindred subjects. They seem to comprehend next to nothing of what they hear. Besides this they are generally unwilling to hear at all, and do so only to make sport of what you say. Often when we visit them at their homes, we find them so engaged, perhaps in gambling, or in such a state of mind, that it is like "casting pearls before swine" to offer them the word of life. In such efforts to gain access to their minds we often meet a repulse. But still I believe this to be the true policy; that preaching the gospel to them should be put before all other means to reclaim them from degradation, heathenism, and ignorance. And above all should this be, if we hope to fit them for heaven. If we can make them true Christians, there is no doubt but they will improve in every other respect. It would be a pleasure to live among them, and wear out life in preaching the gospel to them, and in hard labour to assist them to improve their temporal condition, if they had a desire themselves to know the way of life and to improve. But as they now are it is a self denying, thankless labour. And he who would do it faithfully must be stimulated by higher motives than an earthly reward.

They are as indifferent to intellectual and social improvement, as to the doctrines and duties of Christianity. On this account very few will take any pains to have their children educated. And some other motives must be made to operate upon them to induce them to educate their children, before we can have flourishing schools among them on the plan we have heretofore pursued. We may therefore expect trials & discouragements, or aban don them altogether. The last alternative I am very unwilling to adopt. I hope God in his mercy will save some of them. I should like to see the plan of manual labour schools tried among these Indians on a small scale, if any are willing to engage in it.

It is at present a time of great trial with us. What God intends to do with us, and with this people we cannot now see. The future is enveloped in much obscurity. But still I do not see that we ought to despair. God may yet turn our captivity and fill our hearts with joy and gladness. The removal of the Indians will not necessarily destroy them. It may operate in the end, to bring them more in contact with the gospel and other means of improvement. We need to be deeply imbued with a spirit of love and compassion for them, and especially should we feel for their spiritual interests. With their present character, they are unfit for a pure and holy heaven. Nothing but the power of God operating by his Spirit through the truth on their hearts, can fit them for it. And who shall break to them the bread of life, if we do not? We need to be more like Jesus Christ, who to save just such souls as these, forgot his own happiness, in efforts to secure that of others.

From the most recent intelligence I have received, I suppose the following policy will be pursued by the Government for the present, in their efforts to remove the Indians. An effort will be made to remove the Lake Indians, as they are called, that is, those who reside on the lake and to the south of it in Wisconsin and Michigan, towards Fond du Lac. They will not try to get them beyond that place this season. The Indians of the St. Croix are to be removed to Mille Lac and towards the upper Mississippi. To effect this no compulsion is to used; but they will try what persuasion and presents will do. A large quantity of provisions is to be deposited at this place, Fond du Lac, and Sandy Lake. This is to be dealt out to them as an inducement to remain, when once they are removed from their old homes. That deposited here is to be used in aiding those of this place and such as must pass here ~~in~~ getting on to Fond du Lac. A council is to be held here ~~about~~ the 10th of June when they will receive formal orders to remove. The interior Indians are already sent for to come here with their families. Soon after they get to Fond du Lac there will be a payment ready for them at Sandy Lake and they will be called there. Perhaps they will be called there twice. This will occupy them till fall. Such as choose to remain about the head of Lake Superior will be furnished with nets, barrels and salt, for fishing. If they catch more fish than they wish to consume, the Government will buy it of them, and give it back in the winter, if they should get short of provisions.

This plan is adapted ~~is adapted~~ to draw all the Indians away from this place and Bad River after the middle of summer and keep them away at least till after their payments are over; at least all except the Christian Indians. No matter how averse they are to removing; if they can be fed by going to Fond du Lac, they will surely be there. But my impression is, that the greater part of this band will be back here in the winter and will make their sugar at Bad River next spring as usual, whether the Government give them liberty to remain here or not. Nor do I think the Government will make any objection to any of them settling here, if they wish to adopt the habits of civilized life. In that case they would be regarded as the half breeds are, and perhaps would be permitted to share in the annuities. But it will be the policy of the Government to draw the Indians to the Mississippi or beyond it. If the agency and payments are there, they will gradually draw that way.

It is said that the agency is to be located at a place called Paul's Prairie, not many miles west of the mouth of the Crowwing River, or on Leaf River which is I believe, a tributary of the Crowwing, and 50 or 60 miles to the west of the Mississippi, in the direction of Ottertail Lake. If the agency is removed to either of these places and the annuity paid there, it will not be worth going after from this place. I presume that a Government school will be located where the agency is. At Paul's Prairie the Government are now opening a large farm for the benefit of the Indians. I understand they have contracted to break 500 acres the present season.

No provision has been made by Congress for a treaty with the Indians to the north and west. It is not known that any will be attempted.

In view of these things it seems to me that our plain course is to make no new movement in any direction for the present. At present we have work to do. Let us do it, and see what Providence will furnish in future.

If the school fund is appropriated to the support of a manual labour school, I am inclined to think that the management of it will be offered to the Board, but on what conditions I do not know. Perhaps it may not be. Where the agency shall be located, if a farm and a scho are connected with it, there will probably be a good place for a preaching station ~~probably~~ for some one.

Entreating an interest in your prayers, that God would guide us all to know & do his will, I subscribe myself

Yours truly S. Hall

P. S. If the Prue Com have determined to abandon this station, I would suggest whether it would not be well to offer the property here for sale immediately.

Rev. S. Hall,
Lapointe, May 19, 1851.
Recd. June 10,
Ans. Aug 4

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (98-104)

Hall, Sherman
- 98. 23 June 1851
- 99. 7 July 1851
- 100. 7 July 1851
- 101. 18 July 1851
- 102. 27 August 1851
- 103. 20 Spetember 1851
- 104. 24 September 1851

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Lapointe, June 25 1851

Rev. S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir:

If you have received the last letter I wrote you, you will probably expect to hear more of the movements of the Government with Indians here by this time. Notice was sent to different bands in this section of country to meet the agent at this place for a council about the 10th of the present month. None, or very few obeyed the summons; nor has the agent himself yet come according to his appointment. I have heard that he was on the St Croix & Snake rivers endeavouring to get the Indians there to remove, and was detained there longer than he expected to be. He will not be here till July. I have also heard that several persons have been appointed to superintend the removal under the agent, some of whom will probably be here before long.

These Indians still say that it is their purpose not to remove, and seem more disposed just now to "live like white men", to use their own phrase, than they have done before, supposing this will save them. Mr Wheeler has opened a school at Bad River at their request at which there are from 20 to 30 daily attendants.

More also attend his meetings on the Sabbath since his return than at any time before. The School at Lapointe has also had an addition of some children within a few weeks. How long these things will last remains to be seen.

As yet we are all quiet, and it is so generally through- the whole Ojibwa country, so far as I can learn, with the exception of some slight disturbances between some portion of the more distant of them & the Sioux.

I shall keep you informed of all the movements here as much as possible.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev S. Hall
La Pointe, June 23, 1857
Rec^d July 5.
Augt 4, 1857

Lapointe, Wis
June 28

Free.
S. Hall, P.M.

Rev Selah B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass

Report of the Mission Station at Lapointe.

1 Laborers. Sherman Hall, Missionary.
Charles Pulsifer, Teacher. Mrs Betsey P. Hall
Mrs Hannah Pulsifer.
Henry Blatchford, Native Catechist.

2. Church. The Church at this Station comprises fifteen members, exclusive of those members connected with the mission families — in all 22. One has been added during the past year. Three have received letters of dismissal to other Churches. On the part of most of the members there has been a good degree of attention to the ordinances of the gospel & and a commedable apparent improvement in Christian character. In a few cases it is to be feared little progress in divine life has been made. There have been some cases of violation of the Sabbath by traveling on that day.

3. School. The whole number of scholars who have attended school during the past year is thirty eight. The average attendance has been twenty one each day. The ages of the pupils with one exception are from five to seventeen years. The various branches pursued are reading, spelling, Arithmetic (intellectual and written) book keeping, English grammar, geography and composition. One young man who is unable to labor much on account of lameness, has attended school & is learning to read and write the Ojibwa language that he may be able to read the Scriptures in his own tongue. The Bible is by all who have advanced far enough to read it morning and evening, and efforts have been made to impress its truths upon the hearts of the pupils. Singing is a

part of the devotional exercises of the school. Pains are taken to exert a christian influence over the youthful mind and implant in it the seeds of virtue and religion. The school has made very commendable progress during the past year.

4. Labors. The labors at this station have been conducted much as in former years. Two religious services have been maintained on the Sabbath regularly with the exception of a few Sabbaths. Two services also have been held in the English language. In connexion with these exercises a small Sabbath school has been attended. Meetings have been held also during the week. The Book of Genesis and 26 chapters of Exodus have been translated into the Ojibwa language for the purpose of being used in manuscript in giving instruction to the Indians. For the same purpose also some sermons have been written and translated.

5 The most interesting event which has occurred during the year as affecting the interests of this mission relates to the removal of the Indians from that portion of their country which has been ceded to the Government of the United States. Something more than a year ago the Indians were informed that the President required them, according to treaty stipulations, to remove from the lands which they had sold, to those further north and west. They were told that they would be removed last season. The removal however was deferred till the present season. Generally they are averse to removing, and did not expect to be called upon to remove. Their minds have been much agitated with this subject during the whole year. This state of public agitation however has not materially affected our labours thus far. Our religious meetings and our schools have been as well

attended as in former years. There has probably been no time when the Indians have appeared to have more confidence in their missionaries than at present. They seem to have an impression that if they turn their attention more towards civilization and adopt the dress and habits of the white man, it will save them from removal. An effort however is to be made to remove them. What the result will be remains to be seen. What influence these measures of the Government will have upon the future prospects of the mission cannot now be foreseen. Providence may overrule present events, which seem to portend evil, so that they shall turn to the advancement of his own Kingdom among this people.

There has been less intemperance among these Indians the past year, than during the previous year. No trader among this band has openly dealt ~~it~~ out intoxicating liquor to them. Some has doubtless been secretly furnished them. Some have gone to the settlement at the Ontonagon River and procured it there. Generally the band are gradually improving in their external condition, and if they could remain unmolested would probably improve more rapidly in future.

Station at Bad River.

L. H. Wheeler Missionary. Mrs Harriet W. Wheeler, & Miss Abby Spooner.

But little missionary labor has been performed at this station during the past year. Mr Wheeler with his family has been absent on a visit to the Eastern States most of the year till the first of June. After his return he opened a school which has been attended by about 60 different scholars, and the average daily attendance has been 25 or 30. His audiences on the Sabbath have considerably increased since his return. The Indians at Bad River have not planted as much as usual this spring for want of seed. They were so short for provisions last winter that they consumed most of their potatoes, and had few to plant.

S. Hall

Lapointe July 7th 1851

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, July 7, 1851
Rec'd July 24
Reply. Aug 4

Lapointe, Lake Superior
July 7th 1851.

Rev S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir:

Yours of June 4th was received a few days ago. I have written a short report of our station for the past year which I enclose with this. I have also made a few statements respecting the station at Bad River, as it may be that Mr Wheeler will not be able to forward a report in season for your purpose. He has the circular you sent.

I am not very much disappointed at the delay of the officers of the Government to give you the information respecting their movements among the Indians in this region, which you had expected. I suppose they do not care much to have people interfere with their affairs. I suppose the plan to remove these Indians was settled at Washington before the present Commissioner of Ind. Affairs came into office, and probably the subject has never troubled his mind much. I am of your opinion that the subject is left pretty much to Governor Ramsey; at least to effect the removal, & that what he recommends will be adopted. I think they know but little about these Indians at Washington, and probably take no great pains to inform themselves.

I suppose it is our best way to wait till we see what they do and shape our course accordingly; or at least till we can find out what they intend to do. And that may require us to hold ourselves in suspense longer than we shall like. But at all events I suppose it will avail nothing to be impatient and complain.

Some of the men to be employed in effecting the removal of the Indians have arrived here, and are going to work. I have some hope that those who have become somewhat settled and have houses will not be disturbed if they choose to remain and submit to the laws of the State. They will probably be compelled to give up their annuities. Mr Boutwell who was formerly ~~associated~~ connected with our mission is one of the assistants in the removal.

Mr Watrous ~~the~~ Indian Agent has not yet arrived. He is on his way to this place. He has recently seen Governor Ramsey and I hope to learn from him something more definitely respecting their plans for the future, if they have any. If I can obtain any information from him I will communicate it to you by the first opportunity.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall.
La Pointe, July 7, 185[illegible]
Recd July 24.
Ans'd Aug 4

Lapointe Lake Superior
July 18th 1851

Rev. Selah B. Treat

Dear Sir:

A Steamer has just arrived in our harbor, and as it will not leave till morning I will write you a hasty line to forward by it. The Indian agent for the Ojibwas arrived here about four days ago to commence the work of the removal. Several other persons employed by the Government for the same purpose have also arrived and are gone for the Indians who reside to the interior of the lake country. From him and from his movements I think I understand pretty well the intentions of the Government respecting the removal of the Indians. He told them in council a day or two since, that all were required to remove from the ceded territory, and that there could be no exceptions. — that if they refused to remove they would incur the displeasure of their Great Father & that they would be cut off from receiving their annuities in future. He did not say that any forcible measures would be resorted to, and I presume none will be at present. He told them that the Government wished them well & that the reason why they required them to remove was to protect them from the evils they constantly felt in coming in contact with the white people. He pledged himself ~~that~~ those who should remove should be subsisted in their new homes at the expense of the Government for one year. He also stated that he was opening a large farm west of the Mississippi near the Crow wing River and should have some twenty acres in crop the present season & he hoped to have 300 planted the next season; and though they required them to remove only to Fond du Lac he hoped they would prefer to remove to the west side of the Mississippi and there make their future homes.

In conversation he has told me that it is the wish of the Government to contrate the Indians as much as they can, and to place them at some point, or points, where they can be aided and induced themselves to cultivate the soil for a living. He says he thinks the agency will be located at some point not very far from the junction of the Crow wing river with the Mississippi, or farther to the west perhaps near Ottertail Lake. This will be determined next fall. I suppose it is certain that it will not be continued at Sandy Lake very long. It is the intention to employ the farmers, & mechanics supported by the funds of the Government in such localities as will tend to draw the Indians to some central point. The school fund he thinks will be devoted to the support of a manual labor school. But what shape it is to take I suppose is not yet decided.

From all this I suppose it is, and has been for some time past, the plan of the Government to draw the Indians of this region as much as possible to the West of the Mississippi. But I presume no interference will be made to made

with such as choose to settle down in any of the States and territories and become like the white citizens. In that case they will no longer be recognized as Indians, nor will the Government permit them to share in any Indian annuities. But if they retain their Indian habits they will use all efforts in their power to remove them. The agent tells them that as soon as they can remove, their annuity will be ready for them for the present year.

With what success these efforts to remove them will be attended remains to be seen. Many will not like to lose their annuities. If the pledge is fulfilled that they shall be subsisted at the expense of the Government, they may be induced to go for the present in considerable numbers.

As to the mission I think it is as unanimous opinion among us that we had better be entirely neutral & wait quietly to see what turn things take. Whatever may be our opinion of the policy of the Government or the necessity of the present movement, we can effect nothing by opposing it, and shall come into collision with the Government in a way which perhaps better be avoided, and at the same time we should be likely to lose the confidence of the Indians. Mysterious have been the ways of Providence with regard to the Indians. They are so still. I feel but little confidence in man. But I do hope God may overrule some of these events, as dark as they now appear, for good to them. I believe the intentions of the Government are humane; but there are almost insuperable difficulties in the way of effecting what they wish to effect with the Indians. These cannot live among white people and be Indians. Destruction certainly follows. My only hope for them is, that God would come and put his law in their hearts.

I wrote you a few days and forwarded a report of our Station for the past year.

Very truly Yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe July 18, 1857
Rec. Aug. 1
Ansd Aug 4

Lapointe, Lake Superior.
Aug. 27th 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

If you have received our letters, you have been already informed that the Agents of the Government have been some time at this place trying to collect the Indians here preparatory to their removal. Many have already assembled, and more are expected in a few weeks. By some urging, and the promise of some favors, the Agent has got a considerable portion of them to consent to remove to Fond du Lac. At first they were very unwilling to go, and tried to maintain the plea that they did not sell their land, but only the mineral on it, and that the Government had no right to require their removal at least till their country should be paid for. Their treaty contained no such stipulation, and of course, their plea was not listened to. They next came forward with a demand of two hundred thousand dollars as an indemnity for being required to remove so soon. To this the agent replied, that they were foolish to make such a demand — that they must remove — and that if they would not remove peaceably they would be removed forcibly — that they would see the force of the United States here soon. Since that, matters have assumed a more conciliatory turn. The chiefs have promised to remove and take their bands along with them; and the agent has promised them in writing that they shall be subsisted in their new homes for one year at the expense of the Government; that they shall receive their money payment this year at Fond du Lac, and that he will use his influence with the Department to get leave for the Chiefs to visit Washington next winter, to make known to the President in person their grievances. I have little doubt ~~that~~ most will go to Fond du Lac and remain till after the payments are over this fall, probably as long as they are fed; and possibly they may remain permanently.

Some points I think we may now regard as settled.

(1). That it is the determination of the Officers of the Government to remove all the Indians from the ceded lands in this region. That all who do not remove will not be allowed in future to participate in the annuities paid to the Indians by the Government. They will not, I presume, force away any who are settled and have houses and improvements, if they choose to remain. But in that case they must change their present relation to the Government. They cannot be Indians and citizens at the same time.

(2). No further aid will be given to the support of schools, farmers or others laboring for the benefit of the Indians on these ceded lands. Probably no countenance will be given to those now here, if they should wish to stay. We cannot encourage the Indians to stay without coming into collision with the Government.

(3). It is the policy of the Government to draw the Indians from this quarter to the Mississippi and west of it. They can not require them to go beyond Fond du Lac; but they will place inducements before them to go further. With this policy in view the Agency, the schools under their patronage, the farms, etc. will be carried to that region. They intend opening farms with the hope of inducing the Indians to cultivate them. They wish to concentrate the Indians more, and protect them from the influence of bad white men, and especially to keep them from the destructive influence of intoxicating liquors.

(4) The school funds will be appropriated to the support of manual labor schools.

I think the intentions of the Government are humane. They wish to protect the Indians. They cannot do it scattered as they now are, and while they are on lands where American citizens are allowed to settle. The vices they contract by their intercourse with lumbermen and others who are pressing on to their lands are dreadfully destructive to them. The theory of the Government on this subject looks well. But it is difficult to realize in practice what it seems to promise.

In view of these things, what course ought we to take? The Indians must remove. As things now are I think it best to encourage their removal. If any of them should refuse to remove, they would be kept in constant agitation, if they should not be removed by force. Very few of them would probably be willing to relinquish their annuities and settle down to become citizens. If a portion of their relatives were on the Indian lands, they would probably be soon drawn there too.

I feel inclined, if we are to break up here and follow the Indians, to go at once to the spot where the Government wish to settle them, and there make our stand, and invite all who have adhered to us to go with us. I do not think it wise to expend any money in attempting to establish at Fond du Lac. The Government wish them to go further.

It has been a question with me whether it is my duty to follow the Indians to a new home. My family is the principle objection. My children have arrived at such an age that I think they ought to be removed from the Indian country; at least part of them. On this subject I have before communicated my views to you. If you wish me to remain, I have not decided to leave the field yet. Providence may open a way where by my family can be provided for, and I remain. I do not think the field ought to be abandoned till we look about and see what can be done. At least I am willing to wait a little while.

I propose in the course of the fall, if my associates shall think it best, to visit the portion of the country where it is proposed to locate the Indians, and see for myself what the prospect for them there is. A large tract is already broken. A part is already in crop, and much more will be ready for crop next season. This families on or near the Crow-wing River a few miles from its junction with the Mississippi.

When a manual labour school is established, it will be located near the Agency. But the point is not yet fixed upon. Mr. Watrous, the Agent, says that it is the understanding between himself and Governor Ramsey, that when the school is established, the management shall be offered to us. But on what conditions I do not know.

It is impossible for us to break up and remove from this place this fall. I presume that more or less of our Indians will be here during the next winter. I have been for some time expecting to hear from you.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe
Aug 2 1852
Recd Sept 13
Ansd Sept 24.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Sept 20th 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Enclosed with this I send a statement of our mission respecting the estimate of expenses for the next year. But you will perceive that our statement is very indefinite. We do not know what to say on the subject. We suppose some change ought to be made before the close of another year, but we are not prepared to state what that change should be. It is probable, I think, that a considerable portion of the Indians will be removed from this region. And were they not to remove, I suppose the Committee would not continue both these stations.

I feel desirous to have the question decided as soon as it can be, what is to be done. If there is field for me among these Indians where there is a reasonable prospect that something may be done for their benefit, I am willing to stay with them and try to do them good. If not, I wish to retire to some other field, and not be an expense to the Board, while doing nothing for the Indians. For this season I have looked on with much interest to see what might be the result of the effort to remove the Indians, and what is likely to be their condition when removed. Though I think there is now a prospect most of the Indians will be removed from the ceded territory within a year or two, I dare not form an opinion as to what their condition will be. I do not however abandon the hope, ~~that~~ some place, or places, may be fixed upon, around which many of them may be gathered, where they will prosper and improve. I have little hope for them here. I do not think the Government will allow them to remain. And if they were to remain, whiskey would destroy them. This dreadful evil is growing worse every year. If they can be but partially protected from it on their own lands, it is better for them to be removed, than to be where they now are, and have no protection, with the temptation to drink constantly before them. It is said, that not less than twenty barrels of whiskey have been brough to this place, or carried by, all designed to be in readiness for the payment which is soon to take place at Fond d Lac. Almost every day more less drunken persons may be seen in our streets, and the night air resounds with their revelry. It never was so, to the same extent before. Whiskey sellers will not be allowed to remain among them on Indian territory. The evil will not be as ba as it threatens to be here.

I often feel like giving up in despair and leaving the field. But I do not know that this would be right. I trust the Lord, whose we are and in whose service we hope ever to be found, will in due time make the path of duty plain. If he has nothing more for us to do here, I would cheerfully retire. If he has, I hope he will grant me grace to do it, though my path may be beset with trials and perplexities.

A part of the Indians have already gone to Fond du Lac. Some 400 or 500 more are expecting to leave here within ten days. They are to receive the money part of their annuity at that place early in October. How many many of the Indians belonging to this place will remain there after payment, I do not know, but I presume many will return to spend the winter here.

I have recently received a letter from Dr. Brigham of the Am. Bible Society, stating that the Ojibwa Testament is out of print, and that they wish us to revise it preparatory to a new edition. It needs to be thoroughly revised before it is reprinted, and perhaps we may devote a part of our labors to that work during the coming winter, if the Committee give their approbation. Perhaps it is providential that this labor should be called for just at this time.

Since writing the above, your favors of the first and fourth of Aug. have been received. We thank you for them, and hope we shall derive profit from your suggestions and counsels. I am often conscious that I am far from feeling as deeply as I ought the importance of living and acting always as in the presence of the holy God. If we did but realize how great and holy a being he is, we should not live so carelessly nor to so little purpose.

I think I mentioned in my last, that I had thought some of visiting the Mississippi this fall, to see what can be found there to warrant our encouraging the Indians to go there with us to settle. I am not fully decided on going. The journey will be attended with some expense, and will consume from four to six weeks time, and I may not be able to obtain the information I desire. If I go, I hope to have an interview with Gov. Ramsey, and shall endeavour to find out something more about the establishment of a school, the location of the Agency, etc. The Agent informed me that they would allow no more for the support of our schools here after the quarter ending with June last. I have received nothing for the past year, but hope to get something.

Yours Truly

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Sept. 20. 1851

Recd Oct. 10.
Ansd Dec 15.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Sept. 24th 1851

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your circular to the Indian Missions of the A.B.C.F.M. dated Aug. 4, came to hand yesterday. We had already discussed the subject of appropriations for the next year, and a few days ago I wrote you informing you of the conclusions to which we came on that subject. I trust we shall give due consideration to the subjects which you touched upon in your letter, and that we shall have a due regard to economy both in regard to family expenses, and the general operations of the mission.

On one topic of your letter I will say a few words. I approve of encouraging the members of mission Churches to do all they can to support the gospel and maintain schools by their own means and exertions. I believe the effect upon themselves would be very salutary, and that it is a duty plainly inculcated in the Scriptures. It is hard work here however, to get the people to feel much obligation on this subject, or to do much. Gratitude does not seem to be indiginous to the soil of their hearts. They seem to feel that whatever is done for them *ought* to be done gratuitously. I suppose this will be the case in almost any community which has relied on others always to support religious and educational institutions among them. It will be the case too in a special manner among those but lately converted from heathenism, and they must be gradually taught their duty in this respect.

Not much can be expected from this community by way of defraying our expenses, or for benevolent objects in general at present. The people generally are very poor. Business is declining here on account of the anticipated removal, and our people find less profitable employment. We have not asked the people to pay any part of the expenses of the school, because the funds of the Government have been applied to pay the wages of a teacher, and books and other incidental expenses of the school have also been borne by the Government by our forwarding to Washington quarterly the regular vouchers. It may be different hereafter, should we remain here. Perhaps the subject demand more attention from us than we have given it.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Lapointe Wis.
Sept 25th

Free
S. Hall P.M.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston, Mass.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe Sept 24 '57
Rec'd Oct 15.
Ans'd Dec 15.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (105-111)

Hall, Sherman
- 105. 18 September 1851
- 106. 1 December 1851
- 107. 26 January 1852
- 108. 8 March 1852
- 109. 22 March 1852
- 110. May 1852
- 111. 28 July 1852

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Sept. 18th 1851

Henry Hill, Treasurer
of the A.B.C.F.M.

Dear Sir:

The time has arrived when you will expect us to present an estimate of the amount of funds which will be called for to sustain us and carry forward our operations for the year 1852. But such is the unsettled state of our mission at present and such the prospect for the future, that it is impossible for us to determine what changes ought to be made, and of the amount funds that will required. Important changes will probably be required in our mission within the next year. An effort is now making to remove the Indians from this region. Should it be successful, or partially so, it will probably be expedient for a part, or all of us, to remove to a new location during the next summer, or if that is inexpedient, to leave the field. But what expenses must be incurred in case we remove and commence anew, it is impossible for us now to state. We are unable to decide at present where a new station should be located, nor what the necessary buildings would cost, nor whether the Government will furnish any part of the funds to erect buildings and form an establishment.

If we should remove our families to the Mississippi, or beyond, the removal must be attended with considerable expense, considering the distance, on account of the difficulty of traveling.

Were we to remain here and carry on our operations as we have done in years past we suppose about the following amount would be required. Viz.

For Mr Hall's family, including the necessary repairs of buildings, fences, etc -	600.00

Brot Over	600.00	
For school, including books, etc	25.00.	
Mr Pulsifer's family	275.00.	
Henry Blatchford	300.00.	
Mr. Wheeler's family	400.00	
Miss Spooner, (including board)	100.00	
School and Medicines	30.00 =	$1730.00.

But considering the present stat of our affairs, we would suggest to the Committee whether it is not expedient to defer action on this subject for the present. It will not be necessary for the mission to make drafts to much amount on the treasury before next spring; and before that time we may be able to know what changes to recommend better than we do now, and what expenses they will require. In the mean time we can correspond with the Committee, and get their approval before adopting any new measures requiring additional expenses.

Yours truly,

S. Hall, in behalf of the mission.

Rev. S. Hall
Oct. 10. 1851.
A. " 23. "

Elements

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
Dec. 1st 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

Your favor of Sept. 24th has but recently reached me. I was aware that an order had been given to suspend the effort to remove the Indians for the present, but supposed it was issued, not on account of any change in the policy of the Government towards them. A telegraphic dispatch was sent to Washington a short time before this order was sent, asking for a military force to aid in the removal, and we supposed this order was given under the apprehension, that if the Indians were pushed to remove, an Indian war would be the consequence. We did not apprehend such a calamity, as the Indians manifested no hostile disposition, and supposed the order would be soon countermanded. But from your letter I infer that it was for other reasons that the order to suspend the removal was given; and I cannot but hope that the Indians on the borders of Lake Superior will be permitted to remain where they are, or at least, that some provision will be made for their settlement at some other place, if required to remove. To urge them off as the plan of the removal contemplated, with no provision for their future subsistence, and to a country poor and barren at best, and claimed by other Indians, while no one wants them to leave their present homes, seems to me to be unnecessary and unjust. If there was a tract of country to be had suitable for their settlement, and if the Government would do for them what they propose to do for the Sioux whose country they have recently bought, in breaking farms, building houses, and furnishing them with schools and other means of improvement, and where they could protect them from the baneful influences of the whiskey trade, I should not be averse to their removal. But whether such a tract of country can be found and obtained for them I do not know. If they remain within the limits of the chartered states, the General Government cannot exercise that control and protection over them, which they can exercise over those portions of territory under their own jurisdiction. Of course they cannot prevent the traffic in ardent spirits, nor remove from among them bad white men whose influence is corrupting to their morals and retards their improvement. We have in this state good and stringent laws against the traffic in intoxicating liquors, especially the furnishing them to Indians, but in such a community as this, it is very difficult to enforce them, from the want of moral power in the community.

Perhaps a statement of what has been done in relation to the removal and the present posture of affairs between the Government and the Indians may not be uninteresting to you. No material alteration in the plans of the Agent was made in consequence of the order to suspend the removal. Indeed this business was pretty well advanced before the order came. In order to get the Indians ~~from~~ in this section of country to consent to remove to Fond du Lac, he made them a written promise of the three following things, (1.) that they should be subsisted there for one year at the expense of the Government. (2) that he would use his influence with the heads of the Government to get leave for a deputation of their chiefs and head men to visit Washington, and represent their case in person to the President, who, they believe does not wish them to remove. And (3.) that they should receive their money payment at Fond du Lac instead of Sandy Lake, and to receive it early. On this condition the chiefs and a large majority of the Indians signed a paper on their part to take their families and remove to Fond du Lac. The agent told them in council, that if they did not find the conditions fulfilled on his part, they were at full liberty to return to their homes. The Agent also told them when he left this place to go to the Crow-wing to make the payment to the Indians there, that he would send them word when they must be at Fond du Lac to receive their money. Subsequently he sent to them to meet him there by the first of October. Some had already gone. Some were waiting here and some had not come out from the interior country. The Agent arrived there a few days later than the time appointed. The Indians from this neighborhood were some days later. And the bands from the Chippeway were later still.

When I arrived at Fond du Lac, which was before near all the Indians had assembled, I found the agent holding a council with the Indians there, trying to persuade them to defer receiving their money till he could go to Sandy Lake and pay the Indians who were to be paid there. The reason he gave for making this request, was that large quantities of whiskey had been brought near Fond du Lac and secreted to be sold to them as soon as they should receive their money. He said he could not make the payment so long as liquor should be there. The Indians insisted on having their pay there, as had been promised them

After holding several councils he finally told them he would pay them there, provided they all arrived in season. But he had appointed the 20th of Oct for the Indians to assemble at Sandy Lake and he must be there at the time. Then another difficulty arose. He had told them that none would receive their pay who did not remove, and he required all the half breeds to sign a paper stating that they had removed and intended to remain, before he would allow them to participate in the annuities as they had done formerly. Many of the half breeds from this place particularly could not leave their homes here and remove this year, though they were present expecting to receive their annuities. The Indians and half-breeds then demanded the money due to them on last year's annuity, which was not paid over last fall, to be paid on the roll of last year. This the Agent refused to do. He said he understood his orders to require him to pay no part of the annuities then due to them, to any except those who had removed. The Indians from the Chippeway River were so late in their arrival that the agent did not wait for them, and returned to Sandy Lake without making the payment. The Indians and half breeds ~~from this place~~ ~~and~~ were very much dissatisfied, and accused the Agent of having broken his engagement, and considered themselves as absolved from theirs. Nearly all from this place and a large part of those beyond have returned home, leaving goods & money to be given to those to whom the Agent chooses to give them, and resolved to represent their grievances at Washington. They have lost all confidence in their Agent, and if the Government wish to remove them, it will hereafter be more difficult than if these occurrences had not taken place. The payment at Fond du Lac has not yet been made. I think that as soon as it is over, or at least next spring, nearly or quite all the Indians will return to their old homes. I regard the removal on the whole, so far as the Indians on this side of the Country are concerned, as very near a failure. We have here and at Bad River about the same number of Indians ~~about~~ as usual.

Thus I have given you a little sketch of affairs as they exist at present. What may next take place I do not know. There is no very great excitement apparently. The Indians wish very much to remain in their old homes. And on many accounts I could wish they might.

Before this, you have, I presume, received our statements respecting our expenses for the next year. As our affairs now are, it may be well perhaps for the Committee to act on the subject of our allowance as if our mission would remain for the next year substantially as it is now. Before spring some of us may need to send for supplies.

I went to Fond du Lac prepared to go through to the Mississippi and examine some of the country which has been mentioned as the portion which is likely to be assigned to the Indians if they should remove. But when I arrived there I found I could not accomplish all the objects I had contemplated in such a visit by going there, and concluded it would be best to defer it for the present. I have learnt nothing new as to whether the agency will be changed or where located if it should be, nor respecting the long talked of Indian manual labour school.

By this mail I forward ~~to Mr Hill~~ a statement of the money which I have received and disbursed during the past year. You may see from it that I have made my share of expenses $100 less than the allowance granted me for the past year. I do not know whether my associates have drawn all their allowance or not.

Very respectfully Yours
S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe, Dec. 1, 1851.
Recd. Jan. 14, 1852.
Ack'd Feb. 3

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Jan. 26th 1852.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Since I last wrote you we have been called to affliction and mourning. About the 18th of December, our second son, Elias Cornelius, was attacked with typhoid fever. His attack was not severe at first. We used such remedies as we supposed the case requiring, and hoped that in a few days he would be well again. The medicines we gave him did not have the effect we hoped they might have, and in a day or two he evidently had a fever settled upon him. Still for some days we saw nothing alarming in his symptoms, except that his fever did not seem to relax its hold on the system. Some days he appeared a little better, and on the first day of Jan. he appeared so much revived, that we almost hoped the crisis was past, and that he was beginning to recover. But uniformly in a few hours after he appeared better, his fever would return with increased virulence. About the first of this month we began to entertain serious fears that he would not recover, and that he had not long to be with us. His constitution however bore up against the power of disease until the morning of the 15 inst, at one o'clock when he ceased to breathe. For the last ten days of his life he was much of the time delirious, and for three or four days before he died, he had but few lucid intervals. We could not ascertain with much certainty what was the state of his mind in view of death. Several times after his speech had nearly failed he was evidently engaged in prayer; but could not articulate distinctly enough to be understood in what he tried to utter.

By this event we feel deeply afflicted. We miss one from our family circle. One voice dear to us all is hushed in silence. But I do not feel to murmur. God has done right. He has taken his own, and it becomes me to bow with submission to his will. Eternity never before appeared nearer. The soul never appeared to possess greater value. The importance of living always for God and eternity never appeared so great. If I have any thing to do to save the unconverted & dying, I feel that I must do it soon. I hope this providence will be our ruled for good to me and my family. How responsible the relation of parent! And how important to labor and pray for the salvation of our children while they are young!

Our Son was but a few days over 17 years of age. He possessed a strong constitution, was scarcely ever sick a day in his life, till his last sickness; and no one seemed more likely to live. But he is cut down like the morning flower.

It is 20 years since our family commenced. This is the first time our family circle has been broken by death. Though many individuals have been connected with our mission since its commencement, no member of our families has before died at so advanced an age, while connected with the mission. Some young children have died, but no adult member. Surely the mercies of God have followed us, and though afflicted we have no reason to complain.

Many of our people are now absent having gone to Fond du Lac to attend the payment which is to take place about this time. This is the payment which was to have been made last October. Mr Wheeler has gone to Fond du Lac. He will probably write you soon after his return. We have learned nothing new of late respecting the intentions of the Government toward the Indians.

Very truly Yours

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall,
Lapointe, Jan. 26, 1852.
Recd. March 9.
Ans'd May 6.

See Record -

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
March 8th 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letters of Dec. 15 have been received.

With regard to the state of general affairs here I have little to communicate. All seems yet to be in a state of suspense and uncertainty. What are the future plans of the Government with respect to these Indians, I am unable to learn. I hope you will be able to give us some information on this subject, if you have made your intended visit to Washington. The Ojibwa Agent, Maj. Watrous, wrote me recently as follows: "I regret that I am wholly unable at this late date to give you any definite information in regard to the Agency and the Indians. I think it hardly probable, that the agency will be removed at present. Every thing appears to be unsettled. I have not however received any instructions as yet, or intimations, that the Department will make any change in the plan which has been marked out, and I infer from the tone of the report of the Commission of Indian Affairs that it is the intention of the Government to continue the removal".

I hear nothing about the establishment of any manual labor schools. It seems from the reports of the different officers, that they consider the removal as virtually effected. But I view the subject in a somewhat different light. A considerable portion of the Indians west to Fond du Lac last fall hoping to receive their annuity payment, but not many of them with the intention of staying there longer than the Government afforded them the means of subsistence. Some were offended because the payment was not made according to their expectations, and returned immediately home. Many others remained till after the payment was made, which took place in January. Nearly all, I understand, have now left the place, and most of them have returned on to the ceded lands. It is reported that the Agent has ceased to issue rations to those few who remained, and I presume that most of the Indians feel themselves absolved from their promise to remain on the unceded territory. I think they are more dissatisfied than ever before, and that it will be difficult to get them hereafter to remove. The Lapointe Indians are at their old homes as usual. Those from the Chippeway and Wisconsin rivers are returning.

It is the plan of the Government, I suppose, to concentrate the Indians more, and then try to improve their condition. In order to carry out this plan with respect to the Ojibwas, they must begin differently from what they did in their effort to remove them. They must first find a place to put them, and then convince them that they can get a living when they are removed to it. In order to accomplish this, a treaty should be made with all the different bands, by which all the nation shall be allowed to share alike in all annuities hereafter to be given them. This would probably break up the present feeling of jealousy which exists among them. Much longer seems than at present should be appropriated to the support of schools, the opening of farms, and other means of civilization. In some respects the Government should assume a greater control over them than they have done heretofore; especially in restraining them from destroying the property of missionaries and others who reside among them for the purpose of benefiting them.

In the present state of affairs, you may perhaps think it should be made a subject of enquiry whether some change ought not to be made in our present stations, or plan of operations. No progress has been made toward carrying into operation the change suggested by you nearly a year ago. If you judge it best to enlarge the station at Bad River by removing the laborers from this station to that, so as to expend most of the labor there, you will, I presume, express your views and wishes fully on the subject. I think at present we are hardly warranted in incurring much expense to commence a new station. Every thing is too unsettled. If you think it is not best to continue this station, as intimated in your communication of last spring, and there is no other opening, I am ready to retire at any time.

As to visiting the country west of the Mississippi, as I thought of doing last fall, I will do it in the spring if you judge best, and the circumstances of my family will permit. But as unsettled as things now are, I am not certain that enough could be accomplished by it to pay the expense.

Yours truly,

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

La Pointe, March 8, 1852,

Recd. Apr. 21.

Ans. May 7

La Pointe, Lake Superior,
March 22d 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Feb. 3d arrived in our last mail last week. During the winter season letters are usually from five to six weeks in passing between this place and the eastern cities. In the summer they go by the same route somewhat quicker, & by the way of the lakes sometimes in two weeks or less.

I wrote you so lately that I need not now trouble you with a long letter. I have the same impression with yourself, that there is something faulty at Washington in regard to managing the removal of these Indians. I was much surprized that an order should be sent to the agent to suspend the removal at that stage, when it had proceeded so far and so much money had been expended. To stop at that stage, if they ever intended to remove the Indians, looked to me like throwing away all that had been done; and at the same time it must weaken the confidence of the Indians in the stability of the Government. I was still more surprized to learn not long since, that the brief telegraphic order has not been followed by any letter of explanation, and thus the agent had received no communication from the Department on the subject of the removal and no new instructions

given him or intimations given of what is to be done.
I think the whole course which has been pursued from the beginning with regard to the removal, has been the occasion of weakening the confidence of the Indians in the Government and in their agents, especially in the latter. The Indians here do not believe the agents have represented to them truly the wishes of their "Great Father." With the present state of feeling among them, I think it will be difficult to effect the permanent removal of any large body of them.

I have read the remarks of the Commissioner of Indian Affairs in his late report on the subject of collecting and civilizing the Indians, and I regard them as correct to a considerable extent. I am well aware that it is a hard task to tame and civilize the wild savages of our wilderneſs. But I do not believe that it is impoſsible to effect great changes in their condition for the better. But it must be a work of great labour, and their improvement must be a gradual work. But I believe this work will not be accomplished by giving them large annuities which are sufficient to supply them with all the neceſsaries of life without their own exertions. This only makes more idle and vicious than before. What is done for them should come, so far as poſsible, in the shape of encouragements to help themselves. Large annuities paid to them periodically are the occasion of introducing vicious white men among them, who both corrupt and rob them. To carry out the views to which I have alluded, the Government must protect them from the whiskey trade, and not allow persons of immoral character to reside among them; and they ought to assume a kind of government over them, till they are sufficiently advanced to govern themselves, at least so far as to punish crimes committed among them in some just and legal way. But after all, whatever theories you may form about civilizing and Christianizing Indians, you will find a thousand unforeseen difficulties, when you come to reduce them to practice.

I should ~~like~~ like to see the Government come forward and make a treaty with the Ojibwas similar to the one they have recently made with the Sioux, and concentrate the majority of them into a smaller circle, and then open farms and schools for them on a plan more extensive and efficient than has yet been done. I should yet be encouraged to hope, in that case, that something might yet be done for them. Put good men for agents, teachers, ~~and~~ mechanics, and farmers among them, & their influence would tend much to elevate them.

Most of our people are now absent from the island, having gone to make their sugar. The mission families are generally well, except our old est daughter who has been unwell for a few weeks past. We fear there is a tendency in her symptoms to chronic disease.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

La Pointe, March 22, 1852.

Recd. May 3d

Ansd. 6.

O.C.

Special [illegible]

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
May 1852.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

I have been hoping for some time to hear from you, and obtain information, as the result of your visit to Washington, as to what is to be done with these Indians. Perhaps you may have written, but no letter has yet reached us. In the mean time I will communicate the substance of a private letter which I recently received from Gov. Ramsey, but must request that you will not make it public. He says. "I have once or twice written the Indian department to this Affect, that as white men, Halfbreeds and Indians on the shore of Lake Superior were averse to the removal of the latter, it might be as well to indulge, at least for a time, the Bands at Lapointe, Bad River, Ontonagon and the Anse, and except them from the general order to remove.

If I am not mistaken the bands above comprise about one thousand souls.

To the other Chippewas, those on the Chippewa, Wisconsin, Lac du Flambeau, &c, &c. I would say, the payments in future will be made at Sandy Lake, and unless you remove, you cannot participate in the annuities of your tribe. Further than this. I think it advisable that the Government should not go in urging a removal. The few bands remaining might be paid at Lapointe.

But unless the Department at Washington should make an order in accordance with these views, under the instructions that the agent now acts, he can hereafter only pay goods and money to such as do remove.

The Lapointe band can hereafter only be paid upon condition that they do remove, unless, as I before said, an order excepting them should be received from Washington.

I shall in all probability visit W. in the month of May or June, and will again urge these views upon the Government."

I have been surprised that the Government have acted no more promptly in deciding whether or not these Indians must remove, and if they are resolved that they shall remove, that they take no more effective measures to carry into effective measures to accomplish the object. If they are willing the Indians should remain where they are for the present at least, they ought to say so, and give them back their blacksmith and farmer, & encourage them to improve. At present they are kept in agitation and suspense, and have no heart to do any think with a view to the future, for in a few months, they may be ordered to abandon every thing and go away. It seems to me that two years is long enough to decide these points in. And I hope ~~that~~ if they do not decide the question of their removal in accordance with the views of Gov Ramsey, they will decide it in some other way soon, that the Indians may Know what they must do, and we not be compelled to feel our way through the fog as we have done for the last two years. I would not however censure the men who have the charge of this business. If placed in their circumstances I might see reasons which I do not now see for these delays. But I think, that if they Know the injury they are doing to the Indians by Keeping up this agitation, they would decide the question in some way soon.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

Lapointe L. S. May — 1852

Recd. June 12/52.

Ansd July 1.

Saut Ste Marie, July 28/52

Rev S. B. Treat:

I am now ~~[illegible]~~ at this place on my way home from Detroit, to which place I have been with my daughter on account of her health. She has been for some months so out of health that we thought it not prudent to let her case run on during the next winter without consulting a physician with regard to it ~~in the case~~. For this purpose I have been to Detroit. Her medical advisers pronounce her difficulty an affection of the liver which may also be connected with an affection of the spine. I think she has been benefitted by the journey and change scenes, which are ~~very~~ different this way from what she has been accustomed to at home.

I send you herewith a statement respecting our station and labours at La Pointe for the past year. I ~~had~~ intended to have sent it earlier, but have not found opportunity to do so since I left home till now.

The goods which were sent us a short time since from the Missionary House are now at this place & I shall take them along with me home. I have not yet learned any thing new as to the intentions of the Government towards the Indians of our region.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Sault Ste Marie

July 28, 1852

Recd. Aug. 3/52

Rev. S. Hall. Ans. " 25

Statistics respecting the Mission Station at La Pointe for the year ending July 28th 1852.

Henry Blatchford has laboured principally at this station during the past year as native catechist and interpreter.

The church has now connected with it twenty members. There have been no additions during the past year. One member has been excommunicated. There has been no death of an actual member of the church during the year. But one individual has died who for some time has been a hopeful listener to the truths of the gospel. For some time we have had hope that this individual was born of the Spirit. During her last sickness she gave, as we thought, increasing evidence that such was the fact, and died not without hope.

Meetings have been held regularly on the Sabbath during the year, and occasional meetings on week days. On the Sabbath two services are held in the Ojibwa language and one in the English. The number of regular attendants is about the same as in former years. A good degree of Christian harmony has prevailed among the members of the church. But there has been no marked revival spirit, Intemperance has prevailed to some extent among the Indians, but so far as we know, the members of the Church have not indulged to such extent in the use of strong drink.

In addition to our labours in preaching the gospel, something has been done by way of translating portions of the Old Testament Scriptures with a view to read them for the instruction of the Indians, & perhaps eventually to prepare them for publication. A portion also of the Ojibwa New Testament has been revised with a view to publishing a new edition.

The Indians at this station and through this portion of their country have been kept in agitation on the subject of their removal. This unsettled state of their affairs & the consequent agitation of their minds has been unfavorable to their advancement. We still however think we can see that the general tendency is toward civilization. What course the Government will hereafter pursue ~~with~~ toward them, we can not now tell. We hope however that they may be permitted quietly to occupy their old homes for the present, and ~~that~~ the present agitated state of affairs will soon cease.

Statistics of La Pointe
Mission Station, to July 28/62.
Recd. Aug. 2
Ans " 2

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (112-118)

Hall, Sherman
- 112. 9 August 1852
- 113. 30 August 1852
- 114. 25 September 1852
- 115. 7 October 1852
- 116. 9 November 1852
- 117. 15 November 1852
- 118. November 1852

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

112

Lapointe. Wis.
Aug. 9th 1852.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir — I have to-day learnt that the Indian Department at Washington have ordered the Chippeway Agency to be removed from Sandy Lake to Crow Wing River, and that some other movements are on foot. I infer from some of these movements, that it is not the intention of the Government to allow the Indians who refuse to remove, to receive any further annuities or other aid from them. I presume some movement will be made before long to establish new schools, or to dispose of the school funds. As the Department, in the order for the removal, signified their willingness to give the preference to those whose schools should be broken up by the removal, in case they chose to remove, I think we had better signify to the officers of Government our readiness to remove, as soon as they fix upon any plan and are ready to make us any propositions. It will be time enough to refuse their terms, if we do not like them, when we know what they are. It appears to me on the first thought desirable for one or some one to visit the region about Crow Wing river soon, and confer personally with Governor Ramsey & the Agent about any future movements we wish to make. But I do not know ~~that~~ I can do so without incurring more expense than I shall be able to bring within my allowance for this year. I have not yet come to the conclusion ~~that~~ it is our duty to abandon the Ojibwas. I think we ought to look a little further, and watch the developments of Providence a little longer. I think there is no doubt ~~that~~ a few months will determine something of the policy to be pursued towards them in future. If you would advise to make such a visit to the Miſsissippi region, as I have proposed, please to inform me as soon as convenient. I suppose it will cost somewhere between $50 & $75.

I wrote you a few days ago, dating from the Saut Ste Marie. I found the mission families well on my return & my daughter's health has improved during her absence.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

Lapointe, Aug. 9. 52.

Recd. 24th
Ackd. 25.

Lapointe, Lake Superior,
Aug. 30th 1852

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Your letter of July 1st has been received; and also your circular to the Mission.

I have to-day received a letter from Maj. Watrous, the agent for the Ojibwas, the substance of which I will not delay to communicate to you. He says.

"During my stay at Washington, I called the attention of the Department to our present system of schools among the Chippeways, and recommended that it be changed, and ~~that~~ the manual system adopted under the following regulations, to wit:

1st The Agent recommend a suitable person as Superintendent of the Schools.

2d. The Superintendent recommend to the agent suitable persons as teachers, and ~~that~~ the same be appointed or rejected by him.

3d. That the agent turn over all money now in his hands to the Superintendent, and that said Superintendent be required to account for the same as other public officers.

The above is a synopsis, but not altogether verbatim of the regulations under which the schools will hereafter be conducted among the Chippewas.

The amount of money now in my hands to be turned over to the Superintendent for the erection of buildings and opening farms will not vary much from $5.000.

My instructions are now passing through the ordinary channel, relative to the within, and the Removal. The instructions in regard to the latter will be to pay no Indians except those who reside in the Indian country. I will forward these instructions to you by the first opportunity after they are received.

I cordially invite you to accept the appointment of Superintendent of the Schools and to establish your mission west of the Mississippi and up the Crow-wing River at, or near, the Prairie Farm. I shall remove the Agency to the above place as soon as I am able."

You will perceive by the above, that the question is settled at Washington about the Indians remaining at their old homes and continuing to receive their annuities. They must remove or lose them. I have no doubt that it will be the policy of the Government to draw them to the Mississippi; yet I do not think they will use any force to get them away, if they choose to remain and behave well. The Indians here say they shall not go. But many will very reluctantly lose their payments.

I feel still more strongly inclined to go over ~~to see~~ to the other side and look about a little, than when I wrote you a few days ago. Whether you will be disposed to recommend to accept Mr. Watrous' offer I do not know. You will of course give me your views on the subject, or those of the Committee. We need light from on high in the deciding upon _any_ _new_ _course_ to be pursued in future. I doubt not we shall be guided to do the will of God, if our motives are pure, and we seek honestly to do our duty and look for the _Divine_ guidance.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev S. Hall
La Pointe, Aug 30 1852
Rec^d Sept 11
Ans^d Oct 15.

Copy

Indian Farm on Crow-wing
River, Sept. 25th 1852.

Major J. S. Watrous,
Agent for the Chippewas.

Sir:

Your communications of July 22d and Aug. 31st in which you inform me of the purpose of the Indian Department to establish a manual labor school near this place and invite me to accept the Superintendency of the same, were duly received. As soon as convenient after your first communication came to hand, I left home with a view to examine the location where it is proposed to place this school. After considerable examination of the place and the region around it, I am satisfied that it is judiciously selected, and will prove to be convenient, ~~healt~~ healthy and pleasant when improvements are made; and that the land is well adapted for opening a farm such as will be required in connexion with the school. There is good water on it, and timber in the vicinity. There is also in the immediate vicinity an extensive tract of good land on which such Indians as are disposed to become settled and cultivate the ground may do so, and support themselves, in connexion with the annuities to which they are entitled, with comparative ease. In the centre of this tract is the Indian farm located, and on one side of it is the Agency.

You are aware that I have labored for

many years as a missionary among the Chippewa Indians under the direction and patronage of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. I sustain this relation to them at the present time; and before giving you a final answer I should wish for time to confer with them.

In the mean time I should like to be informed of your views more in detail in relation to some points. (1). What will be the duties expected of a Superintendent? (2). What compensation will he receive for his services? (3) Would he or the teachers be liable to be removed from their offices by the agent, on account of differences of religious faith between him and them, or for any reasons other than incompetency, mismanagement, or neglect of their duties?

I beg leave, in connexion with this subject, to call your attention to a communication made to our mission by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs through your predecessor, at the time the order of the President for the removal of the Indians was communicated. Speaking of a change in the system of conducting the schools, he says, "It is believed that a prominent feature in this system should be the establishment of manual labor schools, so far as the funds applicable will admit, to be placed in the hands of Missionary Societies, like those now elsewhere in successful operation to the great advantage of the Indians. As the removal of the Indians will of course break up the stations in the ceded territory, and put a stop to the missionary labors there, the Societies in whose charge they are will have the best claim to participate in any new system that may be devised; and the Department is every way disposed to place in their charge any manual labor schools that may be put into operation, or to constitute them its benevolent agents in the expenditure of the funds that can be so applied."

It evident that the present Chippewa School fund of $2.000 a year, which is all, I suppose, that is applicable to this purpose, after the present accumulated fund is exhausted, and which will be nearly all consumed in the erection of buildings and putting into operation the establishment, is wholly insufficient to support any considerable number of boarding scholars, after paying the salaries of a superintendent and the teachers, even if the school is conducted on the most economical plan possible. I have very little doubt, that, if the necessary buildings are erected and the establishment made ready to go into operation without expense to them, the Am. Board will be willing to aid materially in furnishing and sustaining teachers and other necessary laborers in the establishment, provided the Department is disposed to commit the management of it to them in accordance with the views quoted above. In this way the school would have more the appearance of a benevolent institution, have more means, be conducted more economically, and would be more efficient, than if managed merely as a secular institution, whose superintendent and teachers would engage in it merely from the consideration of the salaries which they should receive. At the same time it may be so under the control of the Agent that he can interfere when he is satisfied of mismanagement, or that the funds entrusted to the Society are not judiciously and economically expended, or are not truly and faithfully applied to the purpose for which they are intended. I cannot however pledge the Society to these views. But if they are in accordance with your own, I should be glad before completing any arrangement, to communicate with them on this subject.

Very Respectfully Yours,
S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
to Maj. Watrous,
Crow Wing River Sep. 25/52,
Recd. Oct. 19/52,
W10 – 21

Copy. 115

St. Paul M. Ter. Oct 7th 1852

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir

I wrote you a few weeks ago from La Pointe, and informed you that a proposition had been made to me by J. S. Watrous, Agent for the Ojibwas, to take the superintendency of the manual labor school about to be established at the Agency on Crowwing River, and copying to you a part of his letter. After receiving his letter I thought it best, with the approbation of the mission, to come through this fall and make some examinations before coming to any decision whether or not to accept the proposal. As an unexpected opportunity occurred of going through without hiring men on purpose to accompany me, I embraced it. I left home on the seventh of Sept. and arrived at the Crowwing on the 22d. I remained there about six days, during which time I made all the observation and examinations I could relative to the place and the surrounding region, and the facilities which it offers for the establishment of a school, a mission station, and an Indian settlement. The result you will learn from the enclosed communication which I made to Mr. Watrous. I think it a more favorable place to commence such an enterprise than any other I have seen in the country owned by the Ojibwas.

The Indian farm was commenced ~~two~~ year ago last spring. Some 50 acres or more were put into crop last year & succeeded well. The present, some 200 were put into crop and considerable more broken and fenced. Indians have cultivated about 50 acres on this ~~farm~~ the present season. Drought has considerably injured the crops ~~this sea~~

~~[illegible]~~, though they are tolerably fair. The soil is that of the prairie lands of this Northern region. It is not so rich, I suppose, as many of the prairie lands farther South; but still it yields fair crops, and bids fair to last well. It improves by cultivation. When once broken, it is tilled with very little labor. It costs from three to five dollars per acre to break it.

Crowwing river unites with the Mississippi on the west side about 120 miles above the Falls of the St. Anthony. The agency buildings are about ten miles above the junction of this river with the Mississippi, on the right bank as you ascend it. The Crowwing is a wide shallow and rapid stream, and one of the largest tributaries of the Mississippi above the Minnesota. It is navigable for batteaux and cannoes for many miles above its mouth. It is said that there is considerable pine suitable for building along its banks.

I feel confident that there will be a large settlement of Indians and half breeds near the place where the Agency is now located within a short time. I think it is the settled policy of the Government, whichever political party may predominate, to get the Indians west of the Mississippi. In order to induce them to remove, they will hereafter have the agency west of the Mississippi, they will receive their annuities there, and none will participate in them except they reside on the Indian lands. The school money will be expended there and most of the mechanics and farmers will probably be located in that region. — All these are now removed to the unceded lands.

You will see by my communication to Mr Watrous, that I have suggested to him to commit the management of the school funds to the Board to be expended by them in accordance with the plan proposed by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs some two years ago. I think it better to manage it in this way, than to put it into the hands of a Superintendent appointed by the Agent, to be under his control, and who would be liable at any time to be removed from office as the caprice or interest of his superiors might dictate, and who must receive a large compensation for his services out of the school fund. A missionary or agent of the Board could act as superintendent of the school, could give bonds for the disbursement of the funds entrusted to him, and perform all the duties of a Superintendent, at the same he might perform much other useful labor in connexion with the mission. In this way I think the funds would be expended more economically, and probably the school be made much more efficient, than if managed in the way proposed by Mr. Watrous. I do not know that Mr. W. would have any objection to this course. I suppose he has never thought of this plan.

Should the Prudential Committee think favorably of the plan, I have suggested, and such an arrangement be made, I would recommend that, as soon as it is completed, measures be taken to put the school into operation with as little delay as possible. There is now in the hands of the Agent $4,846 $\frac{20}{100}$ of the school fund which has accummulated. One thousand dollars will be added to this at the end of the present year. Enough of this I suppose will be appropriated to erect the necessary buildings for a school and prepare all the material for putting the establishment into operation. After this accummulated fund is exhausted, there will then be $2,000 a year to be expended for educational purposes.

But should the Prudential Committee not choose to engage in this enterprize, or should the Indian Department not follow my suggestions, I would still recommend to remove a branch of our mission to this place and commence a station here on a small scale. I would be willing in this case to accept the superintendency of the school, still continuing my connexion with the Board, and act as their missionary; or I would discontinue that connexion, as thought most desirable. In the last case I alone would be responsible for conducting the superintendency. By taking this course we shall get possession of the ground. This seems to me very desirable. If we do not begin here early others will, and the school may fall into the hands of Catholics or Puseyite Episcopalians. Enough of these stand ready to get it if they can.

I would recommend that early next spring some cheap buildings be erected, such as will accommodate one or two small families, and that Henry Blatchford, and perhaps Mr Pulsifer remove there as soon as they can be put in readiness for occupancy. Mr P. will be wanted doubtless in the school whichever plan is pursued. It is desirable that things be put in a state of forwardneſs before the present agent is removed. No one knows what the character or the religious sympathies of the next may be.

I have one word more. I am desirous, if it can be brought about, to send my family to the New England States for a time before removing them to the Miſsiſsippi. My principal reasons for this are that I suppose I must necceſsarily be absent from my family a considerable time before I can get any accommodations at a new station for them. I am desirous that my two youngest children should enjoy the advantages of attending a school of a better claſs than our Indian schools, for a time. This privilege they cannot have without our sending them away.

Please to do me the favor to give as early a reply to this communication as is convenient. I am about to leave this place to return home to Lapointe. As soon as we can after my arrival, we will consider and forward our estimate of expenses for the coming year.

Very truly yours
S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall,

St. Paul, Oct. 7, 1852.

Recd. 19th

Ansd '21

Lapointe Wis. Nov. 9. 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston Maſs.

Dear Sir,

Soon after my return from my late tour to the upper Miſsiſsippi (of which I have already informed you) our Miſsion held a meeting for the purpose of considering the report of my observations, and of recommending to the Board a course to be pursued for the future.

I should have communicated the result of this meeting sooner, but I have been prostrated upon a bed of sickneſs for several days.

We came to the following unanimous results at our meeting:

(1) That Mr. Hall accept the superintendency of the Manual Labor School about to be established at the Chippeway Agency on Crowwing River, which has been offered to him by the U. S. Agent J. S. Watrous, — and that he still continue his connection with the Board and labor as their Miſsionary.

(2) That a Miſsion Station be commenced at Crowwing, independant of the contemplated School, and that Mr. Pulsifer and Henry Blatchford remove there as early next season as some suitable buildings can be erected for their accommodation. Mr. P— will probably be transfered to the School (with the con-

sent of the Board) as soon as it goes into operation.

(3) That Mr. Hall repair to the new Station early in the spring (probably in March) and procure the erection of suitable buildings for the accommodation of, perhaps, two small families; which buildings shall be the property of the Board & independant of the School; and get in crops for the raising of such vegetables &c. as may be needed by the Mission families the ensuing winter.

(Remark.) It is not known exactly what connection the Board will have with this School. There should be a preaching station independant of it i.e. the School in case, at any time, the Govt. should choose to have no connection with the Board in the management of the School, they (the Board) would have their own ground, and neither need interfere with each other's sphere of labor.

(4) That measures be taken to dispose of such property belonging to this station, as may be most profitably disposed of, or to remove it to the new Station if that be advisable. External

We were of the opinion that one Station should be continued, for the present, either here or at Bad River.

In order to carry into effect the foregoing propositions, the Mission ask for the following appropriations for the ensuing year. viz.

Mr. Hall's family	—	$600
Mr. Pulsifer's	"	.. 300
H. Blatchford's	"	.. 300

Brought over	$1200
For new buildings &c.	" 600
Expense of removing	" 400
	$2200

It is impossible to estimate [illegible] moving, erecting new buildi[illegible] may need altering hereaf[illegible]

Mr. Wheeler's expenses.	
For his family	$400
" Miss Spooner	" 75
" Medicines	" 25
" School	" 25
" Hired help	" 300
	$825
	$2200
Total	$3.025

Whether the item for Miss Spooner includes all the expense the Board will be at on her account I do not know. Mr. W– will write the Board soon in regard to it.

In behalf of the Mission
S. Hall.

400
75
25
25
30
455

Rev. S. Hall.

Lapointe Nov. 9/52

Recd. Dec. 1/52

Ans. Dec 15.

Lapointe Wis.
Nov. 9

Rev. S. B. Treat

Boston

Mass.

Lapointe, Nov. 15th 1852.

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Enclosed with this I send you a duplicate of the resolutions passed at the meeting of our mission a short time ago, lest the first might miscarry. I had intended to have made more explanations respecting these resolutions and the appropriations asked for, than I am at present able to do. Suffice it to say, for the present, that if these plans, or others that may be adopted, may be carried out without incurring so much expense as is here contemplated, I will do the best I can to reduce ~~them~~ it to the lowest point practicable.

I will say a few words in reply to your letter of Aug. 25th I did not see Gov. Ramsey on my late visit to St. Paul, as he was absent on business, and I could not wait for him to return. I feel fully confident that it is the policy of the Government to use their influence to draw the Ojibwas from the ceded lands. But I think no other influence will be employed at present but persuasion, the withholding of their annuities from those who refuse to remove according to treaty stipulations, and by breaking land and offering them other aid if they will remove and settle. I do not think force will be used so long as the Indians are peacable and quiet, and do not disturb the persons and property of settlers. I am becoming more confirmed in the opinion that they had better remove, and that we had better encourage them to remove as fast as they can be provided for. Evils and temptations are rolling in upon them like a flood where they are. But I believe there is hope for them yet & I do not feel discouraged.

Two weeks ago I had an attack of pleurisy and fever. I am now much better, but have yet scarcely strength to write this note.

I hope you will give our business as early attention as is convenient, for there is little time to delay if our plans are to be carried into effect.

I have read with much interest the accounts in the papers given of the Meeting of the Board at Troy!

Yours truly

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe Nov. 15
Recd Dec 27/52
Ans Jan 20

Duplicate

Lapointe Wis. Nov. 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat; 118
Boston, Mass.

Dear Sir:

Soon after my return from my late tour to the upper Mississippi, of which I have already informed you, our Mission held a meeting for the purpose of considering the report of my observations & of recommending to the Board a course to be pursued for the future. I should have communicated the result of this meeting sooner, but I have been prostrated upon a bed of sickness for several days.

We came to the following unanimous results at our meeting:

(1) That Mr. Hall accept the Superintendency of the Manual Labor School about to be established at the Chippeway Agency on Crowwing River, which has been offered to him by the Agent J. S. Watrous, — and that he still continue his connection with the board & labor as their Missionary.

(2) That a Mission Station be commenced at that place independant of the contemplated School, and that Mr. Pulsifer & Henry Blatchford remove there as early next spring as some suitable buildings can be erected for their accommodation. Mr. P— will probably be transfered to the School (with the consent of the Board) as soon as it goes into operation.

(3) That Mr. Hall repair to the new Station early

in the spring (probably in March) and procure the erection of buildings suitable for the accommodation of perhaps two small families; which buildings shall be the property of the Board and independant of the School: and get in crops for the raising of such vegetables &c. as may be needed by the Mission the ensuing winter.

(Remark) It is not known exactly what connection the Board will have with this School. There should be a preaching station independant of it i.e. the School, in case, at any time the Government should choose to have no connection with the Board in the management of it, they (the Board) would have their own ground. & neither need interfere with eachothers sphere of labor.

(4) That measures be taken to dispose of such property belonging to this station as may be most profitably disposed of, or to remove it to the new station if that be advisable.

The Mission were of the opinion that one Station should be continued, for the present, either here or at Bad River.

In order to carry into effect the foregoing recommendations ~~propositions~~ the Mission ask for the following appropriations for the ensuing year: to wit.

Mr. Halls family —	$600
Mr. Pulsifer's " —	" 300
Henry Blatchford's "	" 300
For buildings &c. at the new Sta.	600
For removing —	" 400
	2,200

It is impossible to estimate exactly the cost of removing, erecting new buildings &c. and these two items may need altering hereafter.

Mr. Wheeler's Estimates.

Mr. Wheeler's family	$400.
For Miss Spooner	" 75
Medicines	" 25
School	" 25
Hired help	" 300
Brought over	2200
Total	$3.025

Whethe the sum mentioned for Miss Spooner is *all* the expense the Board will be at on her account I do not know. Mr. W— will write the Board soon on the subject.

In behalf of the Mission
S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall

Lapoint Nov 15/1852

Recd Dec. 27/52

Duplicate

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (119-125)

Hall, Sherman
- 119. 20 November 1852
- 120. 20 November 1852
- 121. 29 November 1852
- 122. 13 December 1852
- 123. 7 February 1853
- 124. 21 February 1853
- 125. 24 February 1853

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

La Pointe, Wis. Nov 20th 1852

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Oct. 15th has just been handed me. I have only a few moments in which to write, and shall not attempt to discuss any of the subjects introduced in your letter. I will only throw out a few hasty thoughts on one or two points, and that *now* only because I must wait so long for another opportunity to write.

With regard to Maj. Watrous, I must be permitted to say, that I have had considerable acquaintance with him, and have more confidence in his honesty and good intentions than you or Mr. Wheeler seem to have. I may be wrong, but I am not prepared to attribute the same motives to him in making the propositions respecting the appointment and rejection of teachers which you seem to think may have actuated him. I think all that matter, if properly managed, may in the end come right. I cannot but regret the correspondence which has been carried on between you and Mr. Wheeler respecting him, and particularly that Mr. Wheeler's letter was sent to Washington. While I think Mr. Wheeler honest in his intentions, I think that, *in some things*, his mind was unduly influenced against Mr. Watrous. Mr. Watrous, I suppose, made the course he pursued appear satisfactory to the Indian Department. On the other hand Mr. Watrous thought Mr. Wheeler interested himself unduly in the political affairs of the Indians, and was opposed to the designs of the Government and meant to embarrass him. Thus the matter stood between them. The effect of the correspondence is to embarraſs the present subject to some extent, and I think to leſsen the influence of the miſsion.

Mr. Watrous is a worldly man we all admit. But I think he is deeply interested in accomplishing plans for the good of the Indians, and is really doing more than any other Agent the Government ever sent here. But he expects the Indians to remove if they enjoy the benefit of what he is doing. I think he wants to see a good and efficient school established, and under the direction of Protestants, and that he would not stick for any particul plan of management, further than that the purposes of the Government should be answered in the expenditure of the funds. But I may misjudge. But whatever may be our wishes with regard to the person with whom we must conduct this buſineſs, I suppose we shall be obliged to deal with him; for I suppose the buſineſs will be principally entrusted to his care for the present, and that he will preſs it forward.

If the Board do not wish to have any ~~thing to do~~ connexion with the school as things now stand, or as I hope they may shortly be modified to some extent, I am ready to accept the superintendency of it on my own responsibility, unleſs the Pred. Com. shall advise to the contrary; — and for the following reasons. (1) It is a point conceded by all, I suppose, that one of these stations ought to be given up soon. I am the one to leave. (2). I see no place but Crow-wing where I should be willing to commence a new station among the Ojibwas at present. If I should go there, I should hope to induce some of the Indians to remove, where I think the prospect is, that they will do better than they will here after this station is abandoned. (4) I shall hope some arrangement will be made eventually, so that the school will be committed to some efficient Protestant society. (5)

If we are not prompt and take hold of the subject at once and in earnest, I fear we may lose the opportunity, and that these funds may fall into the hands of errorists before long. We may expect changes in agents and managers within a year. What their character will be we cannot tell. (6) There are buildings to be erected, which will be done at the expense of the Government, and before a school can go into operation. These should be commenced early next spring. To procure and oversee this erection is to be a part of the duty of a superintendant.

Before this reaches you, I hope you will have received the unanimous views of the mission on most of the points to which your inquiries are directed. You will also have received a copy of my letter to Mr. Watsons which I designed should lead to the settlement of the question, what connexion, if any, the Board should have with the proposed school. We are unanimous in the opinion, that only one of our stations here should be withdrawn immediately. But there are some questions in connexion with the station to be continued on which we may differ some. But they cannot be discussed now. I think you will now have the subject before you, so that you will know what instructions and advice to give us.

Yours truly

S. Hall.

If we are not prompt and take hold of the children as
to do it in a measure, I fear we may lose the oppor-
tunity, and that there fore we may fall into the hands of
would be before long. We may expect changes in regard
land arrangements within a year. But these changes
[illegible] There are buildings to
be erected, which will be done at the expense of the Govern-
ment, and before a school can go into operation. The school
[illegible]
[illegible] of the duty of a Superintend[illegible]

[illegible]

Rev. S Hall

Lapoint Nov 20/52

Recd. Jan 1/53

Ackd Jan 20

Lapointe, Wis. Nov 20th 1852

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Oct. 15th has just been handed me. I have only a few minutes in which to write and shall not attempt to discuss any of the subjects introduced in your letter. I will only throw out a few hasty thoughts on one or two points, and this *now* only, because I must wait so long for another opportunity to write.

(1) With regard to Maj. Watrous. I must be permitted to say, that I have had considerable acquaintance with him, and have more confidence in his honesty and good intentions than you or Mr. Wheeler seem to have. I may be wrong, but I am not prepared to attribute the same motives to him in making the propositions respecting the appointment and rejection of teachers, which you seem to think may have actuated him. I think all that, if properly managed, may in the end come right. I cannot but regret the correspondence which has been carried on between you and Mr. Wheeler respecting him, and particularly that Mr. Wheeler's letter was sent to Washington. While I think Mr. Wheeler honest in his intentions, I think that in *some things* his mind was unduly influenced against Mr. Watrous. Mr. Watrs I suppose made the course he pursued appear satisfactory to the Ind. Department. On the other hand Mr. Watrous thought Mr. Wheeler

interested himself unduly in the political affairs of the Indians and was opposed to the designs of the Government and meant to embarrass him. Thus the matter stood between them. The effect of the correspondence is to embarrass the present subject to some extent, and I think to lessen the influence of the mission.

Mr. Watrous is a worldly man we all admit. But I think he is deeply interested in accomplishing plans for the good of the Indians, and is really doing more than any other agent the Government have ever sent here. But he expects the Indians to remove if they enjoy the benefit of what he is doing. I think he wants ~~to~~ see a good and efficient school established, and under the direction of Protestants, and that he would not stick for any particular plan of management further ~~than~~ that the purposes of the Government should be answered in the expenditure of the funds. But I may misjudge. But whatever may be our wishes with regard to the person with whom we must conduct the business, I suppose we shall be obliged to deal with him; for I suppose the business will be principally entrusted to his care for the present, and that he will press it forward.

If the Board do no not wish to have any connexion with the school as things now stand, or as I hope they may shortly modified to some extent, I am ready to accept the Superintendancy of the School on my own responsibility, unless the Prud. Committee shall advise to the contrary; & for the following reasons. (1) It is a point conceded by all

I suppose, that one of these stations ought to be given up soon. I am the one to leave. (2) I see no place but Crow wing where I should be willing to commence a new station among the Ojibwas at present. (3) If I go there I shall hope to induce some those Indians to remove where I think the prospect is that they can do better than they will here after this station is abandoned. (4) I shall hope that eventually some arrangement can be made so that the school will be committed to the management of some efficient Protestant society. (5) If we are not prompt and take hold of the subject at once and in earnest, I fear the funds may be in the hands of errorists before long. We may expect changes in agents & managers within a year. What their character will be we cannot tell. (6) There are buildings to be erected which should be commenced early next spring. To oversee their erection is a part of the contemplated duty of the Superintendant.

Before this reaches you I trust you will have received the unanimous views of the mission on most of the points to which your enquiries are directed. You will also have received a copy of my letter to Mr. Watrous, which I designed ~~to~~ should lead to the discussion and settlement of the question, what connexion, if any, the Board should have with the proposed school. We are unanimous in our opinion that only one of our stations should be withdrawn immediately. But there are some questions in connexion with the station to be continued on which we may differ some. But they cannot be discussed now. I think you will now have this subject before you so that you will know what instructions and advice to give us.

I am fast recovering from my late attack of sickness, but cannot write long at a time yet.

Yours very truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall.
Lapoint Nov. 20/52
Recd. Jan. 27/53

Lapointe, Wis. Nov. 29th 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I wrote you a hasty letter immediately on the reception of yours of the 15th ultimo, and sent it by way of the Lakes. But I have since thought there is much doubt whether it will reach you very soon by this route. I therefore enclose a copy of it with this.

A few other thoughts have occurred to me which I will also submit. I think it is desirable, if we can, to gain a footing at Crowwing before others get the ground. It will probably soon be the most central place of influence in the Ojibwa country, and it is important, in my view that we should early establish a station there which shall be able to act efficiently. For this reason we have recommended that one of our number go there early next Spring. If the Board do not establish a station there, it is probable that they will, at no very distant time, abandon the Ojibwas entirely. I see no other place where I should advise to commence a station in the present state of affairs among them. I feel unwilling that the Board should cease their efforts for the benefit of this tribe. They have gained some influence among them; and I trust they have yet a work to do here, and that their influence is yet to be felt in reclaiming them from heathenism.

It seems to me desirable on many accounts to have a school connected with a mission station; and as a school is to be established there to be supported in part at least by Government funds, it seems to me desirable that it be conducted by us, if we can have it on such terms as not to bring us into collision with Government of officers and Indian Agents. I have but little confidence that a school will be of much benefit to the Indians, unless it is put under the direction of some Missionary Society. It will be made more of a money making concern, than a benevolent institution, if placed under the control of agents.

I am well aware that there will be many perplexities and difficulties to be encountered in the management of an Indian Boarding School. But I do not think much can be accomplished by attemping to educate Indian children, unless they are gathered into boarding schools, or taken into civilized families. The experiment has been pretty thoroughly tried among the Ojibwas of ~~trying~~ attempting to educate the children while they remain in the families of their parents. Comparatively little success has attended the effort. The Indians are so unstable in their habits, and so unsettled, that while the children are with their parents at home, they cannot be kept in school regularly enough to benefit them much. If the Government have funds to expend for the education of Indian children, it is wise in them to commit the expenditure of these funds and the care of their schools to the hands of responsible Missionary Societies. Nor do I despair that the school to be established at Crow-wing may yet be committed to the management of the Am. Board on such terms that they will be willing to engage in ~~the~~ the enterprise.

It might be well perhaps to confer with Gov. Ramsey on this subject, though, I suppose, in the multiplicity of other business, he will leave this matter principally to management of the Agent. I expected to have seen him; but he was absent when I was at St. Paul, and I could wait till his return.

Should I be connected with the contemplated school as Superintendent, it would of course throw considerable care and busineſs upon my hands, especially till we could get the establishment into operation, but probably not more than I have generally been accustomed to; and with Henry Blatchford aſsociated with me, and a good degree of diligence, I trust we shall be able to proclaim the gospel constantly to all within our reach, who are willing to hear.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall.

Lapoint Nov. 29/52

Recd. Jan. 1/53

Lapointe, Wis. Dec. 13th 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Oct. 21st came to hand by our last mail. I hope you will obtain the information you desire from the Indian Department at Washington respecting the Crow-wing school without having to wait long; and that you will be able to make such an arrangement with them respecting our connexion with it, as shall be satisfactory to all parties concerned. But I am apprehensive that there may be much delay. From what I have observed of the past, I judge that things move slowly at Washington respecting matters of this kind. Besides I have an impression, that the management of this business is left principally with Gov. Ramsey and Major Watrous, and that their recommendations will probably be adopted at Washington. Gov. Ramsey has a crowd of other business on his hands, and will commit it to the management of the Agent, so that after all we may have to do most of the business through him. But perhaps not. I wish they would take hold of this business at Washington at once, and according to the suggestion of Mr. Brown, commit the expenditure of the funds and the management of the contemplated school to a Missionary Society. It is the only way in my views that a school will ever accomplish much. In that case the Board would probably get the management of the school at once, and could put it into operation without a long delay. But I fear they do not understand this subject very well at Washington, or do not feel as deeply interested in it as they should.

It is desirable that there be as little delay as poſsible in coming to some conclusion about our establishing at Crow-wing. If we remove at all, it it seems to me important that I should go there as early as April next and make some beginning and prepare for the removal of the families who shall be sent there. If we do not begin early in the season we shall get established before the season will be past. It will add much to the expense of living the ensuing winter, if we fail next spring to prepare for a crop of vegitable roots and grains in the fall. Some one too should be on the ground to make the impreſsion that we are in earnest about establishing there. It must be remembered also that there will be buildings to erect, which must be done under many disadvantages, and that it will require considerable time to remove two or three of our families and get established. We do not travel by steam and by stage coaches in this country, but by the slow proceſs of propelling Indian canoes up the rapids and stiff currents of our rivers, and by carrying them and our goods acroſs long portages on the backs of men, to get from piece of navigable water to another. You will see therefore the neceſsity of coming to some conclusion with as little delay as may be. It should also be recollected that during the winter it takes letters several weeks to pass from Boston to us.

I would suggest whether it would not be well, in case the question respecting the school should not be settled, for me to go to Crow-wing early in the spring, and make further observations. If we have no connexion with the school, it may be desirable to commence a mission station then without delay.

Very truly yours,

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Lapoint Dec. 18/52

Recd. Jan. 18/53
Ans Jan 20

La Pointe, Wis.
Feb. 7th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Dec 15th was received a few days ago. We were glad to be informed that the Prudential Committee had acted upon our recommendation in regard to establishing a Station at Crowwing River. It is a relief to my own on mind that the views of the Committee so nearly correspond with our own on that subject. I have given you my views so fully lately in regard to our commencing there early and acting promptly that it will not be necessary to say any thing on that subject now. I am not without strong hope that an arrangement satisfactory to all parties can be made with the agent respecting that part of his plans which are the most objectionable in our view.

I think I understand your views on all the most important points, and am happy to say they accord with my own, so that I shall feel no embarrassment on that score. I shall endeavour to act prudently, and shall be governed in my movements by your views and suggestions. I shall also endeavour to ~~keep you~~ keep you apprised of all important steps I am taking as far as possible; and not enter into any permanent arrangement with the agent till I have laid the details before the Committee and have their sanction, if I can avoid it. It hath ever been my intention to enter into no arrangement that would shut the door to our retiring from the School at any time, by giving short notice, if things should not go right.

I have received no reply to the communication which I made to Mr Watrous last fall, a copy of which I sent you. I learn that it was not forwarded to Washington till late last fall, which may account perhaps for your not having received a reply to your letters to the Com. of Ind. Affairs.

I think it best for me to proceed to Crowwing early in the spring (perhaps I shall leave here in March) and examine the ground more thoroughly, and if things are favorable, to make preparation for removing our families there as early as we can get things in readiness.

You will please present my grateful acknowledgments to the Committee for granting me leave send my family to the N. England States. I am not yet fully persuaded whether it will be expedient, or not, to send them next summer.

You did not say in your letter whether the Committee had granted the allowance for our families which we asked for.

Very truly yours in the bonds
of the Gospel of Christ.
S. Hall

LAPOINTE
FEB
8
WIS.

S. Hall, P. M.
FREE

Rev. S. B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe Feb. 7. 1853
Rec.d March 11
Ans.d " "

La Pointe Wis
Feb 21st 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I wrote you by our last mail, two weeks ago. Since that time I have received a letter from Major Watrous, some part of which I will copy into this. He says:

"I have received instructions to establish the School at the Agency on the manual labor system, and to adopt such a plan as, in my judgment, will be most beneficial. I am unable to advance any new ideas on this subject, and you are already so well acquainted with my views that it is perhaps useless to recapitulate. I am still of the opinion that all, or nearly so, of the accumulated school fund should be expended in erecting the necessary buildings and opening a farm. I desire to consult you fully before reporting to the Department the regulations that the school will be established under and governed."

From the above you will percieve that Mr Watrous is the principal person with whom we shall have to deal in this business. I have supposed from the course which things have taken for some time past, that it would be so. Whether I shall have influence enough with him to get him to adopt our views on some material points I do not Know. I purpose to leave here within a week for the Mississippi to see what can be done. I hope the Lord will go before me and prepare my way. Whatever may be the result, I trust we shall be guided to do his will, and that should satisfy us. If the Lord has a work for us to do there, he will open a door of entrance for us; if not he will indicate it doubtless in some way to us.

If I can be allowed the time, I shall not close any arrangement till I have submitted it to you. But there probably will be a desire on the part of Mr W. to settle the arrangement as soon as it can be. I feel that there is a heavy responsibility resting on me, and I trust I seek divine direction. Please address me for the present at Crowwing, Minn. Ter. Upper Mississippi.

LAPOINTE
FEB
22
WIS.

FREE
S. Hall

Rev. S. B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass

Rev. S. Hall
La Point Feb. 22/53
Recd. Mar. 28/53

La Pointe, Wis.
Feb. 24th 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I wrote you on the 21st inst. and since that have received your letter of Jan. 20th but have not time to say any thing in reply now. My principal object in writing this note is to say, that we have had an offer for the buildings and improvements at this station, and have agreed to sell them provided the Committee give their consent. We are offered $500 for them, and are decidedly of the opinion that we had better dispose of them for the sum than to keep them, though it is not what they have cost. If we miss this opportunity of selling it is not probable we shall have another very soon. The buildings and fences are rapidly going to decay, and it will ~~cost more~~ cost more to keep them in repair, than they can be rented for. The land will soon be in market and must be bought to hold the improvements. There are other buildings and property here which can be purchased equally low. In our agreement with the person who purchases, he is to pay $200 when he comes into possession, and $300 at end of a year from that time with interest till paid, and is to give security on the property for the payment.

We have supposed that the Committee would sanction this arrangement and have given Mr. Goff, the purchaser, encouragement to expect it, but ~~the~~ told him we must wait for the action of the Committee before transferring the property. Will you therefore get their action on this business and send me the result as soon as possible. Address me at Crowwing, Upper Mississippi. Min. Ter.

Mr. Goff would be glad to know the result as soon as convenient, and a letter from addressed Schuyler Goff, Racine, Wis. would reach him. He is about to leave here, to return early in the spring and wishes to bring his family here, if he has the property.

Yours truly

S. Hall

P. S. I shall leave here, (Providence permitting) for Crowwing next week.

Rev. S. Hall
La Pointe Feb. 24/53
Recd. Mar 21/53
Aff. — 11 22

PC

Rev. S. B. Treat
Missionary House
33 Pemberton Square
Boston Mass.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (126-131)

Hall, Sherman
  126. 23 April 1853
  127. 12 March 1853
  128. 17 May 1853
  128 1/2. 25 July 1853
  129. 30 July 1853
  130. 8 August 1853
  131. 11 August 1853

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

126 · Chippewa Agency
April 23d 1853

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

When I last wrote you I did not expect to delay till this time to write you again to keep you informed of the progress of our affairs here. But various causes have prevented my doing it at an earlier period. I left La Pointe on the first day of March and arrived here on the twelfth. We found the ice on Lake Superior above La Pointe much broken by the winds and very rough. Much of the way the traveling was bad for horses and trains, and for the last half of the distance we were often obliged to climb over the high banks of ice which were formed by the spray in the early part of winter near the shore, and pick our way along between them and the rocks and banks of land which skirt the shores of this great lake. Sometimes the lake was open a short distance to our right, the ice not having been strong enough during the winter to resist the power of the wind and the action of the water. It was very evident that the ice had not been formed during the whole winter to any great distance from the shore in the upper part of the lake.

After we reached the St. Louis river we found the traveling comparatively good. There was but little depth of snow on the rivers, though the snow lay very deep on the land. Our party

consisted of four persons and two horses with flat sledges. There were three other men and one women with two others horses in company with us the first week. When the Sabbath came the others went on and left us to its enjoyments in camp. We encamped in the open air every night while on the way, except two. One of these we spent at the trading post at Fond du Lac, and the other at the Methodist Mission Station at Sandy Lake. We had but little stormy weather during the journey, till the last two days of it, when we encountered a light snow storm, which impeded our progress considerabley. A part of the time the weather was very cold, the thermometre sinking to more than twenty degrees below zero. Our sledges were loaded with our provisions for the journey, our blankets, feed for our horses, and a few articles which we needed after our arrival, so that we had no opportunity for riding. But I was able to endure the journey on foot with no apparent injury to my health, and could walk as great a distance in a day, as the horses could go with their loads. My health is better now than it was most of the time last winter. On my arrival here, I found things as favorable to our establishing here as I expected. I cannot but feel that God has thus far prospered us. There are however but few Indians encamped here at this time. It is the time of sugar making and most of them are scattered to their sugar camps
I enclose to you with this sheet a copy of an agreement

which I have arranged with Mr. Watrous, the Agent, for the school. In one important particular I have not done as I had resolved to do, and as I partially pledged myself to you not to do; and that was, not to complete any arrangement without first submitting it to the Committee for their approval. My reasons for varying from this determination are the following. It had been several months since the offer of the school was made to us. Mr. Watrous wanted the business closed, that he might report to the Indian Department without further delay. If any thing is accomplished this season it was necessary to begin at once. I could not receive funds till a formal agreement was signed and a bond given. Our mails are so irregular that they cannot at present be relied on, and there must necessarily be much delay in getting the action of the Committee on this subject. It was uncertain whether the present agent would hold the office long, and the appointment of a new one might put our affairs in a very different posture. Though the agreement is dated at the time of my arrival here, it was but recently that the arrangement was completed and signed.

I suppose that nearly every point is gained by the arrangement as it now stands which you would contend for. The school buildings are to be erected, and put in readiness for occupancy, the farm is to be opened and fenced, stock and tools furnished at the expense of the Government. They are also to give us all the annual school fund — we are bound to keep only twenty five scholars, and if that number cannot be obtained, we are to receive that sum for keeping what can be obtained. If we keep more than that number they are to pay seventy five dollars *per annum* for each above 25, out of the accumulated fund, if it is not exhausted in putting the school into operation. They cannot in any case require us to keep over 35 scholars at any one time. There is no place left, as I can see, for an Agent to interfere with the school, if we fulfil our part well. Neither he nor the Commissioner of Indian Affairs can interfere with the appointment of teachers; and the agent cannot interfere with the appointment of the Superintendent or remove him, and probably the Commissioner of Indian Affairs will always sanction whatever appointment the Committee make. If I chose to hold the office, I do not see that an Agent has power to remove me. The present agent does not seem to wish for any interference with the school.

I got a clause inserted to the effect, that if we are broken up again by removal while this agreement is pending, we may be indemnified for the loss of the property we may sustain by it. One thousand dollars will probably cover all the expense of buildings, etc. which we shall have need of here, aside from the school building.

I have done the best I could, and what seemed to me in the main to be fair and right. I trust you will approve of the arrangement. I do not know how you will be pleased with the length of time for which it runs. The agent wanted it limited, and it seemed to me best in that case to have it run for a considerable period. I might have put the time for a [illegible] period; but I thought it best, if we take it all, to keep it long enough to effect something, if any thing can be done. Perhaps this does not accord with your instructions to leave a place "to back out." But as I supposed you intended that remark to apply to the interference of the agent with the appointment and removal of teachers, I felt at liberty to disregard it.

With regard to the machinery of having a superintendent and allowing him a salary, I will only say that this was the way Mr. Watrous chose to have it, and I suppose it will be the same thing to the Committee. The Government wish for a responsible person to receive and disburse the funds, and keep the school going as it should do. They will allow nothing for the school till it goes into operation. But they will allow a salary for my services from the time I arrived here.

In connection with this subject I would propose to the Committee to allow me in future a stipulated salary, which shall be for the support of myself and family, instead of having my expenses paid as heretofore. At least I would like to [illegible] know the views of the Committee in regard to the expediency of this course. There are some reasons why I should prefer this. And I would name five hundred dollars as the annual amount which I shall re-

~~vices~~, reserving the privilege of removing my two youngest children to the States for their education if it shall be thought at the expense of the Board, expedient, but relinquishing all further claim on them ~~Board~~ for support.

The Agent allows us to occupy some 40 acres of land which has been broken in connection with the Indian farm. On this I hope to raise something towards the supply for our families next winter. I have had to employ some laborers & purchase considerable seeds and shall be obliged to make a draft on the treasury to meet these and other expenses. We are obliged to pay higher here for every thing we need than at La Pointe. It will be expensive removing our families, and we must leave behind a large part of our household stuff, as it will cost more to remove it than it is worth. I shall probably go or send for my family in June. I shall probably want to get a few goods from Boston this season, but have not time to make out an order now. We must suffer many inconveniences for the first year before we can get well established here & perhaps some privations. But these I hope we shall cheerfully endure if by that means we may do something to elevate and save the benighted Ojibwas.

With regard to the Station on Bad River, I have time now only to say, in reply to your letter of Jan. 20th, that I approve the action of the Committee in regard to the continuance of Mr. Wheeler there. In a letter to you about two years ago I gave my reasons pretty fully for preferring La Pointe to Bad River. Mr Wheeler has always entertained different views on that subject & would not be willing to remove there, and I suppose it not necessary to discuss the subject further.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Chippewa Agency, April 23, 1853
Recd. May 7, 1853
Ans. May 20

Articles of agreement entered into on this 12th day of March A.D. 1853, by and between the United States, by John S. Watrous, Agent for the Chippewas of Lake Superior and the Mississippi, on the first part, and Sherman Hall acting for and on behalf of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, on the second part, witnesseth; that the party of the second part doth hereby covenant and bind himself as follows, viz.

That he will receive and educate at or near the present Chippewa Agency in the Chippewa nation any number of scholars of both sexes, of full or mixed Chippewa blood that may offer themselves or can be induced to attend, not exceeding the average number of thirty five for any one year, furnishing them with such clothing and boarding, and all other attendance and things as are necessary to make them comfortable, – the education to be given the scholars shall be in the English language and shall comprise instruction in reading, writing, arithmetic, geography, history, and such other branches of education as the capacities of the scholars will admit, and the Superintendent of the School shall think proper.

The male scholars shall also be instructed in agriculture and the practical use of agricultural implements, and in such mechanic arts as in the opinion of the superintendent of the school, their ~~capacities and tastes best~~ fit them for; and the females shall be instructed in the various branches of housewifery, sewing, knitting and making garments.

The party of the second part further agrees to cultivate by the labor of the scholars and otherwise the farm herein after described, to be connected with the school, and to have and keep in order such agricultural and mechanic implements as may be necessary to carry out fully the instruction in agriculture and mechanic arts; – the produce of the farm to belong to the school for the use of the scholars and teachers.

No scholars over twenty, nor under five years of age shall be received

The Superintendent shall report at the expiration of each quarter of the year to the Agent of the Chippewas, the number of scholars in daily attendance during the quarter, and shall annually report the number in attendance during the year, when they entered, their progress in different branches of education, and the condition and affairs of the school in general, and he shall carry out all the instructions from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs not inconsistent with this agreement.

In consideration of the foregoing, the party of the first part hereby stipulates as follows to wit:

To allow to Sherman Hall for his services as Superintendent of the school, or to his successor in case he fails to perform this service, the annual sum of six hundred dollars, to be paid quarterly out of the funds for educational purposes annually arising and accruing from treaty stipulations with the Chippewas of Lake Superior and the Mississippi; and he further stipulates to furnish funds sufficient to erect suitable buildings for the accommodation of the school and farm connected with it, including accommodations for the superintendent and teachers, school house, out houses, etc. and to furnish them with the necessary aparatus and fixtures for putting the school into operation; and also to break one hundred acres of prairie adjoining the school buildings, and to enclose the same with a substantial rail fence on or before the first day of September next; and also to furnish sufficient agricultural and mechanic tools to carry on the establishment, together with stock and team for carrying on the farm, out of [illegible] appropriated funds for educational purposes which have already accrued, and no other, to an amount not exceeding five thousand dollars;— and it is further understood that the party of the second part shall have the right to cut whatever hay is necessary for the use of the school farm on any natural meadows in the vicinity not now occupied by or not wanted for the use of the Indian farm.

The party of the second part agrees to give a receipt for all money received, to disburse and account for said money to the Indian Bureau after the manner of other public officers connected with the Department, and to return all property in good order and condition on the expiration of this agreement, reasonable wear and tear only excepted.

And the party of the first part further stipulates to pay to the party of the second part out of funds annually arising from treaty stipulations with the Chippewas of Lake Superior and the Mississippi, two thousand dollars annually, to be paid quarterly, including the salary of the Superintendent, the salary of the said superintendent to commence from the date of this agreement, and for the school when put into operation; for which sum the party of the second part agrees to receive and educate twenty five scholars, provided so many are offered or can be obtained; and in case the present accumulated fund should not be exhaused in putting the school into operation, the party of the second part further agrees to receive and educate an additional number not exceeding ten annually, for the additional sum of seventy five dollars per annum for each scholar in daily regular attendance, to be ascertained and paid quarterly by the Agent, upon rolls furnished by the Superintendent, the attendance to be averaged and pay only received for a number equal to a full attendance

Should the Chippeway Indians be removed from these lands during the pending of this agreement, the Government ~~out~~ out of funds aforesaid, and out of no other, will compensate the party of the second part for any loss of property occasioned by such removal and suspension of the school, to any amount not exceeding one thousand dollars.

The Superintendent hereafter, should a change become necessary, and the teachers shall be appointed by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, the appointment of said Superintendent to be approved or rejected by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

This agreement is to subsist and be in force for the term of seven years; but the party of the first part reserves the right to cancel and annul the same at any time, upon good cause therefor, upon giving notice in writing, if upon investig tion it should be found that just grounds of complaint for mismanagement shall exist, or the conditions of this agreement are not fulfilled in good faith by the party of the second part.

In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands and affixed our seals, at the Chippewa Agency in the Territory of Minnesota, the day and year aforesaid.

In presence of

Signed J. S. Watrous
Ind. Agent
S. Hall, Supt of Schools &c

Agreement between U. S. Government & Rev. S. Hall, for the Board.

Recd. May 7, 1853

8C

Sauk Rapids, Min. Ter.
May 17th 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

I write you from this place on my return from St. Paul to Crowwing. I have been to St. Paul on business. I wrote you a few weeks ago, and forwarded at the same time a copy of the agreement which I have arranged with Mr. Watrous for the school. Since that time affairs have taken a little different turn here from what I expected. Mr. Watrous has been removed and another agent appointed to fill his place. I knew he was liable to be removed, but it was thought by most of his friends, that he would not be. It is well therefore that our business was arranged as early as it was. This change however will not materially probably affect our affairs. In one respect however I regret to have it take place just at this time. He had a saw mill in process of erection for the benefit of the Indians, on which I was depending for lumber for our buildings. The change may interrupt this work for a time and cause delay to us. I fear we shall not be able to get lumber in season to complete our buildings this ~~fall~~ season. But I shall try to do the best I can for it. The new agent has not yet arrived & probably will not for a month or more. The old one acts till his arrival, and is disposed to further our objects as much as if he expected to remain. The new one is a stranger to us all, and we know nothing what to expect from his influence. We hope he will be a good man. But our hope of success is not altogether in men, though they are instruments for good or evil - in the hands of God. Though I felt as if God had prospered us when I wrote you before, and do now, yet I see many difficulties before me in getting the school into operation. It is exceedingly difficult to get the means to work with here. Labour is very high, and labourers are scarce. We are almost beyond civilization and for a time must find ourselves without many of those comforts and conveniences which we have enjoyed at Lapointe. There will be for a time a multitude of worldly cares and anxieties upon me, which will necessarily depress my spirits. But I hope I shall at length get through these and shall see a prosperous school in operation. If we can once get started and get the right kind of labourers, I think there is no doubt, but that we shall have as many scholars as we can keep. A good school must have much influence upon the Indian community in the neighborhood.

There is at present some agitation among the Indians of this region on account of murders which have recently been committed among them. There are difficulties between the ~~Chippewas~~ Ojibwas and Winnebagoes, who are situated side by side. These probably can easily be settled. The old animosities between the Sioux & Chippeways have to a small extent been blown up recently, and a few days ago a party of Ojibwas fired upon some Sioux in a store, in the very centre of St. Paul and killed one Sioux woman who happened to be there. It requires all the influence of the public officers of the Government to keep them quiet, and then they are very restless. But the time is not far distant when they must keep quiet, or the Government will compel them to remove further off. They prospects of the Indians throughout all this extensive border look dark. God has a controversy with them. But that should be no reason for our relaxing our efforts for their good, so long as we have any influence with them.

I shall start for Lapointe in a few days to close up our business there and remove my family. It will cost us a considerable sum to remove, and considerable more to live after we get removed. I have thought it best to seed in considerable ground this spring, though attended with considerable expense, in order, if possible, to obtain crops in the fall, to aid us to subsist during the winter, to avoid as much as possible the heavy expense of transporting provisions from below. We must in future raise on the ground most of the provisions required for our subsistence. I have already signed a draft on Mr Hill for $500, and sign another to the same amount of this date, which amount will principally be expended for provisions for the subsistence of our families the present year. I shall necessarily have to draw for more to cover our removal expenses, and for some buildings which we must erect at our own expense. I will try to make these as small as I can, but they run up very fast. Everything costs much more here than at Lapointe.

In view of the responsibilities and perplexities, and self-denial which I have experienced and now see before me my spirits sometimes sink; I have need of much more faith than I have in possession, and often find it hard to keep my heart so stayed on God as to be in peace.

I have received your letter containing the sanction of the Pru. Committee to our disposing of the mission property at

Lapointe. But I am afraid we shall lose it after all. Very unexpectedly to every body the country around Lapointe was advertised for sale the present spring. The sale was to take place in May commencing the second day. Not five persons interested probably knew of the land coming into market for the present, and of course did not make their claims to their improvements. A man by the name of Austrian a German Jew, who has for a number of years resided at Lapointe, got knowledge of the sale, and went to the land office and has bid off the whole village at Lapointe, depriving almost every family there of getting any legal claim to their own property except through him. The mission property has gone with the rest. I hope however we may get something. It is thought however that the sale will not be sanctioned by the Commissioner of the General Land Office. I shall go to Lapointe as soon as I can arrange my business, and see what we can do to save our hard earned property there.

There have not been many Indians encamped at the Agency this spring. Most of the Indians of the neighborhood have been at Gull Lake some nine miles from the Agency. Several families will plant gardens at the Agency and will probably remain there during the summer and fall. We hope when we get established to draw more there.

Please to request Mr. Durant to send my Herald, Journal of Missions and Dayspring to Crow Wing, Min. Ter. I close with the apostolic request, Brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have free course and be glorified here as it is with you.

Yours truly
S. Hall

[illegible] S. Hall
[illegible] Min. Ter. May 17, 1853
Recd. June 14 " 1853

Chippewa Agency, Crowwing.
July 25th 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

Your letters of May 20th, one addressed to me at Lapointe, and the other at this place, have been received; one I found at Lapointe when I arrived there; the other I found here on my return to this place. I am gratified to know that the Committee approve of my arrangements with Maj. Watrous respecting the school. And I think the occurrences since show that it was wise to conclude the arrangement at once, if we have anything to do with the school. I do not think any arrangement could now be made so good as the one we have made, perhaps none at all. We have a new agent, and I suppose we shall have a new system of operations here. How friendly the present officers will prove to us, and our object I cannot say. It remains yet to be seen whether they will sympathize very deeply with us in the school, and the religious and moral improvement of the Indians. I regret very much that a change of agents was made just at this time. I had become acquainted with Mr. Watrous and could have counted on his countenance and aid in carrying forward our plans. The new agent is a stranger to me, and may not manifest as much interest in getting the school into operation as Mr. W. did.

I know not how to give you a better idea of our affairs, as they now are, than to give you a brief history of them since

I last wrote to you.

When I wrote you in April, I thought I could say the Lord had prospered us. Since that time I have found more trials and discouragements, though we have no occasion to say the Lord has not been our Keeper. I brought through with me from Lapointe two men to labor, and my son. These I set to getting out logs for boards and timber for building, for a time. Early in the spring we put up the walls of a small log building and in May got it covered and laid a floor of hewed logs so that it could be occupied by the men we employed on the farm and building. Mr. Watrous allowed us to occupy about 25 acres of land which he had broken on the Indian Farm. This I caused to be plowed and seeded to oats, corn, beans, potatoes, turnips, and various garden vegetables. The crops now look tolerably fair. But the present agent thinks that a part of the crop ought to be demanded of us for the use of the land.

On the 30th of May I left this place for Lapointe, to settle as well as I could, our business there, and remove our families and that portion of our goods which would pay for transporting to this place. I arrived there on the 8th of June, and left with my family on the 13th. Mr. Pulsifer and Henry Blatchford with their families left three days later. I came by way of the Lakes, Chicago & Galena, and took along with me a portion of the things we thought it best to remove. The others went ~~by~~ way of Fond du Lac & Sandy Lake in canoes. I arrived here July 8th. The others were here two days sooner. We were some delayed on the way, particuearly at St. Paul where I had some business to attend to. The canoe route is the shortest, but we could not obtain canoes and men to take us all through and our goods. Either way is very expensive. The canoe route is very hard for females, especially in crossing muddy portages. Providence has brought us together again and without suffering materially from our journey.

Before I left for Lapointe, I bought a small house in which I am now living. This was the only shelter I could find for my family for the present, as it was impossible to build till we can get lumber. We all felt that we ought all to be here, and unite our labors on this ground. Since my return, I find the claim of the man who sold me the house is contested, and I may lose it. Mr. Pulsifer has gone into the house we built, and Henry lives for the present in an Indian lodge. We must build a house for him as soon as we possibly can. There is a great contrast between our accommodations and conveniences here, and those we had at Lapointe. It need not be thought strange if we all feel some unpleasantly at times. The weather is much more oppressively warm than it is on the Lake. The scenery is very different and far less attractive. It is emphatically, to us a new home in the wilderness— the commencement of missionary life anew. But we are here, and I trust at the call of Providence, and if we can lose sight of ourselves, and live for God, and heaven, and the salvation of the perishing around us, we can be happy here, ~~with~~ what God gives us. The musquetoes are very troublesome and it is impossible to keep them out of our open houses.

I have felt considerable anxiety as to what may be our situation for buildings next winter. For the want of lumber, we have not advanced with our buildings as I expected.. When I came here I expected a sawmill would have been completed here before this time, so that lumber could be obtained without difficulty for the buildings we have occasion to erect. But in this respect I am disappointed. The mill is not done, and will not be for a month or more. But still our dependance for lumber must be upon it principally. The failure is attributable in part at least to the change of agents. Mr. Watsons undertook to build the mill with the labor of the employees of the Government, and as no public funds were applicable to this purpose, he intended to procure the irons and other things for which there must be an outlay of money, with his own private funds, and have it refunded to him out of the avails of lumber sawed in the mill. But when he found he was removed from office, he refused to procure the irons, but gave me a paper to the effect that if I would advance money for the irons and aid in building the dam I should have lumber for my pay, or the use of the mill to saw lumber enough to remunerate me. The present agent recognizes this act of his predecessor, but the mill has not advanced as fast as I expected, partly on account of the irons not being furnished according to order. You may not approve of my advancing funds to build the mill; but it was the only way that we had any prospect of getting buildings erected to shelter us next winter, and especially of getting lumber to build the school buildings. I thought I was justified under the circumstances in doing it. I cannot charge this expense to the School Fund, because I can not get orders, but as soon as lumber is sawed, it will be turned over to the School buildings and then the money advanced will be paid back. It has been a great trial to me to assume this responsibility, but I did not see any other way to turn. The mill would not have been completed this season and perhaps never, if I had not done it. Lumber could not be obtained short of going nearly 30 miles for it, and not enough for our use at present by going that distance. ~~Common~~ Lumber drawn from that mill will cost 24 dollar per thousand feet. To saw by hand will not cost less.

Our expenses have been more than I expected. Every thing we have to procure costs very high here. Common laborers demand from 22½ dollars a month to 30 dollars and board. I have to pay a carpenter 50 dollars a month and board him. You will say this is high. It is so; but we are out of the pale of civilization, and men can not be found to work here, as they can be in settled and civilized communities. I can do no better. The Government employees obtain wages equally high. We were obliged to leave all our furniture at Lapointe including our cooking stoves. We are obliged to procure a few things in order to make our situation tolerable. A part of our stock we could not sell previously to our removal. I feel obliged to procure a cow or two, even though our expenses should overrun the amount allowed for this station. The cows at Lapointe will find sale before winter, I do not doubt. I have given drafts on Mr. Hill for $1,400 besides some provisions sent to us at Lapointe in the spring by Mr. Clark. Our expenses for removal have been over $500. There is due to laborers now some $200, and considerable more will be due before we can secure our crops. I have procured a considerable part of the provisions necessary for us till next Spring. Something more will be required. I do not think I can get through the season and make ourselves tolerable comfortable for provisions and shelter for the winter without drawing eight hundred or a thousand dollars more. This however will include the amount which I have advanced on the mill which I expect will eventually come out of the school fund. I will expend as little as I possibly can of our own funds for buildings and make ourselves only tolerable comfortable. But we must put up something for Henry Blatchford to live in. If the Committee complain of our expenses, I wish they would come here and see how we are obliged to live for the time being at best, and the embarrassments under which we must labor. If they, or the Churches were in our place, they would not complain, so far as comforts are concerned, that we are too extravagant in this respect. Formerly when under a pressure, I could take hold and labor with my own hands. But it is not so now. Since my attack last fall, I have not been as well as I used to be. Since April, my health has been not good. Under a pressure of anxieties and cares my spirits frequently sink, and I sometimes feel as if I could not sustain my labors many months without breaking down. I hope however when the heat of summer is past that I shall be better.

The change of agents has created some embarrassment, and given me some anxiety. The present agent refused to pay me my salary, or to turn over any more of the School fund, on the ground that he has no evidence that my appointment has been endorsed by the Indian Department. He waits for instructions. I have very little doubt that all is right at Washington, but I may be embarrassed some for want of funds in going on with our building and opening the farm. I have received 1.500 dollars, and when that is expended, I must stop if I can get no more. I am desirous to see Governor Gorman and converse with him in person respecting the School and our affairs here I think of going to St. Paul next week, as I have also some other business there.

You will expect to be informed particularly of our prospects here in other respects. As to these, though there is nothing particularly bright in the future, I do not feel discouraged. I believe as large a number of Scholars can be procured as we can educate. But I suppose many of them will be from families of mixed blood. The Indians here are like pagan Indians everywhere, wild and indifferent to the gospel and to their social improvement. They care nothing but for the loaves and the fishes. But by nature they are no worse than many other heathens who have been converted to the truth and saved. Nor are they worse perhaps in practice. I feel that there is a field here among both Indians and White men that ought to be cultivated. But it is a terrible hard one to cultivate. There are many employed on the farm and mechanics, and traders who exert a great influence over the Indians. I hope the mission may have some influence in moulding their characters. We had much influence at Lapointe over such a class of people, and we hope we may gain it here. But at present many things look disheartening. We have got to gain a footing here, and if we advance at all, it will be against a strong current of wickedness and corruption. If the Lord works with us we shall be successful, otherwise our labor will be in vain.

It will be impossible for us to open a boarding school before next spring; we cannot get buildings ready before that time. Nor have we help enough to do it now. We shall need a good family, a man and his wife to take charge of the ~~domestic concern~~ part of the establishment, and perhaps a farmer. Can you not be looking out for such help for us?

I have ever regarded our coming here as an experiment. What will be the result remains to be seen. I came here, I trust, at the call of Providence. There are difficulties to encounter which I did not anticipate. But I hope to meet them with fortitude. They are trials, but if they wean us from the world and bring us nearer to Christ they will be our gain. The rest of heaven will be sweet after a life of toil for Christ.

The Indians about here obtain a considerable quantity of whiskey by going off the Indian lands, and drunken Indians are often seen.

As to the subject of my receiving a salary, I have too much on hand at present to discuss the subject further now. At some future time perhaps I may mention it again. But we are too much unsettled now to decide what amount would be right.

Yours truly,

Sherman Hall.

Rev. Sherman Hall
Crow Wing, July 22, 53
Recd. Aug 5. 53
Ansd Aug 16

St Paul, Min Ter. July 30th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I wrote you a few days ago giving you some account of our affairs up to that time. I now write you again with feelings of oppression, such as I never had occasion to indulge whenever I wrote you before. I feel as if the Lord was hedging up our way. I have felt a deep pressure of anxiety respecting the result of ~~making~~ our efforts to establish ourselves at Crowwing for many weeks past.

On my return from Lapointe with my family, it was reported that the present agent designed to interfere with our school arrangement. I thought it was so fixed that there could be no interference of that kind, and gave myself very little trouble concerning these reports. I knew that Major Watrous acted under instructions and in accordance with them, in making the arrangement with us for the school. I knew that Gov. Ramsey approved of it, and every one supposed that, let whoever would come into power, the arrangement could not be broken up. On my arrival at Crowwing I inquired of the new agent, D. B. Herriman, whether I could obtain any more of the school funds. He said he could not turn over any money to me till he had instructions to do so, as he had

no evidence that the agreement between Mr. Watrous and us was approved by the Indian Department.
I thought it desirable to have an interview with the present Governor respecting this school, and I am now here on that and other business. I have called on him and introduced the subject. He informed me that the agreement signed by Mr. Watrous and myself was transmitted to Washington by Governor Ramsey about the first of May. In the mean time Gov. Gorman succeeded to the place of Governor Ramsey as Superintendant of Indian Affairs in this territory. About the 16th of July this agreement was sent back to Gov Gorman with a letter asking his opinion with regard to it, and stating that it was transmitted to Washington by Governor Ramsey, without his expressing any opinion with regard to it.
I have seen Gov. Ramsey who says the agreement had his approval, and that the fact of his transmitting it in the manner he did without making objections, as he did other documents which he approved, implied his approbation of it. He further replied that they had kept it too long to make objections to it now. If they had any thing to object, they should have sent it back immediately; but said he supposed they would do as they pleased in the matter.

Governor Gorman says he does not approve of the agreement in all its features. He objects to the clause that binds the Government to pay damages for any loss sustained by us in consequence of breaking up the school by a removal of the Indians during the pending of the agreement, and to the length of time for which the agreement is to continue in force. He intimates that it should run but for one year, and then be renewed or be renewed from year to year. As to the first particular I care but little. We should probably have but little property to lose by a removal of the Indians. As to the second there are serious, and I think insuperable objections. I doubt not the Prudential Committee will think so too. It seems to me to indicate a determination on the part of the present officers in power here to control the school at pleasure. The Governor says that whatever he decides in reference to this subject will be the decision of the Department at Washington. He says he has no wish for us to withdraw, but that we must accept such terms as he proposes, and give new bonds, and then we can go on. I regret very much that we have had any thing to do with the school, and let it cost what it will, we had better get out of it before we are any more involved.

If they break up this arrangement after they have permitted us to go ~~so far~~ on three months acting on it, without our consent, it is a palpable breach of good faith on their part, and I think that the Committee, without one hour's delay, ought to remonstrate with the powers at Washington. I do not believe the President would approve of the proceeding if he understood the matter. We have on moved our families here at great expense, and have incurred other heavy expenses to carry out this agreement, all in good faith. They have given us funds to go on with our preparations for opening the school; and now for them to interfere in this way at this late hour is intolerable. Ever since Mr. Watrous was removed from office I have wished that we had not undertaken the school. Had he continued in office, I doubt not all would have gone on well. The present officers are very different men from their predecessors and appear to have no sympathy with us or our object. I do not suppose the Committee will wish to have anything to do with the school if they can have it for one year only at a time; and certainly I do not. At the end of the year we may all be turned out, and the school put into other hands. There will be such an interference that we cannot endure it.

But what shall we do? On this subject I feel greatly distressed. I have been the occasion of much expense to the Board by coming here. My plans are all disconcerted and broken up. Our families, three in number, have removed. We have not a house to shelter one of us, if they take away the house which I bought, and which the Governor has directed the agent to take from us. The small building which we have erected with the school funds, we must also resign if we do not accept their terms for the school. I feel my health suffering under this pressure, and feel that I shall be obliged to retire from these scenes of labor and trial soon. Shall we build us a shelter for the winter and try to remain here? We cannot do it without incurring much expense, and none of us would advise to try to do any thing ~~here~~ with a view to remaining ~~here~~ long, unless we can have the school. An inclement winter in this northern climate will soon be upon us. There are no buildings on the ground or in the neighborhood which we can obtain. Under these circumstances our families are discontented and unhappy. At present it does not look to us as if there could be enough done for the Indians at this point to warrant ~~laying out~~ incurring any more expenses for buildings, than is absolutely necessary to shelter us till we can see what the Lord will do with us. But we must have some shelter, or we must abandon the ground at once. This last ~~I do~~ not ~~feel it~~ is desirable to do just yet, unless my health or some other necessity compel us to it. Had I not removed my family ~~from~~ Lapointe, I might perhaps have proposed to have taken them to the eastern states next fall, while I might have been employed for a time in the printing of the Ojibwa Testament, which the A.B. Society wish to publish a new edition of. I wait your advice what to do under these circumstances. In the mean time I shall be obliged to act, ~~but~~ have no particular course just now to propose, for I do not know exactly what to do. You may think I have been hasty and rash in going on and incurring so much expense, as the event is likely to prove so undesirable. I could not foresee these things. I did not expect them. I did not anticipate that we could have such men to deal with here as we have got, and that there is so little good faith in some departments of our Government. I cannot particularly reproach myself. If my health is not better than it has been for three months past, I could not long endure the labor of superintending and managing the school if we had it.

You may infer from what I have written that there are no materials to operate upon at Crow Wing and that we can do nothing by remaining there. There are more or less Indians there nearly the year round, though the number most of the time is not large; and there are a good many white persons ~~there~~ who need to have a religious influence exerted upon them. We need not be idle if we stay there through the winter at least.

Aug 1st I have just had another interview with Gov. Gorman respecting the school. Perhaps I wrote the above under too desponding feelings and have insinuated things that may do injustice to the Governor and other public officers. He disclaims all wish or intention to throw any embarrassments in their way or wish to have us retire. The principle alterations he proposes to make in the agreement relate to remuneration for loss of property in case the Indians might be removed during the pending of the agreement, and the length of time for which it shall run. Instead of seven years he proposed to renew it from year to year, with the right of either party to withdraw at the close of any year. Accept these changes with some other minor ones" and then go right straight on" is his language. As we now are situated, I advise unhesitatingly to do it. This will save us from pecuniary loss by breaking up now and retiring. We can erect a building for our accommodation before winter probably, with the school funds. I shall not be liable to loss for the money I have expended on the mill. There is a loop hole to get out at, if things prove intolerable; and on the whole my mind is much relieved. I hope to have the views of the Committee as soon as you can give them.

I suppose Mr. Wheeler has given you the materials for [illegible] annual Report on our mission before this time.

Yours very truly

S. Hall.

P.S. Perhaps I ought to say, that we cannot put the school into operation before next spring, and before that time there may be new developments. We can therefore go on just as we are.

I leave for Crow wing to day.

Rev S. Hall
La Point July 30/53

Recd. Aug 12/53

Ansd Augt 16

[conclusion of letter dated Aug. 8. 1853.

expect to preach to on any one day. If the Lord work with us here we need not be discouraged. These souls are precious. I hope you will write me often and give your counsel. I am often perplexed to know what to do, and still am obliged to act. But I should be better pleased if you could make us a visit in person this fall.

Yours truly

S. Hall.

rer

red

Crow-wing, M. T. Aug. 8th 1853

v S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir:

I wrote you a week ago from St Paul. My letter will indicate a spirit of discouragement and despondency. I have now arrived at home. I have had time for more calm reflection; and have consulted with Mr. Pulsifer and the mission families. I have also just recieved your letter of June 11th which was forwarded to me from Lapointe. I feel encouraged by it. I feel that we came here to do the Lord's work; I feel that his providence brought us here, and that I have acted under the indications of that providence in what I have done, according to the best of my judgment. And now if things are not just as we would have them, they may be as God would have them. It may be that he permits Satan to oppose us for some wise reason unbeknown to us now, but which we may know hereafter. Perhaps he is permitting opposers to bear rule now, for the greater display of his own glory hereafter. If the Lord has any thing for us to do here, he will show us in due time without doubt. And though our trials are severe, I hope we shall be kept from despondency. That God has a terrible controversy with these Indians is to me clear. But why it is, or how long it is to last is hid from me. They are given up to total blindness as to their own best interests. They are permitted to fall under the most powerful temptations and corrupting influences which can operate successfully on a people in this condition to degrade and destroy them.

It is our opinion that notwithstanding the difficulties and discouragements before us, we had better go forward. We cannot recede at present and withdraw without considerable sacrifice of property. It may possibly cost more to go on. But we know not when to go. We think under the circumstances, we had better accept the terms offered us, and go on with the school for a time at least. We can withdraw at the close of a year, if we cannot go on comfortably. I would not accept these terms because I feel that the officers of the Government are doing justly by us to require this modification of the original agreement. If they had any thing to object, the objection should have been made long ago. Neither do I think that the arragement now proposed is the best one for the prosperity of the school. You can see plainly enough that no plan can be laid for the future, and not much efficiency can be given to the school, when we have no certainty that we can have the control of it for only a few months to come. But we have got involved in it. We strongly suspect that it is the plan of some in power here to get rid of us if they can, because they have no sympathy with missionaries or missionary operations, and because they wish to get control of these funds for their own advantage; and we doubt whether we ought to yield. At least we think we ought to give them time to show what part they intend to act toward us and the school. I feel confident that if they break us up, the school fund will be of no advantage to the Indians. If we stand our ground firmly and yield only when compelled to, in case we are dealt unjustly by, we shall have a fair opportunity to appeal to the public. If we should throw up the whole thing now, it would look like fickleness on our part; and the impression would be unfavorable to us. It would be leaving the ground before the expiriment has been fairly tried, and before the developments of Providence are sufficiently plain for us to decide whether there is any thing for us to do here, or not. We think the field is not sufficiently promising to warrant our making a large outlay to establish here, unless we have the school.

My health is not good, compared with what it used to be; but it is not so poor as to require me to leave the field yet, and I anticipate that I shall ~~feel~~ be better when the heat of summer is past. We propose therefore to go on and provide such accommodations for our families for the approaching winter, as best we can, and at as little expense to the Board as we can. Our accommodations will be indifferent at best, but we hope to provide something which will shelter us. Next we propose to do all the missionary labor we can. — to preach to those who will hear us, and after a while to open a small school if possible, though we cannot possibly open a boarding school this winter for want of buildings and help.

It is much more lonesome here than it was at Lapointe. Many comforts and conveniences which we enjoyed there we cannot have here. We all feel somewhat dispirited. But I trust that when we become a little more settled these feelings will in part subside.

I doubt whether I ought to remain here long on account of my family. I have a duty to perform towards them which no one else can perform. The heath of my wife and that of my oldest daughter is not good, and they suffer from being so much excluded ~~[illegible]~~ ~~[illegible]~~ from Society.

I fear that in my unsettled condition during the past spring and summer I have not given you such a report as you expected from me. I have trusted to Mr. Wheeler to send you the statistics of Lapointe for your annual report. I hope he has done it. I might give you something now, but I suppose it will be of no use to you.

I have said some things which imply that the officers of the Government in power here are not men of such character as we could wish to see stationed here. I have not at present any charges to prefer against either the governor or the agent. But it is generally understood here that if we meet with no hostility from them, we need not expect much sympathy from them in our object as missionaries. I suppose nothing is gained to the cause of religion or good morals by the change of officers. Though I feel that you ought to know the character of our public men here, especially those who are placed to guard the interests of the Indians, I hope you will be especially careful to publish nothing that will imply a censure of them, till we are better informed, and we can have more time to see what is the course they intend to pursue here.

Since I came here last spring we have held public religious exercises on the Sabbath nearly every Sabbath when I have not been absent. Until my return from Lapointe with my family, these exercises were conducted principally in the English language. At that time there were very few Indians here. Since my return, these exercises have been conducted in both the English and Ojibwa languages. The number of Indians we have been able to draw into our meetings has been small. There are white people enough residing here at present to make a considerable of an audience. None need the gospel preached to them more than these. Yesterday we had an audience at our house of about forty, though a part of them could not understand a sermon in English. Besides these a number of others attended another service in Ojibwa at another place. This is a larger number than we can ordinarily

Rev. S. Hall
Bad River Aug 8 53
Recd Sept 27 53
[illegible]

Crow-wing Min. Ter.
Aug. 11th 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I have just obtained a copy of Governor Gorman's communication to Mr Herriman, the Chip. Agent, respecting to school contract, which I will here copy for you. It is as follows:

Copy.

"To Mr D. B. Herriman".

"The Department has asked my opinion of the Chippewa school contract. I have disapproved of the clause allowing damages in case of the removal of the Indians.

2d I have disapproved of the contract running 7 years.

3d I have disapproved of some other minor details in the contract.

4th But I see no objection to Mr. Hall's going on with the contract after making these changes. I make no objection because he is a missionary. My reply has gone to Washington. I put all under your control.

Respectfully, your friend

W. A Gorman Gov. & Supt
of Ind. Affs."

"The contract should run from year to year with the option of either party to quit at the end of the year.

W. A. G."

I have understood that the Agent has made objections to our having the school *because* we are missionaries. But perhaps he may not show any hostility to us, if we attend to our own business properly. We choose to wait and see, as the matter now stands. My present opinion is that we had better wait quietly and see what the Lord will do for us, and accept the terms offered us. We may not wish any connexion with the school at the end of a year. In the mean time I wish you would keep your eye out for some to come to our aid, in case things should look favorable a few months hence. We have not help & strength to take # 25 children and teach them. And I know not where we can get any here.

If you wish to know my opinion with regard to this interference with the original contract, I have no hesitation in saying, that I think it unfair and unjust, and if it should be persisted in, in case we should urge our right to go on under it, it would indicate a want of good faith in the authorities. They suffered it to go too far before they made any objection. It may still be a plan to get rid of us, for aught I know. I wish not however to impute bad motives to the officers of the Government, till I have more evidence that they have wrong intentions, than I now have. We may be as glad, perhaps, to get out of it as they. But I have no hope that the school fund will ever do the Indians a particle of good unless it is given to some missionary society.

I wrote you fully on the 8th.

Yours truly

S. Hall.

Rev S. Hall

Crow Wing, Aug 11. '53

Recd Aug 27

Ackd Sept 16

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (132-138)

Hall, Sherman

132. 20 August 1853
133. 29 August 1853
134. 13 September 1853
135. 11 October 1853
136. 15 November 1853
137. 31 December 1853
138. 24 January 1854

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Crowwing, Min. Ter.
Aug. 20 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

In my late communications to you I forgot to say anything respecting our property at Lapointe. I have twice been to the land-office to see if anything could be done to get any claim to our buildings and improvements. The land, as I have before informed you, was offered in May and struck off to Mr. Austrian. But it was generally supposed that, under the circumstances the sale would not be confirmed. The managers of the land-office at Willow River wrote for instructions to the general land-office, but did not receive a reply before the time of the adjourned sale in July; consequently the land at Lapointe was not offered again. It remains therefore to be seen what will be the final decision of the General land-office as to the legality of the first sale.

As to our affairs here no new developments have been made since I wrote you a few days ago. I see no way to do, as we are now situated, but to go on and provide some buildings for the coming winter. If we cannot get funds from the government, we must do it with the funds of the Board. We must have some shelter till we see what the Lord will do with us.

I sometimes wish we had not come here; but the Lord has brought us here, has doubleſs some design in it; and it may turn out for his own glory in the establishment of the gospel among this people. But whatever may be the result, I shall ever feel that we were following the indications of his Providence in coming here.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall.

Crow Wing Aug. 20/53

Recd. Sept. 13/53

Ackg. " 16

133

Crow wing, Min. Ter.
August, 29th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of July 20th has been received. After all I have written you lately relative to our affairs here, it is unnecessary perhaps to say any thing more at present; yet I am anxious that you should be fully informed in regard to every thing which may aid you in forming a judgment of the best course to be pursued, and that we may have your advice in our present perplexing and trying circumstances. We hardly know what to do. Had we a shelter for our families where they could be comfortable during the coming winter, I should decide at once to wait quietly for the Government to decide whether or not they will give us the school on such terms that it would be worth while for us to engage in it. But we have not, and must provide something without delay, or leave the place. My original plan was to erect buildings suitable to accommodate two small families, at our own expense, and aside from the school buildings, so that, in case we should not be connected with the school, Henry Blatchford and myself could be entirely independent of it, and go on with our missionary work. But after I made a contract with Mr. Watrous for the school I decided to build only a house for Henry at our expense, as the Superintendent, by that contract, was to furnished with a house. But this interferance with the contract has disconcerted all my plans. As things now look we doubt whether it will be expedient to continue the station unless we can have the school in connexion with it. Until th question is settled we do not wish to build any thing permane and should not build at all if we could do any other wa

Indians here, I fear are not much disposed to profit [illegible] by our labors, except it be in the way of getting their living out of us. In this respect however, they are not different from most of the Ojibwas. They obtain a good deal of Whiskey, and some of them are vicious. Nor am I certain that we shall wish to be connected with the school long on account of the difficulty of managing it, and of the expense. I expect the Indians will make us much trouble.

I have ever regarded our coming here as an experiment. It may prove a failure. But it seemed to us that there was a prospect that we might yet possibly do something for the Ojibwas - sufficient to warrant the effort and the expense of removing here. In the present posture of affairs, and the prospects before us, I should seek some other field of labor, if we were not already here. But we are here. We are involved in this business. Providence has brought us here; I feel sure of it - and we cannot at once recede. What is to be the result of our coming here remains to be seen. God has some design in it doubtless. We are in the midst of heavy trials. God has a design in sending them. May they result in our good. He appears to be hedging up our way. It may be to try our faith and patience and to show us what is in our hearts. I came here under a conviction that it was my duty to come. These trials may be an indication that he does not design this as our field of labor. I trust all will be made plain in due time.

We thought it desirable to get the school if we could, for we feel sure that unless the school fund is put into the hands of some evangelical missionary society, it will be expended to no purpose, and will result in no good to the Indians. We think it now desirable to ~~get~~ the school if we can, and can manage it. By this disarrangement of my plans, we are subjected to considerable otherwise unnecessary expense. We have done more t farming than we should have done, had I not felt confident last spring, that we should open a boarding school this fall. In our present circumstances, this will not prove profitable. Had our plans succeeded, it would have been indispensable. As matters now stand we cannot open a boarding school before next spring, even if we should get the school. As the only way in which I could get lumber to build with, I became responsible for a part of the expenses of building a mill. If they throw us out of the school, we shall have the lumber on our hands. You may censure me for going on with too much haste. I thought every thing was fixed as firmly as it could be if the Contract had the signature of the president and all his Cabinet affixed to it. Mr Watrous told me he was acting under definite and positive instructions, and there could be no failure. Governor Ramsey told me that the contract had his approbation. But he neglected to write on the instrument "approved", when he forwarded it to Washington, and that has caused this trouble. Why it was necessary for the Commissioner of Indian Affairs kept it two months and a half without expressing his disapprobation of it, I leave for him to explain. I feel that we have been dealt with unjustly in this case.

I have often felt that if possible, I would withdraw at once from this place, and "give up the ship." But we have gone too far for that. It is possible the result may not be so bad as I sometimes fear. I do not know exactly how much interference they wish to have with the school. To quit now would leave an unfavorable impression as to our firmness and missionary character. The experiment has not been fully made, whether or not there is work enough for us to do here to warrant the support of a station. I know of no place which needs a powerful moral influence exerted upon it, more than this. If we were to give up we know where to go. There is work to be done here. The question has often occurred to me, Why stay and spend any more money on uncertainties? Why attempt to hold on, when only difficulties and perplexities are before us? These suggestions may indicate a want of confidence in God, and a dread to meet responsibilities and self denial; but they are certainly worthy of some consideration. It is our duty to convey the gospel to every creature, and to those among the rest. In this thought I find comfort. If there was nothing to be done without the school, it might be a question whether we had better stay till spring.

I have recieved $1.500 from Mr Watrous out of the school fund and have expended a considerable part of it for the school. If they break up our contract, and refuse to compromise the matter, I do not see how they can recover it of us. I shall hold on to it till this business is settled in some way.

I shall be obliged to send more drafts than I anticipated, though I will work all I am able with my own hands and will try to manage everything as economically as possible. We have brought more things from Lapointe than we should have brought, except in anticipation of opening the school, and sent to Boston for more than we shall need for our families as we now are. All this has created expense. Every thing is very expensive here, especially provisions. It cost us considerable more to move our families than I anticipated. I had expected to receive some salary for my services as superintendent, but have had to work for nothing so far. I have been obliged to make several journeys to attend to our business. You may think I deserve censure for mismanagement, but I have the consciousness of having tried to do the best I could.

You may perhaps expect me to say something respecting our present agent. My acquaintance with him is yet too slight to warrant a confident opinion. But I fear he does not sympathize very deeply in the religious and moral improvement of the Indians. My health is not good, though I am as well as I have been at any time for the last three or four months. I fear I shall break down under this constant pressure of labors and trials. I had no idea what it would cost me when I undertook it. We may be glad to get out of it. We cannot go far without more help.

I hope you will keep us fully informed of your views and give us your counsel.

Very truly yours,
S. Hall.

P.S. I have heard nothing from Gov. Gorman since I last wrote.

Please tell Mr. Hill that I have received his letter of July 25th. The goods which he sent us have all arrived safe & in good order. I sign a draft to-day Aug 30th in favor of Borup & Oakes for $200.

Rev. S. Hall
Crow Wing Aug. 29/53

Recd. Sep 22/53

Ackd Oct 28.

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
Sept. 13th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Aug. 16 was received several days ago. I thank you and the Prudential Committee for your sympathy with us in our trials. To me they have been, and are yet, very severe. Events are under the control of Providence. I know not for what purpose God has sent us here. But I feel no consciousness of having run without being sent. To me the path of duty looked plain. And whatever may be the result of our coming, I am sure *I* should never have been satisfied without making an *effort* to do something more for these Indians. If all fails, we have only to say, the will of the Lord be done, though it is a sad reflection that the Indians must be abandoned.

I have heard nothing yet from Washington nor from Governor Gorman. Of course our business, so far as the school matter is concerned, stands still. It is reported here that persons are at work to break up the arrangement entirely, and throw us out. If this is the design of the agent, it is not as he talks to me. I have not however much confidence in those now in power here. I fear they have not at heart the improvement of the Indians. I fear we shall meet with considerable pecuniary loss by this interferance. But it may come out better than my fears. We shall be obliged to expend more for quarters to winter in than we should have done if they had let us alone. But I see no way but to hold on for the present.

I hope you will advise us what to do, if you know. We hold meetings on the Sabbath regularly, which are attended by a few. There is much immorality here even among those who know their duty.

Yours truly
S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall
Crow Wing Sep 13/53
Recd. Sep 28/53
Ans. Oct 28

Crow-wing Min. Ter.
Oct. 11th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letters of Aug. 25 and Sept. 16th have been received. I thank you and the Prud. Committee for your kind sympathy with me in the trials and perplexities I have been called to pass through for some months past. They have been severe to us all, but I cannot but hope they will all work for good in the end, both to us and to the ~~general~~ cause we came here professedly to promote. I am happy to be informed by your letter that the matter relative to the school is likely to be settled between you and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs at Washington. Here is where it ought to have gone in the first place. The officers of the Government placed here, are not the men to deal with on this subject, if I judge rightly. As to the amendments proposed by Governor Gorman, I need not say much here. As to the Government indemnifying the Board for loss in case the school should be broken up by the removal of the Indians from this place during the time of their having the school, I regard that stipulation in the contract of no importance at all; for I do not think it probable they will be removed from these lands during the next seven years, and if they should be, we shall not probably have much property here which we could not remove or dispose of. The important one is that which requires the contract to be renewed from year to year. I do not think the school will prosper if it should go into operation on this condition. It would afford us an opportunity however to get out of it, if you accept it. I do not wish to be bound to the school for seven years, with no place to get out at. For I feel not very confident it will succeed. The Indians here are very wild, and I fear are not much disposed to improve. But I do not wish to have the contract given up at present. I would rather go on and put up the buildings and see what ~~what~~ developments will be made for some months to come.

But suppose you should refuse to accept the amendments, and the Department refuse you the school on the original contract, how are we to settle with them? Are the parties bound to accept what has been done? Must they take my vouchers at Washington for for the money I have disbursed? Can I claim my salary? Is the bond good for any thing, if they annul the contract? And how can they get back any thing advanced? Are we not justly entitled to damages? for in consequence of this interference, we have been put to much delay and inconvenience, and much expense which we should not otherwise have incurred.

But I suppose you intend to go on at all events, whether they insist on the adoption of all the amendments or not. I think this is best. I shall therefore take the responsibility of going forward in preparation for building etc. at least so far as to procure what lumber I can this fall. The mill heretofore referred to in my letters is running. We must get back the money we have expended upon it by taking lumber made from it. We had better therefore keep it running while we can have it, though we are obliged to supply it with logs and saw them at our expense. I have been obliged to expend more on the mill than I anticipated in order to put it into operation. But lumber will be salable in this region, if it should not be wanted for the buildings as originally contemplated. But to do this I shall be obliged to hire more help and increase our expenses for the time being. You may perhaps think our expenses are more than they ought to be, but I cannot get along without much expense, unless we give up every thing and provide no winter quarters for our families. We have now however the prospect of making provision in this respect, so that we can get along tolerably well.

The Indians are now assembling here for payment which will probably take place in the course of a month. We need a school house and place of worship very much. With our present facilities for operating we cannot do much. But we will look for something better in future. Providence gives us all health at present. I am able to perform more labor now, than during the warm season.

We hold religious services regularly on the Sabbath, though not a large number attend them.

As to an estimate of expenses for the next year, I cannot say much now, though you may expect it. Our affairs are in such a condition as to render it difficult to form any opinion of what will be needed. It will cost more here to support us, than was necessary at Lapointe. On this subject I will write more definitely before long. I write you to-day in much haste. We hope to hear from you again soon.

Yours truly,
S. Hall

P.S. With this I send you an extract from a letter which I recently received from Mr. Watrous then at Washington.

Rev. S. Hall

Crowwing Oct. 11/53

Recd. Oct. 25/53

Ackd Oct 28.

Crow wing Min Ter.
Nov. 15th 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of Sept. 16th came to hand some weeks ago. I have waited with anxious solicitude for another informing me of the decision of the Indian Department respecting the schol. Our situation is very perplexing, and has been for months past. I know not what to do. Could we have stopped short at the time we were first informed of the objections to the contract, till a decision was made, it would have been desirable. But we had gone too far to stop then. We had removed here, and must have a shelter from the severe cold of our northern winters. A house which I had bought, and which would have sheltered one of our families was claimed by the Indian agent as the property of the Government, and I was obliged to relinquish it, or have a quarrel, which I thought best to avoid in our circumstances. Henry Blatchford lived in an Indian lodge till October before we could get a house completed for him. We have built for him a small house of hewed logs with a shingled roof containg but a single room. We have put additions to each end of the small log house which we erected last spring, and which I originally intended for a shop and storage house. This building with its additions is to be the shelter of my family and Mr Pulsifer's for the winter. The floor of the main building is of logs hewed and jointed on the edges with an axe. A room joined to each end has a board floor. We have no school house; but I hope to obtain a room in a log building on the Indian farm and that we shall commence a small school soon.

I have had some reference in the buildings which I have erected this fall to the future, and have laid out some more expense than I should, had I not supposed, as indicated by your letter, that we should go forward. I have taken vouchers for the labor performed on the buildings except that done on the house for Henry Blatchford, hoping that things may get straightened after a while, and we have our rights.

Our farming business has not proved profitable. The birds and cattle and Indians have taken a considerable share of what we might otherwise have realized. We lost many of our turnips by the cold weather beginning unusually early. The fences on the Indian farm proved altogether insufficient to protect the crops. Much was destroyed by the cattle and more by the frost. Could we have secured all we raised, or might have raised, we had not sufficient storage to have protected it. But we have saved something.

The interference with the contract, and the delays and derangement of plans consequent upon it, has been the occasion of much loss to us. I have been obliged to engage in much manual labor myself to an extent which, with my cares and responsibilities, has well nigh exhausted my powers of both body and mind. I feel nearly prostrated. We have had to do every thing at the greatest disadvantage. The consequence is, that we have had to incur much larger expenses than I anticipated. I have had to give drafts to so large an amount that perhaps I shall be censured. But to stop and stand still we could not, nor could we go back. In the midst of my perplexities, I have done what, in my judgment seemed best. And where these perplexities will end I can not tell.

Now as to the future. If we are to go on with the school we ought to know it at once. Lumber must be had for the buildings and materials for fencing the farm. If logs are to be drawn to the mill, they should be got out in the early part of the winter. The mill is heavily indebted to us. We have no way to get paid but by using it to saw lumber. If the school buildings are to be erected by us, the lumber will be wanted for that purpose. If not, shall we incur any more expense with the hope of getting something by the sale of lumber? or shall we give up the whole as a total loss? What is it best to do? I do not know what to do. We have got about 20.000 feet of lumber from the mill since it began to saw. But we had to furnish the logs at the mill and saw them at our own expense. We must get paid slowly in this way. We cannot now build before spring. And unless preparation is made for procuring lumber, in the early part of the winter, we shall be in no condition to go on even then. Materials for fencing must also be drawn during the winter, or we can have no farm another season. They cannot be procured after the winter is past. I have no means to procure them. It is important therefore, that we have an answer from Washington immediately. To keep us along in that way is the highest injustice. If they do not give us the means to go on, we had better quit altogether. The impression on the minds of the Indians by our lingering in this way is decidedly bad. Our School ought to be in operation now. But we cannot move at all. And unless we have instruction and means to go forward soon, it will not be in operation for a year to come.

But what are our prospects, if we are allowed to go on and establish a school? I fear not very fair. Things look very dark here. The Indians have but little desire to improve. They can obtain any quantities of Whiskey which they can pay for. Little or no effort is made on the part of the officers of Government to suppress the traffick on this frontier. What consistency is there in making the attempt, when agents and employees are known to use it habitually and often to excess. Payment is just closing. Scenes of drunkenness beyond a parallel have just been witnessed here. Several cases of stabbing have occurred, in one or two cases resulting in death. Few are disposed to listen to our preaching. The prospect for the~~m~~ Indians looks dark. I sometimes think God has no work here for us to do. But this may be unbelief. I wish to wait for a time and watch further the indications of his providence.

You will expect us to send an estimate of our expenses for the year to come. Such are our circumstances that I cannot form an estimate of them. The most I can say is, that it will cost one quarter or one third more to support us here, than it did at Lapointe. Till we know what we are to do, we cannot tell how much funds will be required. I am obliged therefore to leave this subject to be settled at a future time

I hope to hear from you soon and to receive such instructions how to proceed as your wisdom shall dictate.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

Crowwing Nov. 15/53

Recd. Dec. 6/53

Ansd " 7

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
137 Dec. 31st 1853.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Your letter of Oct. 28 has been on hand some time. It refreshes our spirits in our disappointments and trials to be assured of your sympathy at Boston. We feel much the need of it, for we have much ~~much~~ here calculated to depress us. My disappointment in relation to our affairs here has occasioned me much unhappiness. I know you will ask if all these things have not occurred under the providence of God? and are you right to allow yourself to be unhappy in consequence of them. I know it is so. I ought to rejoice that God reigns, and I think I do. But I was not prepared for such trials as these. I had not anticipated them. I did not anticipate that the officers of the Government would have taken the course they have. I cannot imagine why we have no answer from the Indian Department. Why do they keep here in suspense from month to month? Why the delay? Is there no efficiency in the Indian Department? Or are our affairs of so little consequence that they are not worth noticing? I cannot but think they do us great injustice. By neglecting us in this way, they throw many obstacles in our ~~way~~ path and subject us to much perplexity and unnecessary expense. I see no reason why they could not decide the question whether we are to go on with the school, or not, in one week, as well, as to take one year for it. If we are to erect buildings, fence a farm, and open a school we ought to know it now. We ought to have this winter for collecting the materials for buildings and fences. If they do not intend to carry out the plans of their predecessors and establish a school here, or if they wish so to modify the contract, ~~that~~ the school is not worth having, I wish they would tell us so, that we may know what to do.

I have read your remarks in your letter respecting the obligations of the Churches to the Indians with much interest. I have long had an impression that these obligations were not felt as deeply as they ought to be. I think with you, that they are peculiar. The Indians lie at the door of these Churches, and who will care for them if they do not? It is true, that there are many obstacles in the way to reclaiming them from their ignorance, degradation and paganism. It is a self-denying and thankless work to labor among them for this end. Often ~~small~~ success attend these efforts, though long continued and faithful. They do not appreciate the motives and labors of those who go to reside among them, only to do them good. It is hard to convince them that the missionary who comes among them is disinterested in making his home ~~among~~ with them. and when they find his object is not to feed and clothe them and afford them the means of indulging in habits of idleness and sensuality; but to impart to them the knowledge of God, and the way of Salvation, and to teach them useful knowledge and to become industrious, they turn away from him with indifference. Few are inclined to profit from his efforts. They have little sympathy with him. But I think the Committee are right to do what they can to save them, though at a greater outlay of ~~expense~~ money and labor than they would feel warranted to incur for any other portion of the heathen world of no greater promise. I have often felt discouraged while laboring among them, to see so small results, and should long ago have left the field, had I not felt that there was a fearful responsibility to be incurred in abandoning them, so long as there was yet hope for them, unless the indications of Providence rendered my duty plain to leave them. I have often felt that if they must ~~at~~ eventually perish, and their name be blotted out of remembrance, it must not be, till the gospel which is able to save them, has been offered to them, and they have rejected it.

I have also read your paper on the preservation of the Indians, ~~presented to~~ read before the Board at their late meeting, & am glad to hear you say that the presentation of the Indians to the Board, this year and last, had awakened a much deeper interest in their behalf, than was felt before. I hope it will lead to more prayer and more effort for their conversion to Christ. The question, what is to become of them is one of fearful interest. Many think they are a doomed race and must eventually become extinct. There are many circumstances in their past history and present condition, particularly of many tribes, which render it possible that it may be so. But I think if the gospel is given to them, and if they embrace Christianity it will not be so. That will preserve them. But I believe, that if they will not serve God nor receive his word, he will destroy them. Not perhaps by pestilence and famine, or by some other calamity which may sweep them off by thousands in a day; but by giving them up to the unrestrained indulgence of their own heart's lusts, till they shall gradually waste away under the influences which are inherent among them, and which they will imbibe from that depraved class of civilized people with whom they will ever come most in contact. There is a remedy in pure Christianity for their depravity and degradation. If it can be made to bear upon them, it will elevate them morally and intellectually, and socially as it every other people who come under its influence. But when I read the course of God's providence toward the Indians in their past history and present condition, I cannot but conclude that he has a great controversy with them. His judgments have been upon them. They are yet upon many of them, though many from time to time have embraced the gospel and are now rejoicing in glory, or in a hope of immortality, while they yet remain in the flesh. But many appear to me to be given up to a blinded and darkened heart, and to be under the entire control of the basest and most degraded desires and passions of the soul. They are blind to their own best interests. They do not discern when good cometh. They do not appreciate the good their best friends and benefactors do for them. Indulgence of their depraved desires is the highest good they crave.

As to these Indians, their prospects in many respects are dark. That they will be preserved for a hundred years to come, retaining a distinct nationality, or having any thing like a civil organization among them, I think there is reason to doubt. Some of the reasons which induce me to entertain this opinion are the following. They are widely scattered over a vast territory. Throughout the tribe they are divided into small bands, each with its own chiefs. These bands are nearly as independent of each other, as if they were independent tribes. They acknowledge no one common chief over the whole, and it would be difficult for any one person to unite the whole tribe under him. They are not likely to be concentrated or brought together into a compact body. The nature of their country seems to forbid this. There are but small tracts of land in the country now left them, which are valuable for agricultural purposes. The means of subsistence for them are most easily obtained by their scattering over large territories. Game is becoming more scarce than formerly. The resources of the country which they now own, are hardly more than sufficient for the subsistence of those now residing in it, if they retain their present mode of life Hence these object to others moving on to the lands which they occupy. The Indians too are much attached to the places where they have long resided, & are very reluctant to leave them. Jealousies exist between those residing in different sections of country, which makes them more reluctant to concentrate, and form one compact community. They are greatly deficient in stability of character and enterprise. "Unstable as water" may be written upon them. They lack also independence of mind. And hence they are not likely to undertake any extensive plans for their own improvement. And hence too, they can be easily induced to sell their lands, or any thing else they have, however necessary to their improvement and prosperity when solicited by their superiors, especially if backed by large presents. They have not forethought and enterprise enough to adopt any measures for the elevation of their nation. And then the Government would patronize schools among them, they ~~would~~ rather the money would be given them to purchase ~~buy~~ the means of gratifying their propensities to indolence and indulgence. Nor are they disposed to improve under the aid which missionary societies would willingly afford them. The great majority of them manifest no interest in the education of their children. Nor are they any more disposed to listen to the religious instructions of the missionary. They are strongly attached to the ways of their fathers, and are not inclined, as a body, to depart from them. This state of things may not always continue. But if there is ever a change, it will be slow and gradual, affecting only small portions of them at one time. Intermarriages between them and the whites are becoming frequent among portions of the tribe. They have little aversion to forming such alliances. They are much more frequent now than they were twenty years ago, owing doubtless to the increased intercourse they have with the whites. They will increase more, as their intercourse with white people increases. This mixing the two races is multiplying the number of mixed bloods very rapidly. The present relations of these Indians to our Government is destined to have, directly and indirectly, a powerful influence upon their future destiny. They receive annuities. They have money. This excites the cupidity of many who for purposes of gain, are ready at all times, ~~are ready~~ to adopt any practices or throw themselves into any society, when there is hope of obtaining money. Hence a large number of gamblers and petty traders gather around the spots where these annuities are paid. They are usually persons of very little character, and of bad morals. The lumbering and other kinds of business which is constantly increasing on this border country, is bring them in contack with the whites. Many of these classes of men marry with Indian women, or cohabit with them without any legal form of marriage. Not all the men however who form matrimonial connections are of this character. Some are respectable and intelligent, and bring up their families respecably. The mixed blood population seems to me to bid fair to become more numerous, after a few generations more, than that of pure Indian. The mixed bloods generally consider themselves as citizens of the United States, and take no part with the Indians in their political councils. But still they are very closely connected with their Indian relatives, and probably the latter will never be more disposed to separate from their children and grand children than they are now.

From these consideration, I think the Ojibwas, instead of concentrating and becoming united under any form of civil polity of their own adoption, or receding before our advancing population, will rather keep their ground and mingle in with them. Many of them will eventually become citizens. Some will improve, and become possessed of property. Others will destroy themselves by their own vices. They will have less aversion to becoming subject to our laws, than to removing to a distant and poor country, where they are not wanted by those now inhabiting it. This remark particularly applies to those portions of them which have sold their lands. By the present laws of the States and territories where they reside, they can easily become citizens, and enjoy all the immunities and privileges of citizens, by adopting the forms and customs of civilized life. This some of them who were heathens twenty years ago are now disposed to do. Great changes have taken place among portions of the tribe within the last twenty five years. Greater changes still will be seen before the expiration of another equal period. There are much more powerful influences at work now to change their character and condition, than there were when I first entered their country.

Nor do I see any particular objection to encouraging the Indians to remain on those portions of the country which the different bands respectively have long occupied. Indeed from my observations during the last few months, I am inclined to think that it is better for those on the ceded territory to remain where they are, than to remove here, particularly those in the region of Lake Superior. There is room enough for them and all the white population which will settle there for many years to come. They are not, and probably will not, be more exposed to the destruction influences of the liquor traffic there than here; nor to other bad influences arising from their intercourse with the whites. There is more incouragement to industry there than here. They have not enterprize and capital enough to open and cultivate a farm for themselves. But many will work if they can find an employer. As business increases they will find employment enough, if they are disposed to be industrious. They can obtain the means of subsistence more easily there than here. Foreign provisions and clothing are less expensive there. Fish is abundant in the great lake. The Indians are fishermen. When the lake is opened to free navigation through a canal at its outlet, which is now in course of construction, they will find a ready market for all the fish they will have to spare.

I have heretofore been inclined to think the Indians had better remove from the ceded lands, and concentrate on the west side of the Mississippi, if the Government would protect them from the cufidity of the whiskey dealer, and aid them effectually in procuring the means of subsistence, by opening farms for them, aiding them in ~~agriculture~~ the cultivation of them, and encouraging them to adopt a more settled mode of life. But from what I have seen since I have been here, I have little hope of their prospering under any system of patronage the Government will be likely to adopt. They will not be kept from the means of intoxication. All the Government will do to help them to the means of living will amount to but little, except their annuities in clothing and money. And these many of them will expend for *firewater*. I cannot conscientiously ask an Indian from the lake to remove to this region. The country is miserably poor. Very small portions of it are fit for cultivation. It is generally covered with small lakes, swamps, and pine and oak barrens. The soil is light sand and gravel. There is a spot at this place of a few hundred acres, which will produce tolerable well for a few seasons. But the soil is not strong and a few continued crops will exhaust it. Doubtless there are other small tracts which would produce tolerable well. But they are comparatively few & widely separated. I have thought we had better encourage the Indians to remove from the ceded lands, because I supposed it was the settled policy of our Government to remove them, and that they would constantly annoy them and keep them in an unsettled state, if they did not. I have never thought that there was any neceſsity for removing them at present. As for protection here, I do not think they will have any better here, than than they now have under the State laws. Things can hardly be worse than they are here at present, By going a few miles below here the Indians can obtain as much whiskey as they can find means to pay for. It is true that it is not allowed by the laws of Congreſs to be brought into the Indian country. But it is brought here, and scattered through the whole length and breadth of it. It is brought by the Indians themselves in bottles and jugs, and Kegs. Vast quantities of it are consumed by them. It is brought here by others, and drank here, and drank abundantly. I do not say that white men have sold it here to Indians; for I do not Know certainly that it is so. But white men help Indians to it, off the Indian lands if they do not on them. It is reported that it is sold to Indians even at the seat of the agency. I have not the means of proving these reports to be true. But I have little doubt that it is so. There are dealers in this article who live on the borders of the Indian territory who get their living by furnishing it to Indians. They encourage the Indians to go there after it. And they do go, and give the last thing of any value they have for it. And they come from places far distant to obtain it. And they carry it eight or ten days travel to their friends. The traffic is increasing from year to year. Never before, have the Indians obtained so much as during the past season. While they were assembled here for payment last fall, I think there was no day when there were not more or less drunken ones in the camp. After they received their money, there was a time when there were scarcely any sober ones in the camp. The consequence of these excesses was quarrels, bruises, stabbing and murder. Several were severely stabbed and cut with knives. One was killed. I heard the agent express the opinion that one third of the money which the Indians received at payment was expended by them for whiskey. Some of the principal traders confirmed this opinion.

You will ask whether no efforts are made by Government officials to put a stop to this traffic. Very few, so far as I know. If any efforts have been made they have been without effect. And from what I have seen, I feel satisfied that nothing effectual will be done by those now in power. Perhaps they could not do much to check it, if they should try. To encourage the Indians to remove here, therefore, would be to expose them to greater temptations, than they have where they are now.

Perhaps the present administration will pursue a different policy towards these Indians from that of those preceding. You are aware, I presume, that the Lake Indians received their annuities at Lapointe last fall, and that all shared in them, whether residing on ceded territory or elsewhere. For two years past, those who refused to remove from the ceded territory were refused their annuities. Nothing has this year be said to them about removing, so far as I have heard. Perhaps the subject will for the present rest where it is. I am very sure that not many of them will remove here, however much the Government may desire it. The country is so different here from that they have been accustomed to live in, that they would be discontented and would not stay here.

I am inclined to the opinion that this removal business is all a political affair brought about through the influence of persons interested in the growth and prosperity of this territory. They desire to get the Indians here, and to get the payments here, because it bring more business and money into the territory. But for the same reason interested persons desire the Indians of the lake region to remain and be paid there. As a matter of justice, I think they ought to share in the annuities, whether they remove or not. The fact of their being paid this year on the lake, encourages them to expect they will be in future. This will operate against getting them removed at present, even if the Government should make another attempt to remove them.

It may be to accomplish another end, that the Indians of the lake were paid at Lapointe this year. Another treaty with the Indians for lands is demanded. There are supposed to be valuable mineral lands lying around the upper end of Lake

Superior. They must be bought. The Company which have undertaken to construct the Ship Canal by the Saut Ste. Marie, have located nearly all the mineral lands on the lake, lying in Michigan. More must be bought up. Probably a proposition will be made to the Ojibwas to sell all their lands east of the Mississippi, during the next summer. It may be to conciliate their feelings and prepare the way for obtaining their lands, that their payment was restored to them. The Indians on the lake received nearly twice the amount to each person, that those of the Mississippi did. But then they received nothing last year.

Perhaps I ought not to ask your indulgence further at the present time, my letter already being very long. But there are some other topics which I had designed to introduce into this communication, and ~~with~~ which bear upon the question of our remaining here. I think you ought to be in possession of all the facts bearing upon this question, that you may act understandingly in ~~that~~ case. I will speak plainly both of persons and things, but will try to make a _true_ representation, & leave the facts to make their own impression with you.

I will begin with the agent. He is a man of considerable natural abilities. But I should judge that his education has been neglected. He employs a clerk to do the business of his office, that is, to do most of the writing and keep the accounts. I judge that he does this, not because of the amount of the business to be done, but because he feels himself incompetent to do it himself.

He appears however to be a person of considerable observation, and is practically acquainted with various kinds of business, such as farming in its various branches, building mills, etc. What ideas he entertains of religion, I do not know. But practically he keeps aloof from it in every shape. He has never attended any of our religious services, except on one funeral occasion when the service was held at his house by the request of a person who resided with him, who lost his wife. Afterwards this same man died at his house. He sent the body off to Fort Ripley to be buried, but held no religious service at his house, nor did any more notice seem to be taken of the event, than if one of his cattle had died. He is said to be profane. He openly disregards the Sabbath. I have known him to send his own son with a team from home on the Sabbath when there was no shadow of necessity for it. I do not know that he kept his office open for business on the Sabbath during payment. He habitually uses intoxicating liquors. It is reported that he uses them sometimes to excess, so as to become *partially* intoxicated at least. He is so far from being a temperance man, that it is believed that he uses his influence, which, in this particular, is not small here, to promote the habit of drinking in others. I do not know that he is a gambler, but I am sure he spends much time in playing games of chances, and I have heard that he has played for a small stake. All the influence of his example is irreligious. He keeps around him here a set of rowdies of like

14

character and habits with himself. It is a matter of no surprise to me that he does not wish to have the School in the charge of missionaries, for it is certain that they will report little good of him. He is very tenacious of his prerogatives, sometimes dictatorial and morose towards those under him, though generally perhaps rather affable and mild towards those for whom he has no dislike. He is such a man as I should not like to be under.

Of the employees, some nine or ten in number, only one is an avowed temperance man. One other is strictly temperate. Some others do not perhaps use intoxicating drinks every day, but are reported to have been seen intoxicated occasionally. The interpreter has been known to be drunk frequently. One of the mechanics is a very hard drinker, and is said to be intoxicated, or partially so, a large part of the time. He has two sons who are also often drunk.

Of the two traders now residing here I cannot speak much more encouragingly. Whether they drink ardent spirits to excess, or not I cannot say. But that they have it, and ~~furnish~~ it to others, is, I suppose, an undeniable fact. I do not know that they sell it to Indians, or give it to them. And I do not know that they bring it here to sell to anybody, but I have a strong suspicions that they do. One of these men is living with an Indian woman to whom he was never been married. The other has formerly lived with one in the same manner, by whom he has had one or two children. He has now abandoned her and, I suppose, her children with her.

These things are no secret. They are carried on under the eye of the agent, and yet these men are permitted to hold their places. They are such persons probably as he would soonest choose as associates. I have been told by persons on whose word I could rely, that in one instance he gave one of the employees permission, (written as I understood) to bring here a Keg of 12 or 15 Galls. of whiskey at one time. How many others he has given a like permission to, I do not know. But that they do bring it & that too without concealment can hardly be denied.

It appears to me, ~~that~~ at this agency, there is more immorality and iniquity, than can be found in ~~hardly any~~ other community of an equal number of persons. There is a gathering somewhere among the above class of persons several times every week for drinking, gaming, dancing & carousing. Balls or dances are frequent. If the reports which go abroad respecting these gatherings are true, there are frequently scenes acted in them which are too disgraceful to be told of. And yet the agent is one of the principle promoters and actors, it is said. But I have said enough. You can judge something of the morals of the place, and of the kind of agent the Government have sent here to take care of the interests of the Indians. The influence of one such a man for agent, will do more injury in such a community as this, than five devoted missionaries can do good, though he may not directly oppose them in their labors. And I ask what could such an officer do towards restraining the Indians from drinking and other immoralities, if he were disposed to make efforts and to execute the laws? The Indians have too much shrewdness not to see the inconsistency between his own practices and his demands on them to refrain from the like. He can have but little influence over them for their moral improvement. Nor does such a man wish them to improve.

But I must dismiss this subject and say a word respecting the management of the Indian Farm. These Indians have a fund or appropriation of one thousand dolllars a year for agricultural purposes. This money is expended, in maintaining a farm at this place. Besides the expenditure of this money ~~expenses~~ on this farm, all the farmers furnished to the Indians under the treaty of 1842 have been called to this place. This is the only farm the Government now assist the Indians to cultivate, with the exception of a little aid afforded them at Mille Lac and Gull Lake. No farmer resides at either of these latter places now. A farm of some 250 acres has been broken and surrounded by a fence. The Indians planted some 40 or 50 acres of it last spring. Some part of their crops were tolerably good last fall. Some did not amount to much, partly from neglect. On the whole their harvest was light. A large piece was sowed with turnips designed expressly for the Indians. But the largest part of the farm was cultivated by the employees. It was seeded with corn, potatoes, beans, oats and turnips.

The corn was light. The oats were fair; and the potatoes and turnips grew well; but few of them, however, were harvested, except what the Indians stole from the field. From a thousand to fifteen hundred bushels of the potatoes froze up before digging, and were lost. Some 300 bushels, out of as many thousands of the turnips, were gathered. The rest froze up or were distroyed by the cattle. The fences were insufficient to protect the fields and the crop was much injured the latter part of the season, by the cattle breaking in.

Now you will ask, What is done with the produce of this farm? Does it go to the Indians? This year certainly, they get but a small amount of it, except what they took from the field without permission. That was principally turnips. And last year, I am informed, they got but little. They do not get even seed from it to seed their own gardens. It goes to feed the teams required to carry on the farm, to the support of the agent's family, to keep his cows, (or rather the Indians, for they are bought with their money, but he has the use of them), to fatten his hogs, if reports are true. In such ways it is nearly all consumed, while the Indians really derive but little profit from it. In my opinion, the farming here is most miserably managed. Their agricultural fund is as yet of very little value to them, except to furnish a few of them with a small spot each of ground plowed and fenced for a garden. They themselves throw down the fences and destroy them. From the specimens which I have seen of Government farming for Indians, I have come to the conclusion that they have very little to hope for in this direction. Those employed in cultivating ~~these~~ farms, and those employed to oversee their cultivation, seem to me to be more interested to profit themselves by them, than to make them profitable to the Indians. Managed as things have been ~~since I have been~~ since I have been here, I cannot encourage the Indians to put much confidence on such aid from their Great Father.

I fear there is not much to be hoped for in the future. The men who will be appointed to fill the offices of agents as Superintendants will generally be office-seeking and money making politicians, who will care but little for the improvement of the Indians. Their object will be to make capital out of their office. And besides this, these offices will be constantly changing hands, so that there will be no one system of operations pursued long enough to accomplish any thing. All will be fluctuation and change. The consequence of this liability to change of officers, is, that no agent will look forward in his operation to the future, but ~~will~~ do all with a view to answer a present purpose.

What then are our prospects here? I feel that they are extremely discouraging.

1 This place is not regarded by any of the Indians a

their home. It has never been their camping ground previously to the establishment of the farm and agency here. These have drawn some families here to reside a part of the year, but none of them regard this place as their home. There are many passing and visiting the place during the year, but most make but a short stay. Consequently we have no permanent Indian community to operate upon. This I expected before I came here.

2 Those who do reside here most are generally the least enterprising of the Indians. They stay about here in the hope of obtaining a scanty subsistence without laboring for it, through favors from the agent and obtaining something from the farm. They are by no means a hopeful class of Indians to operate upon.

3. Nothing can be depended upon as to the policy of the Government towards these Indians. Every thing seems to be unsettled and fluctuating. This policy will probably change with every change of officers. I should not be surprised if the farm and agency, and every thing here should be broken up and removed within two years. There is talk that the agency will be put somewhere else.

4 There is a mission station at Gull Lake, some nine or ten miles from this place. It is in the hands of the high church episcopalians. They are expending considerable large sums there in maintaining a school and other operations. Almost all who reside here most, and plant gardens here belong

to that band. That mission may interfere with our obtaining children. I had anticipated that some Indians from the ceded territory would remove here and become settled, and that we should obtain some children from about Lapointe. But I have now abandoned this hope. Yet it is not impossible that a considerable number of full and mixed blood children might be gathered into a school here.

5 The Indians here are very little disposed to improve. They care nothing for schools, and generally have not much sympathy with missionaries. I suppose very few of them would be willing to put their children under our care, and leave them to remain long enough at school to be permanently benefitted.

6 There are many Indians in this region disposed to mischief. Property, unless well guarded, is not safe among them. We have had three animals the past season wounded by being shot. One died of the wound; another would have died, had we not discovered it in season to save the meat by butchering it. A fourth had a severe cut with an axe. Several others have had their cattle injured or killed by being shot by the Indians. They are thieves beyond any other Indians I have ever lived among.

7 Our failing to start the school this season has operated unfavorably for us. We told the Indians, that our object in coming here was to establish a school for their benefit, in which their children might be ~~benefitted~~ educated. But we are remaining here month after month doing nothing to

redeem our promise. We could do nothing to make a favorable impression upon them, because we had no means to work with. I consider that our prospects are not near as promising now, as they were last spring. We have made no favorable impression upon them.

I will say in addition to these things, that we are actually accomplishing very little. It is now but seldom that we see an Indian at our meetings. There are but a few families within our reach. The few white people who reside here, are not disposed to attend religious meetings, with only a few exceptions. We hold our services on the Sabbath for our own benefit, though few are disposed to join us.

We are all disheartend. Henry Blatchford has resolved to leave us in the Spring as early ~~in the spring~~ as the streams open, and return to Lapointe. This is another disappointment to me. If he leaves us, we shall not have force enough left to do much, even if we try to go on. Unless it is decided soon that we are to have the school, and we are furnished with funds, we shall have no land fenced to cultivate next season. Unless we can raise vegetables, and some grains, for our use, we ought not to think of remaining here ~~another year~~ and especially to think of maintaining a boarding school.

Do you ask what I would advise to do? I would say, that unless we can have the school, we have not encouragement enough to warrant our trying to maintain a mission station here. If we had not become entangled with the school, I should wish, as things now are here, to have nothing to do with it. I think it better to sacrifice what we have expended, than to go on and expend considerable sums more, and then in the end fail of success, as it seems to me almost certain we shall. If we have a school we must have more help, and there will be greater expenses. But we have got involved in this school matter. If we throw up the contract, the Government will hold us for the money which has been turned over to us, and which has, in considerable part, been expended. If they break up the arrangement, then I do not see that we are held by our bond, and they will be obliged to accept what has been done. If they insist on such a modification of the contract as takes the management of the school, or of the establishment, out of our hands, I think we had better get rid of it as soon as we can. I know I cannot long stay here, if I must be under the dictation of such a man as now is agent. And I am certain that he intends to have the control of the school establishment, so far as to say how things shall be managed.

I contracted with a person soon after the contract for the school was made, to break land for the farm. He broke the land last summer. But I could not fulfil my part of the contract to pay him, as the agent withheld the funds. I hope he will not lose it. It will ruin him if he does. If we can get permission to go on till we can resign, if that is desirable, and can get possession of the funds, I can make matters straight.

I have endeavoured to give you a fair and true representation of matters as they exist here. If the Committee judge it duty to go forward, be it so. I may err in my oppinion as to success. Things have not transpired as I had anticipated they would when I advised to commence here. The experiment may prove more successful than I expect, if tried further. Had the former agent continued in office, I think things would have worn quite a different aspect from that they present now. But still I know all things are in the hands of God, and that he can bring light out of darkness. I think we could have exerted more influence for the good of the Indians, had we remained at Lapoint, than we have, or shall exert here, and if there was not enough there to be done, to warrant our staying there, there certainly is not here.

I had expected to carry on our operations here with funds furnished by the Government. But they embarrass us and subject us to very heavy expenses, I think very unnecessarily. I have lost all confidence in them, and for the future wish to have as little to do with them, in conducting our missionary operations as I can. I do not believe any schemes for the improvement of the Indians will prosper under their management.

But you may say my judgment is biased. Perhaps so. I have had many things to try me it is true. But I have endeavoured to learn wisdom from them. You may say I do not trust in God. I have no confidence in man. If we are to exercise our reason in determining our duty, the providences of God seem to be against us, if I read them right. It is true also that our situation here is far from being pleasant. We are on entirely excluded from society. The few who reside here have no sympathy with missionaries. We feel very lonesome. Our quarters are cold and dreary. It does not look like home to us. My health is poor compared with that I formerly enjoyed. These things may influence imperceptibly my judgment.

Shall we then give up at once, and retire? I say No. Hold on till spring and see how things look then. But if there is no change in our prospects by that time, I do not think it duty to lay plans for remaining here in future. If we are ever to have the decision of the Indian Department, they ought to give it before that time.

I am now doing nothing with reference to going forward with our operations. I have no funds to move with, & I dare not expose the Board to further loss. Mr. Pulsifer is keeping a little school. Henry's children, one of mine, several of the Agent's, and sometimes three or four Indian children attend it. Henry and I spend a part of our time in revising the Ojibwa Testament in the hope that the A. B. Soc. will soon publish a new edition of it.

I hope you will excuse this long communication. I have repeated some things which I have said before. But I desire that you be as fully informed in regard to matters here relating to the Indians, as you can be. In our seclusion and our trials, God is yet sparing us from severe sickness. I trust also that in the end he will deliver us from our present perplexties, and make the path of duty plain to us.

Whether there are suggestions in the above communications which may aid you, if you visit Washington I cannot say. I do not feel competent to advise you what plan to pursue to make an impression on the Commissioner.

Should you wish to confer with the delegate from this territory Hon. H. M. Rice, you will find him well acquainted with Indian matters in this territory, both Ojibwa and Dakota. He will be candid, I think, and communicative, and will be ready to aid you in getting our matters adjusted with the Indian Department.

I remain yours truly

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall.

Crow Wing Dec. 31/53

Recd. Jan 24/54

Ackd. Mch 19

1 22
23
24
26

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
Jan. 24th. 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

I recieved your letter of Dec. 7th a few days ago. I have not yet heard anything from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs. I am no less surprised than you at the course pursued with us by the Government, and know not what to make of it.

You may perhaps think me cruel to inflict another letter on you so soon after the long communication which I sent to you but a short time ago. But it seems to me probable that our affairs are approaching a crisis, and in certain contingencies which may arise, I wish for advice and instruction how to act; and in order to give it, you must be informed in detail as to the manner in which our affairs stand.

// In April last, soon after our contract for the school was signed, Mr. Watrous turned over to me $1.500. of the school fund. With this money I immediately commenced operations for carrying out our part of the contract. I purchased three yoke of oxen, two cows and a waggon, expecting then to have a school in operation before this time. I procured also a cooking stove, nails, boards, glass, and other materials for building, erected a log house, and got out some timber for other buildings. At the end of June, the close of the quarter, I had vouchers to cover $730.18. These vouchers I forwarded to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs and have not heard from them since. Before the end of July, when I was informed that the contract was not confirmed, I had expended considerable more. What course to pursue then I did not Know. But something must be done. Winter was approaching and we must provide some Kind of Shelter for ourselves or retire from the place. Governor Gorman told me to go on — and said that in a short time, if we accepted the modifications proposed, means would be furnished, and that there was no need of our withdrawing. I understood from your letter, that the Committee would accept the modifications, if that was the only alternative, and go on, at least till we could find a spot to get out at. I therefore erected some additional small buildings with the school money, to accommodate Mr Pulsifer's family and my own for the time being. I can present vouchers for about $350 which I expended in this way. If I should now be called upon to turn over the property according to the vouchers, there would be probably near $400 remaining for which I should be accountable. I have not however received any thing for my services, and think I have a right to demand my salary according to the contract for the time I have the charge of the business.

I also made a contract with Mr. Alonzo Gates to break land for the school farm. I made this contract as an officer of the Government, and as acting for them. Before we were informed that our contract for the school was not approved, he had broken nearly half the ground. He continued on with his job some weeks longer, though he did not complete the amount he contracted to break. There is due to him probably about $400. The ground has not been accurately measured. I do not consider ourselves bound to pay this, unless the Government permit us to go on, and furnish us the means.

We have the stock on hand, and are keeping at our expense. We have had the use of the cattle to do, our farm work, and the cows have supplied us with milk during the summer and fall. Had I supposed our affairs would have taken the turn they have, I should have tried to dispose of some of the cattle last fall. But in case we were to go on, the team would be indispensable.

In case we withdraw, how shall I settle off with the Government? Shall I present my vouchers and turn over the property? But suppose they refuse the property, and demand that the money be refunded? how in that case shall I do? Are we legally held by our bond, if they demand modifications in the contract which we do not choose to accept? Can they by law collect the money turned over to us, unless they permit us to go on under the original contract? In case they refuse or delay an unreasonable length of time to place the funds at our disposal for carrying out the contract, are we obliged to stay here month after month incurring heavy expenses waiting for an answer. Does not such a delay and the withholding of the funds free us from our obligation? Are we not absolved from our bond by their failing to fulfil their part of the contract? I have asked some of these questions before, and should be glad to receive instructions how to do, in case we should break up and leave the ground.

Is it desirable for us to go on and try to collect a School here, if the Government will allow us? I think it is not, if they demand any material modifications in the original contract, especially any such as will put ~~the~~ control of the business at all into the hands of the agent. I do not wish to be under his particular direction. If the means are not given us to go forward before the end of a month from this time, I should wish to have nothing further to do with the business. And even now if they will accept what we have done, take the property which I have collected here, pay my salary and let us off, I should prefer to quit, as things now appear. It will be difficult to collect ~~Indian~~ the children ~~from~~ of these wild and drinking Indians into a boarding school and to keep them there. We have not the requisite number of laborers to manage such a school as our contract contemplates. More must be procured which will create much expense. Unless we have the influence of the agent in favor of the school & the general improvement of the Indians, we shall not be likely to be successful. It is rumored that there are plans on foot which, if carried out, will materially affect the quiet of the Indians in this neighborhood before long. Every thing appears to be in a state of fluctuation and doubt at present. Unless we have means in our hands soon to procure materials for fencing, it will be out of our power to raise any thing for the subsistence of a school another year. In that case it will be difficult to subsist the school, if we could get it into operation.

There is not enough to be done here to warrant our staying, unless we are connected with a school, and I would ~~not~~ recommend not to expend any more money here, except as the agents of the Government. It is true that we have been at heavy expense to get here, and to proceed as far as we have gone, and much of it will be a total loss, if we break up now. But it seems to me wiser to incur this loss, than to attempt to go forward with the almost certain prospect, that after expending much more, the enterprise must be abandoned. Much of the expenses we have incurred might have been avoided, had not the Government ~~thrown~~ ~~an~~

barrassments in our way.

But besides these, there are considerations of a more personal nature why I should desire a release from my present situation, if it was plainly the will of the Lord. My health is not what it formerly was. It has suffered in consequence of the trials and labors to which I have been subject since I came here. Sometimes I feel as if it would be necessary for me to leave this place for a time and be where I may have less care and anxiety and mingle more with society. We were never so entirely secluded from society since we entered this field as we have been for a few months past, and with our disappointments, & the discouragements before us, we feel lonely and disheartened. Some of the members of my family are suffering in health from our secluded situation, and their exposures from living in cold houses. With prospects no brighter than now appear, I do not think I am called upon in duty to remain and keep my family here long. I think I owe it to my children to place them in a different situation if I can. They have no opportunities for mingling with society, and very few for any improvement which may prepare them for future life. They must soon be thrown upon their own resources. But still if it duty to go forward, so let it be. I would not shrink from duty, when it is plain, because it subjects to privation and self-denial. If we have no reply from the Government very soon, I shall direct my business here with a view to withdrawing as early next spring as we can get away. I shall not how-even take any decided steps without your advice.

I hope to hear from you again soon.

Very truly Yours,

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall

Crow Wing Jan. 24/54

Recd. Feb. 18/54

Repd March 1

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (139-145)

Hall, Sherman
139. 20 February 1854
140. 14 March 1854
141. 10 April 1854
142. 26 April 1854
143. 3 August 1854
144. 15 November 1854
145. 3 May 1855

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
Feb 20th 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir;

In your letter of Dec. 7th you request to be informed if we should receive no communication from the Indian Department announcing a decision on the subject of the school contract. I regret that I am obliged to say, that no such communication has been received, and that no orders have been given, so far I can learn, to place the school funds in my hands. The agent has recently returned from St. Paul, and reports that the Governor had heard nothing from Washington respecting this matter a few days ago. I do not know how to understand it.

The agent says he recommended to the Governor to have the school farm fenced. The Governor wrote a paper addressed to the Agent and myself in which he recommends to us to go on under the contract and fence the land. The agent says that on the strength of that paper, he will furnish the funds when the work is done, if I get it accomplished, to pay for it. I shall make an effort to get it done.

My situation is not a little perplexing. If we cannot get a decision and are obliged to break up we do not wish to be at any expense to plant land here next spring. If we are to go on. we ought and must try to raise something for our subsistence next season. We have no farming tools and I do not feel at liberty to purchase any at our expense. We must hire a man. I am not willing to incur any more expense for such things till the question is settled whether we are to have the school or not. And yet spring is at hand and something must be done, or the season for putting in seed for a crop will be lost.

I am about making a little effort through a friend of mine, to get the Governor to move in this matter to effect something. For us to break up now is to sacrifice a considerable amount of property by undertaking the enterprise. We may lose more perhaps in the end, by going forward, and accomplish no good for the Indians. I wish to try the experiment far enough to be satisfied whether any confidence can be placed in the moral honesty of our Government officers or not. Is there any integrity at Washington? If there is I think we may hope to have some influence upon the morals of this place. The settlement the the matter of our school, if the thing is properly represented and pushed forward, may be taken as a fair index to what we may hope in future from the efforts of the Government to civilize and save the Indians. If they do not feel bound to fulfil honest engagements, and will uphold men in office in the Indian country whose whole moral influence is to corrupt all those about them, I say missionary societies had better have no connexion with them, but what they do for the Indians, to do it entirely independent of them. But I am not willing to think that things have got to that pass yet, that there is no redress or remedy for wrongs. I have some hope that

matters will take a different turn here by and by.
I hope you will give us your advice what to do. The question must be decided in some way soon. Rice is informed of your wishes and views. We cannot continue here long situated as we now are. What to do, if we break up I do not know. I have no plan for the future and can form none now. Mr. Wheeler says he needs a teacher; perhaps Mr. Pulsifer had better go to him, if all is lost here.
Henry Blackford is determined to go back to Lapointe in the spring, whether we break up here or not. If we stay I shall be very sorry to have him leave us. Do you approve of his going, and will you bear the expenses of his return?

I have just heard ~~that~~ the sale of the property at Lapointe bid off by Austrian last spring, has been confirmed, ~~and~~ of course he holds it. It is probable we shall not realize much if any thing for ours.

I have heard that the agent has been threatened with removal unless he alters his course. That I do not think he will do, and I have some hope that a few months hence we may witness changes for the better. All is in the hands and at the disposal of Him who holds the destinies of all men, and who accomplishes all his just designs in his own way and in his own time. I suppose he had some purpose to accomplish in bringing us here. I trust all in the end will be right.

Very truly yours

S. Hall

Rev. S. H. Hall
Rec March 17

Cross Keys Feb 20. 1854

Rec^d at Washington
March 17

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
March 14th 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

I was glad to learn through your letter to Mr. Pulsifer, recently received, that you had been to Washington, and that there is a prospect that we may be allowed to go on and establish the school. Notwithstanding all the discouragements which seem to lie before us, this is probably the best course. We cannot break up at once without sacrificing considerable property. We have gone too far to recede, unleſs the Government compel us to. If the funds are furnished for erecting the buildings, etc. without further delay, I am disposed to go forward and do the best I can. But I should not feel willing to remain here another six months in suspense waiting for a decision of this matter.

I have seen some things lately that seem to indicate that we are exerting some influence. If we persevere, we may poſsibly yet gain a foothold here. I do not think the case is absolutely hopeleſs. We are to walk by faith, and trust in God and not in man. Things have not appeared as bad here for some weeks past, as they did a while before. Governor Gorman has interested himself to get the matter settled, I am told. He has also recommended to go on and fence the school farm. I have got the fencing materials cut and a considerable part are on the ground. The rest will be in a few days. The agent has put into my hands the money to pay the expenses. I shall procure a few additional farming tools and seed as much land as I think profitable this spring, unless I hear something more from you before it is time to commence. We may not be able to do much with the school, but I see no reason why we may not succeed, if any one can. We have so far met with embarrassments which we did not anticipate, but we hope for an end to some of them soon. We have had no opportunity yet to try the experiment. When we have fairly tried it, and fail, I shall feel that God has no more work for us to do here. I shall hope to hear from you soon.

Yours truly

S. Hall,

Rev. S. Hall

Crow Wing March 14. 54

Rec'd April 12.

Ack'd " 26

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
April. 10th 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir,

Your letter from Washington came to hand by our last week's mail. That of March 9th was received the week before. I thank you much for your sympathy and your prompt efforts to relieve us from our embarrassment. I need not say that we were exceeding glad to get a decision on the school question, and to be relieved from our long and painful suspense. The intelligence of this event came in season for us. The season is not too far advanced to make arrangements for carrying on what farming operation will be necessary this year. We are not disposed to "back out" *now*, but to go on and do the best we can, at least for the present; and that for the following reasons:

1. We suppose the Committee would prefer to have us go forward, till we have made a fair experiment, if there is a reasonable hope of success, if we can do so without exposure to loss.
2. We hope to arrange with the Agent so as to secure the greater part, or all, we have expended on the mill, and to save other property which we could not turn to much account if we should break up and quit the country now.

3. We are here and see no other field of labor open for us just now.

4. We can remain here without incurring very heavy additional expenses to the Board, for some months to come, by which time there may be new developments.

5. We cannot tell what Divine Providence will enable us to do till we try; and we have had no chance for an experiment yet. We would not run away from duty because the field is hard and requires self-denial, and because iniquity abounds. If we stand our ground firmly, we *may* exert some influence towards correcting the things we complain of. The hearts and destinies of all men are in the hands of the Lord. I may have been too desponding, under the pressure of our trials and prospects.

6. It will not leave a good impression for us to quit now, as soon as we have got a decision in our favor. Many have looked on with interest to see the issue of this matter. If we back out now, as soon as we get untied, they will question the sincerity of our professions, that we came here to "do good", and not to make money. Some may think we leave because we got bit, by making a bad bargain, and are for getting out of it, the first opportunity. If we cannot make any thing out of the school after making a fair trial, or if there is further interferance on the part public officers, or of Providence interpose any other obstacle to hedge up our way, then we can decide to give up. The only objection which I now see to looking ahead is that we cannot manage such a school as our contract con-

templates, without more help. That will involve the Committee in some additional trouble and expense.

I have already written you, that Gov. Gorman recommended to procure materials before the snow disappeared for fencing the school farm. This has been done, and in a few days it will be surrounded by a substantial rail fence. The agent recommended this measure to him. This I consider providential, though, in itself, a small matter. If it had been delayed a week longer than it was, I do not see how it could have been accomplished at all this season. It also seems to indicate that there is no determination on the part of government officials here to make war on us. In some respects the horizon does not look so dark, as it seemed when I wrote you a detailed account about the state of things here some time ago. You may say that my letters indicate indecision and fickleness of purpose, and too little trust in God. For a time I lost all confidence in the Indian Department. It looked to me that they had no regard to the rights and welfare of the Indians in this quarter; and that if they would allow things to go on here as they were going without an effort to arrest the progress of iniquity and injustice, there was no hope for the Ojibwas, and that we might as well retire first as last. But I may have been too hasty in my judgment. There may have been no *design* to neglect official duties at head quarters. If all is right at the heart, evils at the extremities may be mitigated or cured. But if things are permitted to go on as they were carried on last fall and the fore part of the winter, I do not think our duty to the Indians requires us to make the

the sacrifice required to remain here; for we could hope to do them but little or no good. We cannot hope for *great* things at best.

If we are to go on, I wish Henry Blatchford could be induced to stay with us for the present at least. I can hardly dispense with his with his aid now.

Recent letters from Mr. Wheeler announce the existence of the small pox among them. There had been 17 deaths by it, and it is feared that it will spread widely. In other respects he represents their condition and prospects as more encouraging than usual. He says he needs to be reenforced. Permit me to make a suggestion in regard to reenforcing that station. If the Indians continue to draw around that station as much as they now seem disposed to do, he ought to have a male teacher. As to farming and a farmer, I would say, Do no more farming than is necessary to raise what vegetables the station needs, and to keep stock enough to afford them their milk and the team necessary to draw their wood and plow their gardens. It seems ~~it seems~~ to me, Mr. W. can procure help enough in his neighborhood to do this, at less expense and with less trouble, than he will find in procuring a missionary farmer. If his experience is like mine, he may find his cares and embarrassments increased, rather than diminished, by multiplying the number of secular laborers at his station. It is difficult to obtain men of the right stamp to fill such places, and they are not apt to be satisfied when they get on to the ground. It may be that the tendency of the station is to go too much into farming. Mr. Wheeler acknowledges that his farming has not yielded a pecuniary profit heretofore. But if it is the intention of the Prudential Committee to have the station go to farming for the Indians to much extent, then more team must be kept, and Mr. Wheeler needs a man to fill this place. An increase of laborers at the Station involves the necessity of a new outlay for buildings. It seems to me that before much more is expended for improvements at that Station, it would be well to secure a legal title or claim to as much land as the mission need, including what would be required for the settlement of the Indians. Heartless, gambling land speculators will show no respect to the rights, or for the hard earned improvements of missionaries and Indians, if they slip their claims out from under their feet. We have lost enough at Lapointe already. Perhaps if application should be made by the Board to the proper authorities, a piece of land may be reserved from sale for the uses of the Station, when that land shall be offered for sale. It is probable that this land will be brought into market before long. Every thing relating to the Ojibwas appears to be in a state of great uncertainty and fluctuation at present. We can form no confident opinion of what changes may occur in their political condition at no distant period. We must leave all in the hands of a righteous God, whose ways are not always our ways.

Very truly yours,

S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall
Crow Wing Apr. 10/54

Rec d. Apr. 26/54
Ans " 27

La Pointe r

Crow-wing, Min. Ter.
April 26th 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir:

Your letter of the 25th ultimo came to hand by our last week's mail; and at the same time one was received from the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, announcing officially the decision of the Department relative to the school. The Agent has also received instructions to turn over the funds applicable to carrying out the contract.

I need not say that we feel greatly relieved to be set free from these embarrassments. I think the Commissioner has acted honorably in confirming our contract without insisting on Gov. Gorman's modifications, and in allowing the alteration you requested. If it was the design of certain persons to break up the arrangement in order to get rid of us, that they might get the control of the school and the management of the funds into their own hands, they are foiled in their plans for the present at least. Reports to that effect have been current here, but I choose to pass no judgment in the case. The school will now be under our control, if we choose to go on with it, and I think it not probable that there will be any further interference. I have now more confidence that the Indian Department will not tolerate here such things as have been com-plained of, if they are properly represented to them.

As to the course to be pursued, you throw the responsibility principally on me whether to go forward or "wind up the concern." I should be glad to be freed from the responsibility of deciding either way. The arguments in favor of either course are of nearly equal weight in my estimation. But on the whole I think they preponderate in favor of going forward. I have already given you my principal reasons for this decision, and need not repeat them here. I would only say further, that it seems to me, that we have gone too far to break off just where we now are. Much has been expended which must certainly be lost if the enterprize stops at this point. It may succeed better than we anticipate, if persevered in. If we retire, I presume an effort will be made to establish a school here or somewhere else, of a character similar to the one our contract contemplates. I see no other place where it would be more likely to succeed, than at this. I should prefer Bad River or some other point near there. But there is no hope, I suppose, of its being put on ceded territory. I hope it will not be throwing away the money nor our labors. But we cannot tell what the result may be. Every thing in regard to the Ojibwas is in a very unsettled state at present. What will occur within a few months we cannot foresee.

But as things now look, we propose to go on and complete the buildings neceſsary for the school, on as economical a plan as poſsible consistent with a proper degree of durability and convenience and trust Providence to send us the help we shall need and give the school favor in the eyes of the people. If the Lord hedges up our way a few months hence we can retire. If you think this is not a correct view of this subject, I shall be happy to have your views upon it more fully.

Yours truly

S. Hall.

Rev S. Hall
Crow Wing April 26. '54

Recd May 8.
Ackd " 8.

Crow-Wing, Min Ter.
Aug. 3d 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Your letter of July 6th came to hand by our last mail. ~~of last~~ We were all pleased to hear of your safe arrival at Boston, and that you found your family well. You will please express our grateful acknowledgements to the Prud. Com. for their kindness and sympathy with us in our trials here, and especially for granting me leave to visit N. England with my family in the fall. What it is the design of Providence to do with me and mine in future I cannot foresee. On my way home after I left you at St. Paul, I called at Mr. Gates's and made a partial arrangement for a spot to build upon. I went home and made an arrangement with some men to take down some of the lumber I had got at Crow-wing for the pay of the mill. But after getting it started we find the rivers so low, that we are not likely to succeed in getting it to the place where it is wanted. Besides meeting with considerable pecuniary loss, I shall probably be obliged to abandon the project. There is very little probability of the streams rising much this season. I feel that it is my duty to do what I can to provide for the future support ~~[illegible]~~ of myself and family, whether my plans succeed or not. God has seen fit to cause me to pass through much trial during the past two years. I feel that I have accomplished ~~done~~ but little in his vineyard lately and the future does not look bright.

As to the time of our breaking up at Crow-wing I cannot decide yet when it is best to leave. I am desirous to get away as soon as we can dispose of the property. As soon as the Indian Department give instructions what to do with it, I shall wish to get it out of my hands as soon as I can. If they delay to attend to it, I wish the Com. would urge them. Mr. Pulsifer will go to Mr. Wheeler's station, and wishes to leave as soon ~~as soon~~ as he can. But as I must necessarily be from home considerable in getting away our property & on other business, I am desirous that he should remain for the present, as my family will be very lonesome with no man with them. I should not dare to leave them alone. The war spirit among the Indians still continues. There has not been quite as much intoxication of late as there was a few weeks ago, I suppose because the Indians had not the means to procure strong drink. I see no reason to think we have not decided right in concluding to break up the station. If it were the will of Providence, I should be glad to remain among the Ojibwas and preach to them, if they had a desire to be instructed. It is a great trial for me to give them up.

I have heard nothing from Dr. Brigham yet, and do not know what the Bible Soc. will do about printing our revised Indian Testament,

Very truly yours
S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

Crow Wing, Augt 3, '54

Rec^{d} " 14

Sauk Rapids, Min. Ter.
Nov. 15th 1854.

Rev S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir;

You have probably expected to hear from me in N. England before this time. But I am yet in Minnesota, and I suppose must remain here for the present. I had hoped to take my family east this fall, where I could give some of them the advantages of schooling for a time, but I could not accomplish it. It was not till the 30th of October that I was able to turn over the school property at Crow-wing to other hands, and obtain a receipt for it. It was then too late for me to remove my family and goods, and get ready to start, before the season was too far advanced to navigate this part of the Mississippi, without danger of being frozen up on the way. I must therefore choose another course. Had I been ready at the first of Nov. I might have gone; but I had no where to store our goods, which we could not well afford to throw away entirely, short of building. I began to build me a house at this place in Sept. which is not yet entirely enclosed. We have got one room so that we are living in it, and hope to get it so far advanced before winter sets in, that we can live in it and preserve our household goods. No buildings can be obtained in this neighborhood. Everything that can be made habitable is occupied. There has been more immigration to this region this season than ever before. I expect to remain here, and shall try to exert a ministerial influence here and around. It will be a hard field to cultivate, and I do not know what success I may have. But there is much need of a powerful moral influence on all this region. As I shall, I suppose remain here during the winter, I presume the people will soon make application to the A. Home Miss. Soc. for aid in sustaing me. At present I am obliged to devote most of my time to my building. As I have not means to hire my carpenters work done, I am obliged to do a considerable part of it myself.

I have written to Dr. Brigham to send me a copy of Dr. O'Meara's Test. ~~that~~ I may compare it with ours. I may find it desirable to go to Mr. Wheeler's station and spend a few weeks in this work during the winter, that I may have Henry's assistance & ~~obtain~~ that of the mission in the examinations. I am desirous to make the Testament as correct as possible.

I have not yet sent on my account and vouchers to Washington. I shall do it soon, and hope to settle up the whole concern without much more difficulty. The school is turned over to Mr Brock who will remove it to Gull Lake, but cultivate the farm which is broken and fenced at the Agency. Mr. B. took the crops and is to pay the expense of raising them.

I am some disappointed in my plans; but I feel assured that all is under the direction of a wise and good Providence & that all is right. I hope never again to get entangled with the U. S. Government. It takes a great while for them to move.

Very truly yours
S. Hall.

Rev. Sherman Hall.

Sauk Rapids

Nov. 15. 1854

Recd Dec. 2.

Ansd Fb. 15.

Sauk Rapids, Benton County,
Min. Ter. May 3d 1855.

Rev S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir.

Your favor of Feb. 15th was duly received. I should have written sooner, but have waited hoping I might be able to report the Crowwing affairs all settled up, and the whole business closed. As yet however I have not been able to get all the accounts settled entirely. Soon after I turned over the School property to Mr Breck, I forwarded my accounts to the Com. of Ind. Affairs. I have recently been informed that it was allowed, with the exception of $1.17 which they instructed me to pay to some Ind. Agent or depository of the U. S. I have taken measures to deposite this sum, and hope soon to be informed that the "Books are balanced."

I turned over the crops raised on the School farm to Mr. Breck, who agreed to pay the cost of raising them, the price of which was fixed between us. He has paid only $100. on that account. The potatoes were delivered to him before being harvested & likewise the turnips. He dug them & put them into large pits in the ground where a large part of them were afterwards found to have rotted. He has since written me that he thinks he ought not to bear all the loss. I replied to his letter, that if he would state the facts, and say what amount he thought ought to be deducted, I would submit his statements to the Prud. Com. for advice and instruction. I have not had any reply from him.

There is yet due on account of the sawmill between ninety and one hundred dollars. Whether we shall get any thing on that debt I do not know. I have written to the Chippewa Agent about it since his return from Washington, but have had no reply. I hope we may get something on that account. I presume you know that the Mississippi Indians have recently sold their lands, as also the Pillagers, reserving for themselves some small portions.

I have now in my possession between $400 and 500 dollars belonging to the Board. Should we get something more on the mill account and what I consider due from Mr Breck there will be something more.

When I decided on fixing my location in this region, there was no alternative but to build myself a house. No building could be obtained. For this purpose I took a part of the lumber which had been turned over to me in payment for the mill, and brought it to this place. The amount I took was 27.186 feet. With this I have got up a house which is partly finished. We got a portion of it so that we passed the winter in it.

I would request of the Committee that they give me this lumber, together with the horse, cow, one horse waggon, the books they have furnished me since my connection with the Board, our household utensils, furniture, &c. The horse is not very valuable, but is worth something to me. Our furniture, and the few tools I brough here with me, would sell for very little though they are of much value to us at present. I have found it a very expensive business to build. Labor and every article used in building is very expensive. If I can get established here and be free of debt, I hope I shall be able to get along without much embarrassment, and exert some influence. I cannot expect to do more than live from year to year. If the Com. will grant me what

I have requested, I hope, with the little means I have, to finish my house and get quietly settled where I may be useful. If they think I ask too much, then I submit to them to allow me what they think I ought to have. The property which I turned over to Mr. Breck ~~[illegible]~~ amounted to nearly all I had drawn from the school fund.

I will not ask a formal cessation of my connection with the Board till I can close up the business, and perhaps till some further correspondence is had respecting the printing of the Ojibwa N. T. which lies now where it did last fall. But I have no further claims on the Board for my support. The Am. H. Miss. Soc. gave me a commission to labor here for one year from last Jan. The people here can do but little at present for my support. I suppose I must forego doing much more for the education of my youngest children, ~~than~~ except what we can do for them at home. I shall not have the means to send them abroad, and there are no good schools in this neighborhood. But in all these things, I am confident the Lord will direct to what is best, though I might devise a different way.

My wife and myself had some funds in the hands of my brother in Vt. who has lately deceased. I have directed that they be transmitted to Mr. Gordon on my behalf, and will retain the amount now in my hands, unless you direct otherwise, supposing those funds will be soon transmitted to him.

It was a trial to me to cease my connection with the Indians, and I would rather labor among them & for them, than any where else, if there was a prospect of doing any thing for them. But at present, the prospects of the Ojibwas look very dark. It seems to me very little can be done for them.

I sympathise with you in your trials respecting the Slavery question. I fear that there is a certain class of men who will not be satisfied with any thing, and who are mistaking their own motives in the course they pursue.

Very truly yours
S. Hall

PC

Rev. S. Hall
Sauk Rapids, May 3. /55.
Rec'd. May 12.
Ans. " 16,

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (146-151)

Hall, Sherman
  146. 5 July 1855
  147. 1 October 1855
  148. 9 February 1856
  149. 19 March 1856
Pulsifer, Charles
  150. 4 July 1849
  151. 11 July 1849

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Sauk Rapids, Benton Co.
Min. Ter. July 5th 1855

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

Your favor of May 26th has come to hand. I was not aware of the practice of the Pru. Committee in making grants to their missionaries on leaving the missionary service, when I made the request contained in my last. Suffice it to say however, that in regard to the matter, the action of the Committee was perfectly satisfactory. I wished to know their views on the subject of my request, that I might know how to shape some of the future plans for the support of my family. When I shall get the business formally closed up with the Government, I do not know. I have forwarded all the papers and documents they have called for, and expect a full discharge when they get ready to attend to it. But when that will be I cannot tell. As soon as that is done I will make a formal request that my connexion with the Board may cease. I suppose it is desirable that it should be done before you prepare your next annual report.

I have requested the Secretaries of the A. H. Miss'y Society to give a draft for $200. the ~~amount~~ due me from the Soc. payable to the order of Mr Gordon, and to send it directly to him. I do this, because I suppose it the easiest and safest way to transfer the funds of the Board which I have in my hands to the Treasury. Please inform Mr Gordon of this that he may understand it, and let him place it to my credit when it is received, that it may appear in closing my account with him. I do not know how soon the draft may be forwarded, but hope without much delay.

This region is filling up with people this season faster than ever before. Many are taking claims also on the land recently ceded by the Winnebagos and Ojibwas. What wonderful changes have taken place in this N. Western country since I came here in 1831! Had any ~~any~~ one then hinted at them, he would have been thought beside himself.

Yours very truly
S. Hall.

Rev. S. Hall

Sauk Rapids July 5. 1855.

Rec'd. July 14.

Sauk Rapids, Min. Ter
October, 1st. 1855.

Rev. S. B. Treat.

Dear Sir,

I have received a communication from the Treasury Department, saying that the accounts which I have rendered of the disbursement of the school fund at Crow-wing are accepted, and that I am discharged. I do not know that there need be any further delay in my receiving from the Prudential Committee a formal dissolution of my connexion with the Board. There is still some business which is not closed, connected with the Crow-wing station. But I suppose that need not hinder the Com. from action in my case. I can attend to it after my conexion with the Board shall be formally dissolved, and there will be no need of delay on that ground. I expect to get the remainder still due on the mill account. There is also something yet due from Mr. Breck. He has recently sent me fifty dollars. I suppose the reason why he has not paid the whole before this is, that he has found his mission very expensive the past year, and has not received the instalments from the Government very promptly.

As to the property of the mission which I requested the Com. in my former letter to grant me, I have nothing further to say, than that I would renew my request. The cow has since died. I obtained another one afterwards which has also died. In order to supply my family with milk I have been obliged to borrow money; and if under the circumstances the Com. will grant me in addition $40 out of the money to be collected, or allow me to retain that amount till I can pay it, I would consider it a favor, though I feel that I have no claims to urge in the case. Some of our friends have made up a part of our loss.

In making this request that my connexion with the Board as a missionary cease, permit me to say, that I did not leave the foreign missionary field, because I had become tired of such a service. It would have been my choice to have remained among the Ojibwas, had there been a field where it seemed that the Board would have been justified in incurring the expense of establishing and maintaining a new station, and where there was a prospect of my being useful among them. No such field seemed to present itself. I would rather labor among them for their spiritual and temporal good, than in any other field which I could choose, if there was a reasonable prospect that such labors would result in the accomplishment of any thing permanent & valuable to them. But the prospect for accomplishing a great deal among them at present by missionary labors seems to me dark.

Permit me also to say that it is painful to me to sunder the connexion which has so long existed myself and the officers of the Board. My intercourse the Secretary of Correspondence, the Treasurer, and the Com. has uniformly been pleasant. Often in times of perplexity and anxiety has my heart been cheered by it, and my hands strengthened. There has always been a readiness to meet all our wants when made known, and a promptness and liberality in supplying us with such things as we needed when our wants were known to them. We shall ever retain the grateful remembrance of this kindness and sympathy for us. And I doubt not that I express the feelings of all the missionaries you have sent to this field, when I say we thank you for it. Though I am about to sunder my connexion with the Board as one of their missionaries, I shall not cease to feel the same interest in the cause they are associated to promote that I ever did, and their prosperity and success in the great work they have in hand will ever lie near my heart. I have always felt it a privilege, not a burden, to be a missionary; and I hope as long as I live I may never cease to be employed in some way in trying to bring my fellow men to the knowledge of God their Saviour, and to taste his salvation.

At the close of the last quarter I requested the Secretaries of the A. H. M. S. to send to Mr. Gordon a draft for the amount then due from that Soc. to me. I have never been informed whether the draft was sent. I have also been informed that Mr. Mudgett of Weathersfiel Vt. has deposited some money with Mr Gordon in my favor. But I do not know how much. Please ask him to inform me what sum he has received and whether he has received the draft. I shall request the Secs of the H.M. Soc to forward to him also a draft for the amount due me for the last quarter.

I recently received a letter from Dr Brigham stating that they were greatly in want of Ojibwa Testaments and enquiring whether I could not come down and print our revised copy. I cannot go before Dec. but I think I could arrange to leave then, if I could raise the means to subsist my family while I am gone. But while I am absent I can receive nothing from the Miss. Soc. nor will the people here be willing to pay for services which they do not receive. My expenses in building & getting established here have exhausted what little means I had, and all I get for my services here will barely subsist my family when every thing costs as high as it does now. I have been obliged to abandon the hope I had last year of sending my children away to school for a time. We have no school here yet. Will the Com. grant any thing towards printing the Ojibwa Testament? I suppose the Bible Soc will bear my expenses.

My prospects for remaining at Sauk Rapids and of being useful to the people are to human appearance encouraging. There is not a large number of minds to be reached; but the population is is increasing here and around, & there is harmony.

Very truly yours

S. Hall.

Rev. Sherman Hall
Sauk Rapids Oct. [illegible]
Recd. Nov. 11. [illegible]
Ans. [illegible]

148

New York, Feb. 9 1856.

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir:

I have handed Mr. Merwin ninety five dollars to be forward to the treasurer of the Board, of money collected from the property of the Crow-wing station. This is all I have now in my hands, after deducting the $40 dollars kindly allowed me by the Prud. Com. I intended to have rendered a full account of the closing up of the Crow-wing station on coming here, and for this purpose I copied my accounts before leaving home; but as I do not find the paper, I suppose I must have left it, I must defer doing it till I return. The account for the mill irons has been paid. There is still something due from Mr. Breck. He receives nothing from the Government now, and has never received much. His taking the school I suppose was a pecuniary loſs to him, and I presume he finds it difficult to raise funds to carry on his operations, and pay up arrearages.

I am now at work on the Ojibwa Testament which is in proceſs of printing. I shall remain here till the latter part of April probably. Will you not be here during that time? I am at the Bible House every day.

Yours truly

S. Hall

Rev. J. Hall

New York Feb. 9. 1856.

Rec'd. Feb. 13.

Ans' " 21

New-York, March 19th 1856

Rev. S. B. Treat,

Dear Sir,

I will commence what I have to say on the question of establishing a boarding school at Bad River with a few remarks on the general subject of boarding schools among the Ojibwas.

In looking back upon the history of past efforts to evangelize and improve the condition of this tribe, so far as I have been familiar with them, it seems to me that no agency has accomplished more than boarding school; or which is the same thing in principle, receiving Indian & half-breed children into christian families, and educating them there. The influence of the school formerly maintained by the Board at Mackinaw, is felt to this day in the country far beyond where it was located. So of the Baptist and Methodist schools formerly kept at the Saut Ste. Marie. They were expensive and troublesome to manage; but they done good. Many hopeful conversions have taken place in them, and in the places where they were located, through their influence. Nor will this influence cease to exist with the generation of those educated. It perpetuates itself in many individual cases at least. More hopeful conversions have taken place in connexion with these schools, than have occurred under any other system of missionary effort that has been adopted to the Northwest of Mackinaw.

Such are the habits and character of the Ojibwas, that

It is almost impoſsible to do any thing effectually for the education of their children, unleſs they are taken from their parents and brought under a more regular and permanent system of training, than they can be brought under, while they remain with them. The experiment has been pretty extensively and faithfully tried to bring the children into schools and teach them, while they remain in the families of their parents. But it has not generally, at least, succeeded. Almost all the miſsionaries of different societies which have labored in this field have tried it, & have become sick of it. Few in these schools have acquired education enough to be of much use ~~to them~~, except ~~these~~ children of some of the half-breeds; and fewer still have given evidence of real conversion, through the influence of these schools. Our miſsionaries have succeeded as well perhaps in this kind of schools, as those of any other society which has operated here. But these schools have not met our expectations. They have not been as efficient instruments of advancing the elevation of the people as we hoped. And we have not through them exerted much influence upon the people at large. The Indians are too unstable and too unsettled, and have too little control over their children, and are too indifferent about their improvements, to allow them to attend school long enough and regularly enough, to derive much benefit from such a system.

It is true indeed that many on whom much expense and labor have been bestowed in boarding schools and in the families of miſsionaries, have turned out badly. Some have exerted a more demoralising and pernicious influence than they would have done, if their power of doing mischief had not been increased by their education. But there are many honorable exceptions. All the missions have felt the influence of such to a greater or less extent.

Directly and indirectly boarding schools are one of the best methods of reaching the native mind with the truths of the Gospel. I do not think that a mind entirely uncultivated, undisciplined ~~entirely~~, unaccustomed to any ideas, but those of the grossest sensuality, conceiving of no higher good than the gratification of the lowest animal appetites and passions, and aspiring to the attainment of nothing beyond ~~the attainment of~~ a supply for present necessities, and at the same time stupified under the debasing and polluting influences of paganism, is in as favorable a condition for receiving religious impressions from the truths of the gospel, as one which has been in some degree instructed and filled with higher ideas, and especially such as would be received by a religious training. No one who has not been accustomed to come in contact with heathen mind, can realise how dead is the conscience, and how difficult to arouse the mind to the least reflection by religious truths. It is like sowing seed upon a rock. When it strikes, it bounds back, and then the fowls of the air come and devour it. His mind is so stupid, his conscience is so benumbed, and all his modes of thought and ideas so sensual and low, ~~that~~ there is nothing to take hold of to awaken emotion, and ~~[illegible]~~ arouse his thoughts to action. Educate him and fill his mind with other ideas, and the case is somewhat different.

The establishmenent of a manual labor school at Bad River.

There are, as it seems to me, two sides to this question.

1. Its location is favorable. It is a place to which the Indians of that region are strongly attached. They have cultivated gardens ~~there~~ and made their sugar there for a long time. It is the old camping ground for many of them, and of course it is naturally a central place with them; and as it is now their chief reservation for that band, they will probably be drawn there more than formerly.

It has many facilities for obtaining supplies for such a school. Lumber can conveniently be had for buildings. Since commerce on Lake Superior has increased, the facilities for obtaining foreign supplies are multiplied, and the expense diminished. It is not difficult of acceſs, though not immediately on the Lake. The quality of the soil at that place, is as good as at any other with which I am acquainted in that region; and there is a sufficient quantity of good land for this purpose. There is as much land of a suitable quality, near to the present station, as would probably be required for the use of the station and boarding school, and to a considerable extent, already under cultivation. A considerable part of the buildings which would be required, if the school is established in connexion with the present station, already exist. The Indians will probably continue to make their gardens near the station their general encamping ground, and plant principally there. The school there will be in the midst of their reservation, and in convenient distance for the Indians to attend meetings at the station. The soil is of fair quality, and when once cleared, is easy of cultivation.

I fully endorse Mr. Wheeler's language when he says, "A small manual labor school, I think very desirable at this place. I know of no place in the Indian country, where one could be more economically and successfully managed, or where it would be more in favor with the people, or be more beneficial in its influence." I think there would be no difficulty in obtaining children enough to educate, and I have no doubt that such a school, if efficient and well managed, would exert a moral and religious influence much beyond its immediate sphere of operation.

The Board have there already a mission station, which is well established, and has gained confidence and influence in the community. This fact, I think, should have something to do with the decision of this question. If the ground were to be entirely broken anew, the question might assume a different aspect. It is in part the question whether or not to enlarge the operations of the mission.

The Government will probably expend some part of the educational fund on that reservation. If you do not establish a boarding school there, or something that shall answer the purpose of it, they probably will do it, or give the funds into hands of some other religious society for this purpose. If you continue your efforts at Bad River, this is undesirable. It will be distracting the minds of the Indians between two institutions, &

two different systems of management, and not improbably produce collissions between the two establishments. I do not see any place suitable ~~place~~ to locate a boarding school, at ~~at except on~~ the mission claim, without removing it so far from the mission station, as to render it very inconvenient for those connected with it to attend meetings constantly at the station, unless the Indian Gardens should be occupied for this purpose which, I presume the Indians, will not consent to. If the Government establish a school there independent of the mission, nobody can tell into whose hands it may fall, and what may be its influence upon the efforts of the mission and the religious welfare of the Indians. It seems to me desirable that there be but one establishment there, and that that be in the hands of the mission if it can be, and that ~~that~~ be made as efficient as possible. At least, I should prefer not to see the Government establish a separate school there, if the mission is to be continued, and can do their work as cheap and as well, or better, for them than, they can do it for themselves. It might become a source of much embarrassment to the missionaries. I have no doubt that a school managed by the mission will be much more efficient and economically sustained, than if in the hands of the Government officers. This is one side of the subject. But

2. It has another phase to it. Such an establishment as Mr. Wheeler contemplates, will require a considerable large outlay for additional buildings, stock, and tool Thought it seems to me probable that Mr. W. has in his mind an establishment somewhat more extensive than is really required at present, his estimate of expenses for

buildings, &c. which will be required is not too great. It will probably require an outlay of from $2.000 to $3.000 to put the station in a condition for buildings and apparatus, to board and instruct fifteen or twenty children. This expense cannot be avoided, unless the Government furnish the buildings. In that case they must own them and have the control of them. If they build them, they must put them on the mission claim, or so far from it in order to get land suitable for the purposes of the school, as in a great measure to disconnect the school with the present station.

I have a strong aversion to expending missionary funds for buildings and to improve lands in the Ojibwa country, where it can be avoided. Many hard days labor have been expended, ~~and~~ much money, for our establishments which we have had to abandon. They have been worth very little, except as they were necessary to us while we occupied them. I am not very sanguine as to results at Bad River. I regard the present condition of the whole Northwest Indians as very unsettled and unsatisfactory. I have no doubt the Government will protect those who have reservations in their rights, and possession of them. But if these reservations are wanted, or those living on them are troublesome to their white neighbors, it will be no more difficult for the Government to persuade them to sell, or exchange them for others, than it was to persuade them to sell the portions of their country which they have already sold. That they are all to be let alone, quietly to occupy their reservations, I do not expect. They have reserved some of the best portions of the country, and I doubt not that the cupidity of white people will devise means to get hold of it in time. Mr Wheeler says, "There is a general feeling among business men coming into this region, that our Indians have a larger and better reservation than they deserve, and that their land is wanted by the whites."

Bad River is not beyon danger from the whiskey traffick. Should intemperance roll in there as it is doing in some other portions of the country, it might even break up the station. The Methodist mission at Sady Lake was obliged to abandon the place from this cause last fall. They did not consider their lives safe from the rage of drunken Indians.

As to the future I suppose I am not so sanguine as Mr Wheeler. The history of the Ojibwas since 1839 has discouraged me. I fondly hoped when they sold the first portion of their country to the Government and were brought into closer contact with them, that the effect would be beneficial to them. But it has not been. They have degenerated under the influences which resulted from their connexion with the Government consequent upon selling their lands.

Though you may obtain a legal title ~~to~~ the property at Bad River, it is doubtful whether the Board could realise much from it, in case the station should be abandoned at any future time.

A boarding school would increase the annual expenses of the station. Though you would rely principally on the funds of the Government for the expenses of boarding and teaching the children, yet there can hardly be a doubt, that such an appendage will practically increase the annual drafts of the station upon the treasury of the Board.

It is difficult to obtain persons of the right stamp to manage and instruct such a school. In order to the highest success of the school, they should be persons of rather peculiar qualifications. They should not be often changed.

A boarding school will be difficult to manage. And there is not much doubt that the missionaries will find, that in adding a boarding school to their station, they are also bringing upon themselves new labors, new trials, and many perplexities.

A boarding school will require the addition of several laborers at the station. A superintendant with a family, I suppose will be necessary, and more teachers. The larger the number of persons required, the greater will be the amount of secular business at the station. It is desirable that this be as little as possible. It gives ~~to~~ a mission station the appearance of secularity, and creates unfavorable prejudices in some minds. It also consumes the time and adds to the cares & labors of the missionaries, with increasing their efficiency.

Whatever plan is adopted, I would guard against an overgrown establishment, especially in its secular aspect. A large establishment will impair its efficiency. Mr. Wheeler seems desirous to secure a large piece of land. It seems to me that a quarter of a section, or at least 200 acres would be abundan for the use of the station, even if it should prosper beyond the most sanguine expectations. By trying to secure more than is needed, would tend to prejudice many against the mission. The Board, I suppose do not wish to engage in land speculations.

I do not see the neceſsity of cultivating a large farm. Most of the provisions required for the station, can be procured cheaper from abroad, than they can be raised at the station. It will be best to raise what vegitables they want, and perhaps some of their meat. Some stock will be required. But to keep a large stock ~~would be~~, I think, would be unprofitable. With the number of boarding scholars contemplated, it would not require the cultivation of a large farm, to give them all the instruction and exercise in this branch of industry, that would would be required. It has been my impreſsion, that there was a tendency at Bad River to go more into farming than was really neceſsary or profitable. This opinion I think I once before expreſsed to you.

It is very desirable that Mr Wheeler should be free, as much as poſsible, from secular cares and busineſs, that he may devote all his energies to the religious interests of the people. He may find room enough for their full exercise in this employment. I deeply sympathize with his views on this subject. His theory about putting the whole secular busineſs of the station into the hands of a superintendant of the school looks plausible. But the great difficulty is to find the man to fill the station. We have always desired to have a man at our stations to take the charge of its secular affairs, and relieve the miſsionary from this kind of duties. But such persons have rarely been aſsociated with the miſsions. It is by no means a settled question whether Mr. W. will not find his embarraſsments greater, and his secular burdens heavier, by the addition of a boarding establishment to his station; on account of the difficulty of obtaining just the kind of help he will need. If there is any failure here, the whole burden is thrown back upon him. A good judicious man of enligend and enlarged views, possessed of good business talents and experience, of sterling good sense, deep piety and strong faith, and willing to make many sacrifices to save the Indians, would be a very desirable addition to the station, whether it has a boarding school or not.

It seems to me possible that some of the buildings which Mr Wheeler seems to think necessary to be erected, may be dispensed with for the present. If the station requires a new school house, it seems to me that it can be made to answer the purpose of booth a school room and a room for meetings, without detriment to the interests of the station. A school house as large, or perhaps a little larger, than that we had at Lapointe, I should think, would comfortably convene all that will attend their meetings. That was a substantial building and cost considerably less than $500. It seems to me unnecessary for the Board to expend $800, or $1.000 there for a church just now at least. And I should think that, if a new school house is required, one which will answer well for the school and for a place of worship, may possibly be built for less than $500. It is however expensive building in the western country.

The suggestions in Mr Pulsifer's letter respecting the school and affairs generally at Bad River seem to me to be judicious and important.

I have made a much longer communication than I intended when the thought first suggested itself of giving my views of the above subjects in writing. And perhaps you will find nothing of use to you in what I have said. I have no advice to give as to entering into an arrangement with the Government about a school, or as to what kind of an arrangement it is best to make. Should you arrange so as to board and furnish clothing for, and instruct some twenty children, I suppose it would cost the station as much as seventy five dollars a head, perhaps a hundred.

Permit me to say a word respecting the church at Lapointe. I never considered the building as properly the property of the Board. A large part of the expense of the building was defrayed by the subscriptions of individuals not connected with the mission. I did a good deal of work on it with my own hands. A part of the lumber was furnished at the expense of the mission. But the church properly belonged to the village. The bell, lamps and stove, except pipe, were not purchased with the money of the Board. I am sorry to see it fall into individual hands. It ought to be allowed to remain unmolested, and to be used for the purpose for which it was originally built — a house for Protestant worship. But I suppose it is to fall into the hands of very narrow minded men.

I think it would be well for you to visit the station when navigation on Lake Superior opens — certainly if you should establish a boarding school. You could judge much better as to many points after being on the ground. It would be a relief to Mr Wheeler to meet you on the ground and confer with you. Such a visit would be beneficial to the whole mission.

Perhaps I have put you to inconvenience by keeping those papers so long. My apology is, that the printers have been so close upon me that I have not had much time to attend to them.

Very truly yours, S. Hall

Rev. S. Hall

New York March 19 '56.

Rec'd. March 25.

Ansd " 26.

From Charles Pulsifer, teacher.

1849 – 1859.

Thetford Vt. July 4. 1849

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston, Mass;

Dear Sir;

I take this opportunity to write a few lines to you, thinking you would like to know where I am & what are my plans, employments & prospects. I came here the first of Sept. last & entered the institution here (under the care of Rev. Hiram Orcutt) as a student, with the intention of preparing mself more thoroughly for teaching, & of returning to the west again, (if Providence should permit) either to the Cherokees or some of the new western states. I moved my family here the latter part of Dec. & have pursued my studies thus far with as little interruption as my circumstances would permit. My Mother spent the winter with us, & returned a few weeks since to Plymouth N.H. Satisfactory arrangements can be made for her either with my sister in Lowell, or by her makeing her home with my brothers in Iowa. I wish to continue my studies here a year longer or a little more. My straightend circumstances present many hindrances, & cause much unavoidable delay in the prosecution of my studies, which I very much regret, as I am thereby kept from a field which ought to be already occupied. I have sometimes thought of seeking the loan of a small sum, of some benevolent individual to be repaid in a few years with interest: & in the mean time obtain a life insureance for seven years in order to secure my creditor from loss in case of my decease. Our teacher, Mr. Orcutt is an agent of the N.E. Mutual Life Insureance Co. & he has advised me strongly to get an insureance for five hundred dollars. But I know of no person of whom I could obtain assistance, & shall therefore content myself with laboring what is necessary for our support, & studying what I can. I still remember the Cherokees & the Cherokee Mission, with unabated interest, & should be glad to return there if duty calls. I wish to be able to say with sincerity, "Lord what wilt thou have me to do. I love to think of this promise & command "In all thy ways acknowledge Me, & I will direct thy paths."

July, 6. I regret that I am not able now to make another advance-payment for the "Herald". I hope it will be sent, & trust that I shall be able soon to make the payment.

I remain Sir, with affectionate respect,
yours in christian love

Charles Pulsifer

JULY
7

PAID 5

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston
(Mission House Pemberton Square) Mass.

Mr Chs. Pulsifer
Thetford July 4. 1849
Rec'd July 9.
Ack'd July 9.

Thetford July. 11, 1849

Rev. S. B. Treat;
Boston Mass;

Dear Sir;

Yours of the 9. inst came to hand yesterday, & found me in the hay field. It is excessively warm here, & I find myself so much exhausted with labor, that I fear I shall make very poor work at writing.

The subject of your letter was very unexpected to me, but I trust that with some good degree of sincerity we can say with Paul, "Lord what wilt thou have me to do." And if it shall appear upon due & prayerful deliberation to be His will that we should go; neither Mrs. P— nor myself shall make any objection.

There is one principal difficulty in the way which, being removed, will do much toward preparing my mind to go; & that is in relation to my Mother. I said, (in relation to her) in my letter to you, that "provission could be made for her" &c. Still these provissions are yet to be made. There is no doubt of her having a home with my brothers in Iowa, if she will consent to go. Indeed she has said that she would go if I would go & live there too; but whether she will go if I should be stationed somewhere else I do not yet know.— I have not asked my sister & brother-in-law in Lowell the question whether they will take the care of her. They are universalests & do not feel much the force of the reasons which would induce me to go. Still I hope that some satisfactory arrangement can be made, so that I can feel at rest in regard to Mother, & that she will be willing to part with me.— The plan which I have marked out appears to me to be a very important one & worthy of much better talent & qualifications than I have or can possess. I look upon it as of vast importance that our *western* *country* should be supplied as soon as possible with good, christian common school teachers, to educate the common mind of the west.

It will be some disappointmen to me, to give up the idea of doing what little I may for the furtherance of that object. But I am not my own & where duty calls there would I go.—

I suppose our rout if we go would be by the way of the lakes, & it would therefore be necessary to go as soon as Sept. or before. I have made engagements to work for some three or four weeks to come.

Please accept ~~our~~ affectionate reguards
& believe me as ever yours truly

Charles Pulsifer

P.S. Allow me to say that you made a mistake in prefixing Rev. to my name in your address.

THETFORD VT.
JULY
12

PAID 3

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.
(Mission House)

Mr Chs Pulsifer
Thetford July 11 '49
Recd July 13.
Ansd July 17

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (152-158)

Pulsifer, Charles

152. 25 July 1849
153. 3 October 1849
154. 1 February 1850
155. 17 May 1851
156. 2 October 1851
157. 14 June 1852
158. 18 September 1852

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Thetford Vt. July 25. 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat:

Dear Sir;

I received a letter from my Mother yesterday, giving her full consent to our going to La Point; & I know of nothing now to prevent our going. We will, therefore, make preparation to go, as speedily as possible. But I do not think we can be ready before the last week in Aug. If we had a longer time in which to prepare, it would be better, & I can make a trunk or two which we must have. I think, however, we can get ready by that time. If I should have a box or two to send on to Boston before we come, shall I direct them to the Mission House, or to any other particular place in B— ? — Your last was duly received, but I delayed the reply that I might be able to write something deffinite on the subject.

With respect I remain yours truly

Charles Pulsifer

P.S. We shall be here two & perhaps three weeks longer.

Mr Chs Pulsifer
Thetford July 25. 1849
Recd July 30.
Ackd July 31

THETFORD VT.
JULY
26

PAID 5

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston, Mass.

Little Rapids Mission near Sault St. Marie
Oct. 3. 1849.

Rev. S. B. Treat:
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

You will doubtless be surprised at the date of this, thinking that we reached La Point long since; but here we are, four hundred miles from there, & have been here waiting nearly four weeks. The cause of the delay is, we have been unable to get a passage to La Point on any kind of a vessel hitherto. Vessels have left Sault St. Marie for other points on the lake but all have stopped short of La Point a considerable distance. So ther has been no alternative, but to wait here for a vessel, or coast up the lake in an open boat or canoe, at double the expense of a passage in a vessell, even if we should coast only a part of the way; to say nothing of the exposure of health. Add to which, the weather has been very stormy & wet ever since we arrived. Scarcely has there been three days of pleasant weather in succession since we arrived here. These things, together with the advise of our brethren here who are well acquainted by experience with the navigation of the lake both coasting & otherwise, have induced us to wait for a passage in some vessel. There is very little doubt that we shall be able to get a passage in a few weeks.— We had a pleasant & speedy ~~& fine~~ passage were being only a little more than a week from Boston to this place. Our health has been good most of the time. We had on our journey some premonitory symptoms of cholera, which were immediately checked, however by the use of medicine, which a physician of Albany kindly gave us.— I have heard from Mr. Hall, by way of paſsengers who came down from La Point about a week after our arrival. By them we learned that the mission families were well, both there & at Bad River. Mr. Ely had gone to Pokeguma— We feel under particular obligations to our Methodist friends here, especialy to the Rev. Peter O. Johnson & his Lady, at whose house we have been made wellcome dureing our stay. We desire to expreſs our thanks for their brotherly kindneſs. May the Lord reward them.—

We have been makeing some acquaintance with the Ojibwas while here, & giving some attention to the study of the language. A band of the tribe have been living here (though they are away at their fishing grounds at present.)

I have still funds enough to take us to La Point I think, & we hope before long to be there & at our work. Yet would we wait with patience the Lord's time & pray that we may have more love to Him & his precious cause.— Hopeing that He will guide & bleſs you & your associates in all your labours in this good work. I am dear Sir, very truly yours

Charles Pulsifer

Oct. 6.

P. S. A boat arrived last evening from below bring~~iv~~ing all of my things except the matrass That must have been left somewhere on the way. It is still uncertain when we can go to La Point. There are still passengers & freight below who must go up this fall, & the probability is that we shall have an opportunity to go in a week or ten days. — I should have written to you immediately on my arrival here, but I expected to get a passage to La Point in a few days ~~& an~~ intending to write immediately, after getting there. Th[illegible] I have delayed it untill now.

very truly yours

C. Pulsifer

SAULT DE STE MARIE Mich.
OCT
6

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

Mr Chs Pulsifer
Little Rapids, Oct. 3, 6, '49
Rec'd Oct. 13,
Ack'd Oct 24

La Pointe L. S. Feb. 1, 1850

Rev. S. B. Treat.
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

I have now the privilege of writing you from our field of labour from which at the date of my last we were long & to us mysteriously detained. We were kindly entertained by our Methodist brethren at the Sault St. Marie during the whole of our stay there, which continued untill the first of Nov. We feel under renewed obligations to God for his merciful kindness to us in this providing a home during our detention, & would also express our gratitude to our brethren for their kindness. At length the time came for us to proceed & God gave us a very safe & pleasant passage to this place.

The crew of the steamer on which we came said they had not had a pleasanter trip the whole season. Our boat came to the wharf at La Pointe early saturday morning Nov. 10. Soon Br. Hall came on board, not for us for he knew not that we were coming, but to enquire for his supplies of provision for which he was looking. I was standing by the clerk when he enquired for freight & soon learned who he was.

The mission had given up the expectation of any one's coming to their assistance before another season. We met a very cordial welcome from our brethren & sisters & felt ~~as~~ that we were to be fellow helpers of the faithful servants of the Lord. God grant that we may be so indeed. In consequence of their not expecting help Br. Wheeler had mooved with his family from Bad River (into the house we are to occupy when they move back) & had commenced the school about a week previous to our arrival. On account of the state of his family it was judged best for them to spend the winter here, so they soon found a house for us, not quite as roomy as mine in which you took breakfast at Honey Creek, but sufficiently large for our accommodation & with a little fixing comfortable. So borrowing a few articles of furniture of Br. H— & Br. W— & buying a few dishes a the stores here, together with what we brought we were soon put in the way of house-keeping; & on the thursday after our landing I took charge of the school, leaving Br. Wheeler free to pursue the study of the language & the work of preaching the gospel.— The school has been pretty steadily & fully attended, there being usualy 30 & some of the time 40 scholars in attendance. They have made ncourageing progress in their studies, as good I think, as schools of like character in N. C.— I was surprised after being here a few weeks & getting some-

time to the preaching of the word within a few weeks past, what acquainted with the operations of our brethren, at the limited extent to which the mission comes in contact with the native mind. I speak in relation this station. From what I have been able to learn, I think it is different at Bad River. — The school too, is composed almost entirely of French half-breed children, & this not because there are not Indian children enough sufficiently near to make a good school. They are not permanently located here, but have been here ever since we came. There are several reasons why they have attended very little of which the following are some: They care but little about the school not knowing its value. There is a feeling of dislike (on the part of halfbreed children) to associating with the children from the lodges. They are considerably in advance of the latter in regard to clothing cleanliness &c. & there is such a mutual repulsion that it is impracticable to bring the two classes into the same school & instruct them together. It remains therefore an important question how shall we bring these native youth under our instruction & influence & plant in their young minds the seeds of truth which we may hope with the blessing of God will spring up & bear fruit to his glory. — I received your favour of Oct. 24, Feb. first. There has been some encouraging attention, to the preaching of the word within a few weeks past, We hope that it may prove a "savour of life unto life."

Brother Wheeler has taught a singing school this winter, which has been attended with a good degree of interest, although the number in attendance has not been large. Please accept our christian regards.

very truly yours Charles Pulsifer

Ontonagon Mich
Feby 27

10

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

Mr Charles Pulsifer
La Pointe Feb. 11, 1850
Rec'd March 27.
Ans'd April 19

La Pointe May. 17, 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir:

Being relieved from school to-day (saturday) I sit down to write to you, for the first time since Jan. 1850. Your's of the 9th. ultimo, which was enclosed in the Mission letter, is before me. It came to hand the 9th. inst.

The mission families are all in good health. Mrs. P. & myself enjoy better health than we did at the South.

Your last letters took us by surprise, as you will see, I presume by br. Hall's. I had not once thought of such a change being proposed. But I sympathize with you & the Committee in the motives which I think led you to propose the change; & were the situation of things such, that the change would increase the efficiency of our mission, so far as I am concerned it should be cheerfully made, though we should thereby experiance considerable personal inconvenience.

I think it of the first importance, that in all our operations, we should come in direct contact with the Indian mind as much as possible. This has been done to a much less extent than is desirable since I have been here. Especially is this true of my department. Unless we can get the *Indian* children into our school & give them some instruction, I see not but generation after generation of heathens will grow up & go down to the grave like their fathers. It is not to be denied, that our school, as it is, scarcely touches the Indian children. But how to make any change in the present position of affairs is a difficult question. It would be of no use for me to go to Bad River now to open a school, for there is no probability that I could get a school there at present. And it is likely that the removal scheme will entirely prevent our having any school there this season; unless the lake Indians are allowed to remain. Indeed unless that is the case, it seems to me that our missionary labours for the Ojibwes are pretty much at an end in this region. It seems that all we can do at present, is, to do what we can *as we now are*, & wait the leadings of Providence for the future. With this impression we have opened our school, & some 18 scholars attend.— When we look at things that are seen the prospects of our Mission look dark, very dark, but when we look into God's word, a ray of hope appears. On this would we stay ourselves.

What we need more than anything else, is a revival of religion; first in our own hearts & families, & then among the people around us. Then shall we have more brotherly love & labor with one heart & one mind, in the work we were sent here to do. I doubt not we shall have an interest in your prayers for this end.—

You will doubtless fully learn br. Hall's views on this subject from his letter.

very truly your's &c.

C. Pulsifer

Mr. C. Pulsifer,
Lapointe, May 17, 1851,
Recd. June 10,

Ack'd to Mr. Hall
Aug 4

La Pointe Wis.
May 20
10

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

La Pointe Oct. 2, 1851.

Rev. S. B. Treat;

Dear Sir,

The payment which is to be made at Fond du Lac this month has drawn away not only the Indians, my scholars, & nearly all the inhabitants of the place, but br. Hall & Henry too: so I avail myself of this opportunity to write to you. Br. H— & Henry left here the 30 ultimo, & are now lying out on the shore between here & Fond du Lac taking the weather voyager like; for they have a strong wind ahead to-day, accompanied by frequent squalls of rain, which makes it quite uncomfortable to be out. But they have a tent to shelter them, & a number of warm blankets to defend them from the cold, so I hope they will not suffer much. But at the best, it is quite a different thing from a Boston parlor.— Through the kindness of br. Hall, I have read several of your last letters to him, by one of which I learn that you have received mine to you of the 17. of May last. Several topics of your last letters are of great importance to us as individuals, & as a Mission. The cultivation of personal piety, does indee demand our first & earnest attention. Without it we are unfit to be here as missionaries, & cannot enjoy & prize the blessings of the Gospel as we ought: nor recommend it to others in that hearty, affectionate manner calculated to make an impression on the mind. "Grow in grace"; this must be our careful, constant & earnest endeavor. Wherever I go, I carry with me, an evil heart of unbelief, prone to depart from God, & I feel more & more the importance of the admonitions to "Watch & pray," and to "Keep the heart with all diligence. What I want is, to have every thought & desire of the heart, brought into complete & willing captivity to Christ. "O wretched man that I am; who shall deliver me from the body of this death." Jesus, "is able to save unto the uttermost all that come unto God through Him."

Here only is ground of hope for me.— You suggestion in regard to our native members being trained to habits of benevolence, is one which we need. I do not know that anything has been attempted in that way here; nothing has, to my knowledg since I came. Not a single individual has given anything for missionary purposes, to support the school here, or in any other place; to pay for any books or any other thing used in school nor even assist, unpaid, in getting or preparing wood for the school or meeting, so far as I know. These things ought not so to be, & I hope a new era, in this respect, will begin among us, before long.— The Indians will, most of them, I think nearly all, go to payment, with the inderstanding that those who come & receive their annuities are to remain. The Agent has assured them, that none will be paid, but such as remove. I hear since br. H— left, that some 600 are on their way from the region of Chipeway river; 200 of whom are coming this way; & the remainder strike the lake half way or more between here & Fond du Lac. Those here & at Bad River have gone & are going, all of them I believe. But it is doubtful whether many of the Indians remain at Fond du Lac, as they agreed to. They have said since the Agent left, that they were coming back after getting their annuities, & it seems likely that they will come back either with or without them. Time will show.— I must try to make you a little more acquainted with my school. As for the house, it is pretty good, & somewhat more comfortable for the climate, than that at Honey Creek which you visited with me. It is well lighted & has a good stove, by which we can make it comfortable, except in the coldest days of winter. Here we (myself & scholars) begin each day of school, with reading God's word, uniting in a hymn of praise, (sometimes English & sometimes Ojibwa) & then in prayer, during which all stand. Questions are asked on what is read, & an effort made to impress upon the youthful mind in a plain way, the instruction contained in the passage read, & to draw from it rules for their conduct during the day~~ing~~. Care is taken to check all levity & inattention, & to impress upon the children their obligation to give it their serious attention.

The whole occupies about fifteen minutes; & then to the work of getting lessons &c. A time is set apart for every thing, for whispering, reading, reciting, study & recess; and an effort made to attend to each in its proper time, & as you will suppose, I find no difficulty in securing attention to the first of these.

Children here are early trained ~~here~~, by example if not by precept, in lyin, stealing & lasciviousness; & it is most melancholy to see how quickly & abundantly the bitter fruits of such training appear.

My endeavor is to apply the Bible to these evils & to fix in the youthful mind a reverence for that book, & a deep conviction of its truth. Yet the Bible is not used as a text book, nor so much time spent in studying it, as in many Mission school under the care of the Board. This plan is pursued in accordance with br. Hall's suggestion, lest those children belonging to catholic families who come to us for instruction, should be taken entirely away. At night school is closed by reading in the Old Testament & prayer. You will see by br. Hall's report the studies pursued & statistics of the school. Any suggestions from you in regard to the school will be very gladly received. The Mission

families are all in usual health, except Mrs. P— who is not as well as usual. She unites with me in affectionate regards to you & Mrs. Treat

C. Pulsifer

Mrs C. Pulsifer
La Pointe, Oct 2, 1851
Rec'd Nov 1.
Ans'd Feb. 3

Lapointe Wis. June 14, 1852.

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

Yours of Feb. 3d is before me. It came to hand the 11th of Mar. since which, ~~time~~ the children being absent at the sugar bush, I have spent considerable time in manual labor, cutting up my years supply of fuel, & attending to my gardening & potatoe patch, as they say south. My summer session commenced the 24th of May, with about the usual number of scholars

The average attendance the last session (fall & winter), was considerably less than any previous session since I have been here, being only a fraction over 13. This was owing in part to the winter payment ~~made~~ at Fond du Lac, which drew away & kept away, several families who have been accustomed to send their children. The School at Bad River, br Wheeler tells me, is attended by some 30 children, all, except his own I suppose, nearly or quite full Indians. Miss Spooner keeps four hours a day & works in br. W's family the remainder of the day. We should hope to make considerable progress in our schools if it were not for the irregularity of attendance. This is the bane of all the neighborhood Indian (not to say white) schools I have ever been acquainted with. The progress of ~~a~~ children in knowledge & virtue must necessarily be slow while they are immersed in an atmosphere of ignorance, superstition & heathenism 18 or 20 hours out of 24 & four or five days out of seven, & even these advantages ~~to~~ continued from the age of perhaps 6 to 12 years. Add to this the the thousand destructive influences that continually surround the child & find so ready a reception in the natural heart, and it seems a hopeless task to do much for the rising generation around us; indeed it would be so, were it not for the promises of the Bible. I believe ~~on~~ the most effective means under God, (next to the preaching of the Gospel,) in the elevation of the Choctaws & Cherokees, have been boarding-schools opened in the early stages of those missions.

You have been an eye witness of the operation of such schools well conducted, & did I hold the most eloquent pen I could add nothing to the illustrations you saw in the Choctaw Nation. I should rejoice to see the day when the situation of these Indians & the means of the Board will justify the establishing such schools among them. But I would not forget that "Except the Lord build the house, they labour in vain that build it." that he can, & often does, work by the feeblest instrumentality, "that the excellency of the power may" ~~se~~ appear to be, as it is, of him."

The attendance on br. Wheeler's preaching of late has been better than usual. He comes more directly in contact with the Indian mind than we do here. The Indians are waiting, with much interest, the final decission, of the Gov. in regard to them.—

It is, indeed, most cheering to see what God is accomplishing by missions in various places, among the Indians & in Asia & other places. We shall wait with anxiety to hear again from Mr. King. "The Lord reigneth; let the earth rejoice."—

The members of the mission families are in usual health, except Br. Hall's eldest daughter, who is about the same as she has been for many months past. It seems to me desirable that s should have good medical advice.

Mrs. P. unites with me in affecti ate regards to yorself & Mrs. Treat.

Please excuse these few lines which have been written in great haste.

affectionately yours,

C. Pulsifer.

Charles Pulsifer

Lapointe, June 14, 1852.

Recd. July 9/52.

Ackd Aug 25. thro Mr Hall.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

La Pointe Wis
June 15, 1852

Lapointe, Wis. Sept. 16, 1852

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

Br. Hall has, I suppose, sent you letters informing you of his journey to Crowwing. Circumstances were such that he thought it his duty to leave before the time for our annual meeting in connection with the Board, at ~~Alban~~ Troy, which we regretted very much, as we were in hopes to have had a full meeting of the Mission. As it was we had a small, but pleasant, meeting at br. Wheeler's station. Myself & one of our native breth— went from here in a canoe. We reached br. W's after four or five hours diligent rowing & paddling, (a mode of conveyance somewhat more laborious than that to which we were accustomed in the south) & found them well & looking for us. His Indians were all camped close about him & Abby went round & invited them to come in. Quite a number of women & children were collected. They gave good attention while br. W addressed them in their own language, being assisted but little by an interpreter, after which I gave them some account of the Cherokees & Choctaws, to which they listened with apparent interest. The remainder of the time was occupied with english exercises the Indians retiring. We felt that it was a day of small things, but were encouraged by the admonition not to "Despise the day of small things," & the encouraging promise, "Where two or three are met together in my name, there am I in the midst of them." The influence of the meeting was good upon our own hearts, & we hope upon the Indians who attended. There are something more than twenty children attending the school there, & some of the women are being taught various branches of useful industry by Miss. Spooner

I have now in my school 26 scholars & I hope we shall be able to secure a more full & regular attendance than we have done of late

What we want most, is, more faith in God, more love to him & to the souls of the poor Indians about us. God has declared himself, waiting to be gracious; he means what he says, & if we go forth with simple, childlike confidence in him, endeavoring to do our duty, He will, in the best time & way, bestow his blessing.—

During br. Hall's absence, which we expect will be five or six weeks, Henry preaches to the Indians twice on the sabbath, & once during the week. We shall have no english services (unless br. Wheeler exchanges with Henry), except the Sabbath School & Bible Class for the children

Sept. 21.

and youth. — Has a box from Craftsbury, Vt. ever been sent here? Such a box was acknowledged in the "Herald" of June 1851. It has never been received here. Letters from Craftsbury have been receive stating that such a box was sent, & that it contained some things for us. —

I have just received a line from br. Wheeler, saying that they are all well; & that the Indians have nearly all been drunk again lately. We fear whiskey will be their ruin.

In haste, very truly yours,

Charles Pulsifer

LAPOINTE
SEPT
21
WIS

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

Mr. Charles Pulsifer
Lapointe, Sep. 18, 1852
Recd. Oct. 19/52.
Ans Dec 15.

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (159-165)

Pulsifer, Charles
- 159. 14 April 1854
- 160. 11 June 1853
- 161. 30 November 1853
- 162. 3 April 1854
- 163. 31 July 1854
- 164. 14 August 1854
- 165. 19 September 1854

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Lapointe Wis. Apr. 14. 1853

Rev. Selah B. Treat.
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

Yours of the 15th of Dec. came to hand Jan. 25th. I suppose you have already learned from letters from Br. Hall of his journey to Crowwing & the commencement of preparations for our removal. We learn from his letters that he was much prospered in his journey there, & his health was better at the date of his last (Mar: 15) than the week before his leaving home. His family are well, but Mrs. Hall is somewhat lonesome in the absence of her husband & wishes to join him at Crowwing as soon as may be. We hope to do so in June, if any tolerable shelter can be prepared for us.

Br. Wheeler & family are well. he finds the usual encouragement in his labors in behalf of the Indians, ~~and~~ French and halfbreeds at their sugar bushes this spring. A pretty good number usually attend preaching & listen quietly to the plain truths of the gospel, & that is all we can say. The Indians are still looking for a more favourable turn in the Gov— policy, and for their payment to be brought back to this place; and certain interested white men are encouraging them in this, & make large pro ises of what they will do to effect it.—

The statistics of my school for the last session show a decide advance over several of the previous sessions. The following is the attendance, as appears from the daily record: Whole No. of Scholars in attendance 32, No. of males 21, No. of females 11; Largest No. present any day of the seſsion 30, least No. 7. Average No. each day of the seſsion a fraction over 20. The Seſsion began Sept. 13th, and closed Feb. 18th. The averag attendance the previous seſsion was 14; of the Seſsion before that 13 and of the Seſsion before that 17; and the whole number of scholars attending each of those Seſsions respectively 30, 29, 29.—

The Mar. "Herald" has brought us welcome news of the Micronesian Mission, for which we had long been looking. Truly, "The Isles shall wait for thy Law." And the captivity of Zion in Madigascar appears to be at an end & a bright day dawning. The signs of the times everywhere call upon the Church to awake & arise from the dust. May the day be speedily hastened when, "Jesus shall reign, Where'er the sun does his succeſsive journeys run."

Mrs. P— unites with me in affectionate regards to you.

yours truly

C. Pulsifer

Mr Chs Pulsifer
La Pointe April 14. 53
Recd May 9.
Ansd June 11.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston,
Mass.

LA POINTE
APR
19
WIS.

Lapointe Wis. June 11. 1853.

Rev S. B Treat;
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

We are just on the eve of departure from this place for our new field of labor. Br. Hall is here, he arrived a few days since from Crow Wing, much worn down with his labors & cares there without his family or any one to advise with and assist him. We all feel that he must not remain alone any longer, & wish to go & share the labor with him. Our families are all in usual health. May the Lord direct our steps & make us the humble instruments of promoting his cause.

Will you please have my "Herald" & the "Puritan Recorder," directed to "Crow Wing, Min. Ter"

In haste, yours affectionately

C. Pulsifer.

Lapointe Wis.
June 14

Rev. S. B. Treat

Boston

Mass.

C. Pulsifer
Lapointe June 11/53
Rec'd July 7/53
Ap " 20

Crow Wing M. T. Nov. 30, 1853.

Rev S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

Your letter of June 11th was received Aug. 21 & one of a later date has since been received, the date of which & the time of reception I find I have neglected to record. To neither of these have I replied, the reason of which you will gather, perhaps, from some account of our employments & situation since our arrival here, the 7th of July last. We had a more comfortable journey from Lapointe here than we anticipated, or could have expected considering the frequent rains that fell while we were on the way. From every danger, & some of them were iminent owing to high water, the Lord delivered us, & all our company arrived in as good health & some of them better, than when we started.

~~Soon after our arrival~~ Soon after our arrival we commenced boarding Br. Hall's hired help, who had for a time been doing their own cooking, from want of any one to do it for them. For a week or so there were six men making eight in the family (including ourselves); two then left & four remained until into Sept. when two left & the others remained until the first of this month. The conveniences for doing the work for such a family were very few & Mrs. Pulsifer's health & strength insufficient for the task, hence I was obliged to assist her much, as there was no female help to be had. In addition to this the out of door care of the establishment fell to me, (one item of which was the daily procuring & cutting of what fuel was needed, often bringing it from the woods upon my back) and whenever I could be spared from these employments, it was necessary for me to take place of a common field laborer. Besides, much work must be done in the erection of buildings to shelter us this winter. Among all this I found almost no time for writing, & when the evenings became of considerable length I felt so wearied & my hands were so cracked & sore that I did not feel as though I could touch a pen, or be wakeful enough to write. As to the want conveniences one item, our bed, may serve as a specimen of the rest. Two boxes are placed a suitable distance apart, on these boards are laid & on these a hay bed. This has been our lodging since we began to live in a house here, (one month from the time we left Lapointe) & is still. It felt somewhat hard at first, but now we rest quite comfortably. I mention these things not to complain, (we have no reason to do that & are far better lodged & provided for probably than He who "had not where to lay his head" though Lord of heaven & earth)

P.S. Please to ask Mr. Hill

but simply that you may know something of our every day life. Br Hall & his family have been not much better situated; but we are all now more comfortable in these respects having taken possession of our winter quarters.

I should like to show you [redacted] hodes but must defer it for the present. — has been unable to do scarcely anything t two weeks, in consequence of her labors during the summer & fall, but she is now recovering. — We have been unable to open any school yet for want of a place, but hope to commence a neighborhood school some two weeks hence. My own feelings are well exp[illegible] in your last letter to br. Hall, where you say "[illegible] must not give up the Ojibwas just yet but wait a little longer." I hope we may yet establish in connection with our operations among these Indians either here or somewhere else a boarding school. Such a school rightly managed, with the blessing of God will be a most efficient means of civilizing & christianizing this poor degraded & wandering people. To secure the gratest good, it should be in the bosom of an Indian community, permanently located, as much as may be, & as far as possible from the vicinity of the whites. — But what we most of all need is a revival of pure religion in our own hearts & families. May the Lord graciously vouchsafe us this blessing. very truly yours

C. Pulsifer.

P.S. Please to ask Mr Hill to send me one of the Tract Society's Almanacs for the year 1854 by mail.

Charles Pulsifer

Crow Wing Nov. 30/53

Recd. Dec. 27/53

Ansd Feb. 11

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

[redacted]

Crow Wing M. T. Apr. 3. 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

Your letter to me of Feb. 11. was received Mar. 9th, the day on which you wrote to Br. Hall announcing your intention to start for Washington that day, to obtain a decision, some way, in relation to our School matter. From the tenor of your last to me I thought it probable we should remain here this season if no longer. With this expectation I wrote to Mr. Hill the 14th of Mar. requesting him to purchase & forward to us here sundry articles, which we should need this season. But it has occurred to me from the tenor of your letter to Br. H–, above mentioned, that we may be required to leave here this spring. If it is decided that we give up the School now, I suppose it will be best to defer sending the goods until it is known what will be done with us. In that case will you be so kind as to mention the matter to Mr. Hill. It is Br. Hall's opinion, in which I concur, that there is not sufficient encouragement to justify the Board in maintaining a Mission here aside from the contemplated school; nor do I know of a place in this region where I would advise the Board to establish a new station for the Ojibwes. There is the Episcopal Miſsion at Gull Lake, within ten miles of us; our Brethren of the Amer. Miſsion Association are on our north-west ~~of~~ at Caſs Lake, Red Lake & Pambina, & will probably extend their operations to every important point in that region. They have had much encouragement of late at some of their stations. Our Methodist Breth— have their plans to occupy Mille Lac this spring.— I suppose you are fully informed by Br. Wheeler of the state of things at Bad River & on the Lake. It seems from recent letters we have received from him that they have some reason for encouragement. It is not likely that any further attempts will be made to remove those Indians & I doubt not many from inland will come back on to the Lake. I cannot but hope there is a bleſsing in store, for them. In view of all these things we would pray & wait for the guidance of Providence.—

The Miſsion families here are all in usual health

Hoping to hear soon of some decission in our case

I remain affectionately yours;

C. Pulsifer.

C. Pulsifer

Crow Wing Apr. 3/54

Recd. April 20/54

Ackd. " 29

Rev. S. B. Treat
Mission House
Boston Mass.

[redacted]

(Crow Wing Min Territory
5th April 1854)

Crow Wing M. T. July 31st 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat;
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir;

I have just recieved a letter from br. Wheeler, in answer to the one I wrote when you left here, wishing us to come to him & saying he has work enough for us & a hopeful field, he thinks. At the same time br. Hall recieved you letter announcing the decision of the Committee in regard to Crow Wing; thus the path for us to pursue for the present is pointed out: we shall therefore as soon as we can, go to Bad River. We hope to reach there the fore part of Sept. I shall be abliged, I suppose, to make a draft on Mr. Hill for the expenses of our journey, the purchase of provisions & some few articles of furniture, & clothing perhaps. Will you be so kind as to alter the direction of my "*Herald*" & "*The Puritan Recorder*"; from Crow Wing M. T. to *Lapointe Wis.* on the reciept of this. We hope to meet you at Bad River. May the Lord direct our steps & help us to live to him wherever we go: & may he bless & guide the Board in all its councils & labors—

I hope the Gov't will tell us soon what to do with this property so as to relieve br. Hall of its care. It wears upon him very much. He is poorer now than when you parted with him. He had decided on building near Mr. Gates a little belo Sauk Rapids. His boys are there at work, his lumber is going down the river, some of it, & the rem[illegible]der is ready, on the bank; & he left home this morning to see to the business, so we are few in numbe here, but all in usual health.

affectionately yours;

C. Pulsifer

Mr C. Pulsifer
Crow Wing, July 31. 1854
Recd Augt 14

Crow Wing Aug. 14th 1854

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

I wrote you the 31st ultimo that we hoped to reach Bad River the fore part of Sept. but I am now satisfied that we cannot be there before the last of Sept. or first of Oct.

I am now occupied with the oat & wheat harvest & with the duties of an ancient office, i. e. hewer of wood & drawer of water, br. Hall having taken his boys down the river to assist him about his lumber, making hay &c. He wished me to stay until he leaves here & take care of the families &c. so that he & his boys can be absent working at his building.

I cannot promise that, for he may stay so late ~~that~~ as to make it impossible for us to get to Bad R— & comfortably fixed before winter. How long you or the Committee expect me to stay in my present position I do not know but I supposed they & you expect us to remove as soon as convenient. Br. Hall has had a very hard time getting his lumber down thus far on account of low water. I have spent a good many days in helping him about it. None of it is yet down to where he wants it but all of it below Mr. Ayers. ——

I have not heard a word yet of my supplies shipped by Mr. Hill, the first of Apr. last. to New Orleans, consigned to Messrs Greenwood & Co. I have received an invoice from Mr. H— but no shipping bill.

We may delay a little on that account as I wish to take them with us to Lapointe.

Both of the Mission families are in usual health.

Mrs. P— unites with me in affectionate regards to you.

very truly yours,

C. Pulsifer

Mr C. Pulsifer
Crow Wing. Aug. 14. 54
Rec^d Sept. 1.

Belle Prairie
Min Ter
Aug 18

Rev S. B. Treat
Boston
Mass.

Detroit Sept. 19, 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston, Mass.

Dear Sir;

We are thus far on our way to Bad River & in comfortable health through a kind Providence. We left Br. Hall & family well. He & his boys were at Sauk Rappids prepareing to build. I was obliged to come here for the purchase of supplies as I had not sufficient funds & our Agent at Chicago was absent.

Our traveling expenses would have been some less could we have done our business at Chicago & gone directly from there to the Saut.

Br. Wheeler sent me a bill of purchases for himself, the general wants of his station, & for Henry's family, which together with supplies & necessary household furniture for my own family, will amount to quite a sum. I am sorry it is so, but see not how to avoid it. We have to begin anew, as it were, & many of the articles in their bill, such as stoves, ~~will~~ we shall not need to ~~be~~ purchase again for years; this together with the high prices of provisions & freight. make the amount necessarily large. I received of Br. Hall $240 of which I have spent about $100. The purchases I have made for the Bad River station & funds drawn for transporting the same amount to $1101.19.

We may reach the Sault this week & if we are not detained there may reach home next week. — I heard some account of the meeting of the Board at Hartford from Rev. Mr. Hoyt last Sabbath eve in which I was much interested. May we & they be guided by that wisdom which is from above made instruments in promoting the Redeemers cause in the earth.

yours truly.

C. Pulsifer

P.S. The goods sent from Boston last spring I found at St. Paul.

30th Sept. Lapointe

We arrived here yesterday about 2 P.M. in comfortable health had a pleasant voyage on the lakes. We found Br. Wheeler & family here. Payment is not over here yet, & a new treaty is being made with the Ojibwes this side of the Miss— It will be concluded to-day I think & will be a good one for the Indians if carried out. Reserves are made for them & they are allowed to remain where they are Mr. W— will give you the treaty in full soon. I learn since writing the above that the treaty is concluded. There are some two thousand Indians here now. We shall all go to Bad River soon.

in haste, yours truly

C. Pulsifer

C. Pulsifer

Detroit Sep. 19. 1854.

Rec.d Oct. 13.

Ackd Dec. 1 —

Ack Oct 14

rec'd Sep 1 —

ABC: 18.4.1 v. 1 (166-172)

Pulsifer, Charles
- 166. 30 November 1854
- 167. 13 March 1855
- 168. 20 June 1855
- 169. 5 September 1855
- 170. 10 October 1855
- 171. 6 November 1855
- 172. 11 December 1855

THE HOUGHTON LIBRARY

Bad River Nov. 30. 1854.

Rev. S. B. Treat
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

I hope you have received my last letter, a part of which was written at Detroit, I think, & a part at La Pointe after our arrival there, the dates being Sept. 19 & 30. But I am in doubt whether you have received it, the mails in this region are so irregular & badly managed. The Contractor for carrying the mail, on which _we_ depend, is our Jewish friend _Austrian_ est & his care is to make money, not to carry the mail regularly; add to which a P. M. so drunk sometimes that he cannot tell a mail-bag from a meal-bag & you see we stand a slim chance. Besides this it is thought by some that if a letter is found directed to the Mission supposed to relate to the La Pointe property we never get it; that it is read & disposed of by those interested. However that may be we have received no advices in regard to ~~the~~ that property for a very long time from any quarter & it is still in our possession. — Since I last wrote, soon after our arrival, the Mission has been visited with sickness & accident; but a merciful God has so preserved & healed us that we are getting comfortable again. Br. & Sr. Wheeler have each been preserved from serious injury, in circumstances that might easily have proved fatal; the former from a fall from the roof of a building upon the frozen ground & within some 3 inches of a small stump, & the latter from the dangerous effects of a violent blow from an oar upon the head. They are now comfortable Mrs. W— entirely relieved from the effects of the blow on her head, I believe, & Br. W—, whose fall ~~[illegible]~~ occured some two weeks ago, is getting quite well of it. Several of their children have been sick, but are now in comfortable health.—

I have been unwell most of the time since our arrival at Lapointe & confined to the house most of this month. I have been very much reduced in flesh & strength so as hardly to be able to walk abut, but am now rapidly recovering both. In consequence, I have not been able to teach at all yet & my house is not yet prepared for winter though it has already come. We hope to be more comfortably fixed for winter in a few weeks, & I hope to get up a supply of wood so as to meet the cold winter with comfort. Abby is teaching & will continue to until I can go into school.—

Henry & his family are here & in health; he preaches twice a week to the Indians besides interpreting.

I think I did not tell you in my last of our loss on Lake Huron. All the goods we brought from Crow Wing & the new goods sent to us from Boston last spring which I took with me from St. Paul to Rock

Island, were thrown into the Lake in consequence of the Steamer-Illinois; on which they were shipped, running aground on a certain Island. All were lost except one box, which was recovered in a somewhat damaged state. The loss to us, could not have been less than $230 in cash. This so reduced us in clothing, bedding & furniture that we were obliged to make an additional draft on the Board at Detroit of some fifty dollars to make us any way comfortable this winter. On account of this loss & our new position here I think we shall need about $350 to meet our expenses for a year to come, & I would mention that to the Committee as our [illegible]timate

I may recover the amount of our loss; the Insurance Agent at Detroit assured me that I should, because although my goods were not insured, they were sacrificed to save the Boat & would be paid for.—

Please send me [redacted] two of the Tract Society's Almanacs for ne. Please have the "Puritan Recorder" sent to ress at La Pointe, Lake Superior; I have not received a single No. of it since we came here.—

Br. Wheeler sends love to you & says he will write you before long.

Mrs. P— unites with me in respectful regards to you

yours truly
C. Pulsifer.

P.S. Where is Mr. Hall. I have had no letter from you since I saw you.

Mrs. Charles Pulsifer

Bad River Nov. 30. '54.

Rec'd. Jan'y. 13. 1855.

Period. ✓ ans. Feb 15.

Rev. S. B. Treat

Boston

Mass.

Bad River Mar. 13th, 1855.
La Pointe Lk Sup

Dear Sir,

Your letter of Dec. 1, '54 came to hand Jan. 19th. I had then quite recovered my usual health & Mrs. P. was recovering from an illness of 2 or 3 weeks continuance. Since that time I have been quite well & Mrs. P. pretty well most of the time. We have suffered some from want of a good house. We made such large drafts on the Board last fall that I did not like to spend any more for building than was unavoidable. The carpenters bill for work on my house was $27 which I still owe not having money to pay it & no means of getting it until the opening of navigation. Mr. Welton is my creditor, he did the work.

Our plan is to do no more about a boarding school at present than to take one or two children into our family, provided suitable ones are offered. We can do no more until considerable expense is laid out in building which we thought it best not to incur at present. In the mean time we will make our present school system as efficient as possible.

But I am more & more convinced that a good boarding school is just what we need &

ought to have here, & I hope to see one effected. but it will cost something in money & labour. One reason for our being slow to move in this matter was, we wished to see the new treaty ratified, and, what its effect on the Indians is likely to be. We have been informed by the Agent's Secretary that the Treaty has been ratified without amendment. The Indians here are all well ~~well~~ pleased with it I believe; some of them have got out timber to build them houses with the coming season & they all talk of planting a good deal. How much will be accomplished remains to be seen. There has been no liquor drank by the Indians in this vicinity ~~about here~~ this winter, although it has been easy to get it at Lapointe in any quantity. There is a marked change in this respect ~~matter~~ since my former acquaintance with them. They have attended meeting well, ~~this winter~~ both on the Sab & on week days, & have listened with a good degree of attention, some, we think, with interest.

Two Sabbaths since we had the pleasure of receiving one Indian woman into the church on profession of her faith; and she brought forward her two children to be baptized. She appears to be a humble, sincere disciple. This is the bright side; there is a dark one. There is much heathenism & mental & moral darkness here yet; & the great majority of those who listen, are hearers of the word only, not doers of it. They are wayside or stony ground hearers. But I think we have ground for encouragement on the whole, & that our patrons ought to be encouraged in regard to these Indians." —

Henry has gone into the sugar bush with his family; he has sat down in a central place & will preach to the Indians while they stay in the bush. He has preached to & visited among the Indians, more than he has been ~~been~~ accustomed to, since my acquaintance with him I think. —

Mr. Hall was living in his new house at Sauk Rapids the last I heard from him. His oldest son is here, the rest of his children are with him I suppose. —

I should be [redacted] to have the Miſsionary herald sent, I have not had one since we ca Crow Wing. —

I have heard nothing from the Insurance Agent yet about pay for my lost goods; I have written our Agent at Detroit about the matter. —

We hope you will come & visit us the coming season, may we not look for you. The canal at the Saut will be finished by the 15th of June, probably. very truly yours,

W C. Pulsifer

Mr. Chas. Pulsifer
Bad River Mar. 13. 1855.
Recd Apr. 14.
Ansd May 17

[redacted]

Rev. S. B. Treat.
Boston
Mass.

1855
Bad-River Wis June 20

Rev. S. B. Treat, }
Boston Mass, }

Dear Brother,

Yours of May 16 & 17 was recieved some time since which informed me of your sickness in April last & of the scattered & disabled condition of your fellow laborers at the Missionary House.

Whom the Lord loveth - he chasteneth; & although no affliction for the present seemeth to be joyous nevertheless afterward it worketh the peaceable fruits of righteousness to them who are exercised thereby.

May this be your experience & that of your associates. For the most part as a mission we have been quite well for some time past & able to attend each to his allotted work, bro. Wheeler & Henry to the preaching of the Gospel & other direct Missionary labor, Abby to the school & myself to the farming interests of the mission; but I have been laid aside from work about two weeks by disease of the eye & partial blindness.

I have not written a word nor read scarsely a word for that length of time & am now obliged to write you by the hand of another

Perhaps I ought to say here that I have no use of my right eye having lost the sight of it when a boy, the other is the one now affected. The difficulty seems to be a general congestion of the vessels in & about the eye attended with considerable inflamation & some soreness & a general indistinctness of vision. Happily I have had the privilege of consulting intelligent physicians living near us who have given me their advice gratis. The remedies they advised were such as were at hand & the use of them has proved ~~[illegible]~~ beneficial & we hope will effect an entire cure. How much longer I shall be confined with it from work I do not know I hope not long. My health otherwise is good. Should these remedies fail I shall wish to go where I can have better assistance.

The Indians are planting more this year than heretofore & considerable new land has been brought under improvement. They have been pretty quiet & attentive to meeting & so far as we know entirely free from [illegible] liquor, but still the heathen party is strong & they have kept up some of their heathen practices with considerable ceremony.

Our present educational efforts do them but little good generally, from want of attending on them & from irregularity in those who do attend. We wish very much to see a good boarding school in successful operation here

Quite a number of children attend Miss Spooner's school, but few to any good purpose they come so irregularly. We have taken no Indian children into our family, no suitable opportunity having offered. We shall take some as soon as we can find some that will be likely to stay & that we can benefit —

Henry is still with us but I believe he expects to leave next fall. He has made a claim on Government land some ten or fifteen miles from us onto which he intend to move next fall.

In your letter to Mr. Wheeler received some time since informing us about the settlement of the Lapoint property, occurs the following sentence marked in your letter as a quotation, "The church to be a free gift."
We did not know exactly how to understand it but supposed that Austrian or Leopold or both were to give the church for the purpose for which it was built. Previously to our delivering up the keys of the house to Austrian we had understood he had made an arrangement

with the Catholic Priest at Lapointe to convert our church into a catholic school house. Believing there was something wrong we refused to deliver up the key of the church at the time the property was turned over to him, telling him we intended to keep it until we could write & receive an explanation from you. Thus the matter stands, the Church is shut up & the key in our hands. Mr. Wheeler wrote to you about it some time since & asking for an explanation.

I have mentioned the matter thinking you might not have received his letter, if so please write & give us an explanation of this as soon as convenient. We see the N. Y. Observer continues to throw dust occasionally in relation to slavery among the Cherokees & Choctaws. We should look with much interest for the result of Mr. Wood's visit there.

Mrs P. unites with in affectionate regards to yourself & family

Very truly yours

C. Pulsifer.

P. S. Pray can you inform me whether Adams & Co. of N. Y. have entirely failed. I should be glad to know as I hold a Bill of exchange on them for 150 dollars, drawn in California.

C. P.

C. Pulsifer.

Bad River, June 20. 55.

Rec'd July 16.

Ans'd " 26.

Lapointe Sept. 25 1855

Rev S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass. }

Dear Sir.

By Mrs. Pulsifer's assistance I write you from a corner of the old mission house in this place, in which we are camped waiting for a boat to carry us from our field of labor. I have long hoped against hope that I should not be obliged to take this step But have at last considered it my duty in accordance with the unanimous advice of the mission to go else where hoping to obtain some permanent improvement of my sight. I regret leaving very much having accomplished so little since my return from Crow-wing & not having the express consent of the Committee to this step. But the season is advancing, I can do nothing here as I now am & its seems high time that I should have the best advice for my eyes My present plan is, to go to Chicago & consult Medical eminent men there to one of which I have a letter of introduction from acquaintances on this Lake. & from there to go & spend the winter with some relatives some thirty miles out of the city. This was the cheapest plan I could devise & perhaps I may obtain all the assistance I need. I am happy to say that I can do this without calling on the Board for any more than my this years appropiation together with what is due me for Miss Spooner's board

I can see to go about in the day time quite comfortably but can see to write my name with great difficulty & can read in very plain print but the letters have a very distorted appearance I do not attempt to either read or write. My general health is good. Mrs. P. is also in usual health. I have had serious doubts whether I shall ever be able to return to my feild of labor in a condition to do much & if I can do nothing I had better be out of the way & make room for those who can do something. What assistance I may need from the Board in *future* I do not know & therefore make no estimate for the coming year. I suppose in case of need I may draw on the Board for the remainder of this years allowance all of which I have not yet drawn. As soon as I am in any place where I can remain for a time I will write you & shall hope to hear from you. In all that has befallen me I think I can cheerfully say the "will of the Lord be done" & rejoice that the Lord God Omnipotent reigneth.

Very truly yours
C. Pulsifer.

Mr. Chas. Pulsifer
La Pointe, Sept. 25. 65.
Recd. Oct. 13.
Ansd. Nov 14

Naperville Ill. Oct. 10 '55.

170

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston Mass.

Dear Sir,

We arrived here in comfortable health yesterday about 10 days after our embarking on the steamer at Lapoint 3 of which we spent in Chicago. I have consulted an eminent phisician in Chicago in relation to my eye & he speaks encouragingly of my being able to see again pretty well in two or three months. Whether I shall be able to see as well, as before the difficulty is uncertain. The Doctor whom I have consulted thinks the principal difficulties with my eye at present are, first, a want of transparency in the external covering of the cornea & an unevenness in the thickness of different parts of it, causing an irregular appearance in objects around me; &, second, a want of healthy condition of that part of the brain from which the optic nerve arises. He has kinly prescribed for me free of any charge. His name is N. S. Davis Professor in the Medical college at Chicago. Please direct your letters to me to Naperville Dupage Co. Ill. Hoping to hear from you as soon as convenient I remain very truly yours

C. Pulsifer

(By H. H. P.)

Mr C. Pulsifer
Naperville, Oct 10. 55
Recd Oct. 17
Ackd Nov. 14

Rev. S. B. Treat,
Boston,
Mass.

171

Naperville Ill. Nov. 6. 1855.

Rev. S. B. Treat }
Boston Mass. }

Dear Sir,

Since my last to you which I think was dated at this place I have been attending to the improvement of my sight, visiting Chicago weekly for that purpose. I have gained a good deal, so that now with the permission of Proffessor Davis I am beginning to read a few minuetes at a time, which is quite a privilege. I hope in a month more to be able to write you with my own hand but yet I may not. My general health is now good. We have both been unwell more or less since coming here. Mrs. Pulsifer more than myself but her health is now better.

The friends also with whom we are staying, are much afflicted with sickness at present.—

I wrote Mr. Gordon some time since asking him to send me the publications of the Board. I have received the Herald & the Puritan Recorder, but not the Journal of Missions nor the Youths Dayspring. I asked for the two latter hoping to do something for their circulation in this region where I think they are not taken at all.

Please, has Mr. Gordon ever received [illegible] a Bill of Exchange on Adams & Co. N.Y. which I sent him with a note to him bearing date Aug. 11 '55 I think. I still hold in my possession No 2. of that Bill. The amount of that Bill was one hundred & fifty dollars.

I think it is doubtful whether I can depend on being able to teach again. I am afraid that the constant use required of the eye & the effect of the confinement on the nervous system generally will render it unsafe for me to attempt it; & that if I should be able to engage in it I should be compelled to give it up after a time. I suppose the Comm. will not wish to send us back to Bad River, unless I can be depended on for teaching. I do not wish to retain my connexion any longer than I can be usefully employed. If the ~~Sec.~~ Comm. have no such place for me I shall wish to ask for ~~a~~ release from my connexion with the Board. I wish to be understood; I do not wish to be released if there is work any where in which I can do & for which I am wanted: if there is not, I do wish to be released & I hope, in that case, with the blessing of God to become a contributor to the funds of the Board instead of being supported by it. Please lay this subject before the Comm. I have heard nothing from Bro. Wheeler since leaving Bad River. Hoping to hear from you in due time.

I am as ever very aff. yours

Charles Pulsifer

By H. H. P.

Mr. Charles Pulsifer
Naperville Nov. 6. 1855.
Rec'd. Nov. 12.
Ans. Nov. 14

Inventory of Articles left in the Mission.

1854

1 Wheelbarrow 1 Spade
3 Hoes. 1. Axe & Helve
2 Potatoe Baskets.
1 Woodsaw. 2 Washtubs.
1 Clothes-basket. 1. Market basket
2 Water-pails 1 slop-pail
1 Mop-Iron 2 Brooms
1 Chopping-knife & Tray
6, 4 qt Milk pans 2 W. Basins
1 Ladle 1 Funnel 1 Large Iron Spoon.
1 Doz. Iron Spoons
6 " Tea Spoons
1 Coffee-pot. 1 Tea Pot
1 Tea-canister ~~2~~ Larg Tin Canisters
1 Dust Pan. Candle Moulds
2 Tin Pint Cups 2 P. Basins
1 Colander 2 Tin-pails
1 6. qt. Pan 1 Flatiron
1 Pr shovel & Tongs.
1 Paint Brush 1. W. W. Brush.
2 Marking-Brushes
1 Keg W. Lead in Oil
1 Small Can Patent Dryer
37 Lights Window-Glass
3½ Window Sashes.

1 Door Handle & Lock
1 Padlock 15 Lbs French Yellow
4½ Gall. Linseed (Boiled) Oil.
1 4 Gall. Jar. 1 stone Jug 3 Gall.
2 Jars. 3 Iron Candlestick
1 Japan Lamp 1 Clothes-line
1 Bedcord 1 Bedstead
1 Mattrass & Strawtick
1 Musquito Net 2 Tabl cloths
Bedding
6 Lbs Sal. Soda 1 Bag Fine Salt
3½ Ps Bulls.

Crockery viz.

1 Doz Teas & Saucers minus one Tea.
Sugar-bowl & Creamer
3 Doz & ten Plates 4 sizes
1 Pickle shell 4 Platters
3 Nappies 2 Cov'd Dishes
2 Pitchers 9 Yellow Bowls
1 Salt cellar 1 Vinegar Cruet
1 Mustard-pot 1 Pepper-box
1 Coverd Chamber
1 Spring Balance
1 Large Rocking Chair.
1 Sewing Chair.
Also some 8 common chairs

Left of this years Supplies

2 Lbs Ground Pepper. 1 Shoe-brush
35 Yds Blue & Orange Print
41½" Brown Sheeting
23½" Blue Drilling
50 " Dennim 20 yds Plaid Linsey
21 " Cotton Stripe 2 Fine Combs
18" Red Twilled Flannel
1 4. qt Yellow Bowl
5 Glass Tumblers 1 Gall stone pot)
1 Set Knives & Forks.
1 Doz Tin Plates ~~6 Papers L~~
6 Papers Lamp Black 18 Ps. Balls)
½ Gros Screws 1 Coffee Mill
1 Coarse Whet stone. 1 Paper Tacks
2 Cloth Caps 8 Doz Coat Buttons)
1 Bag Fine salt 3 Doz Clothes pins.
1 Wire seive. 8 yds Dark Calico
1 Clock with Glass. 6
6. (4qt) Pans 1 Large Dish Pan
1 milk Measure 12 Japan Tumblers
1 Milk Skimmer 3 Tin Pails
6 Pint Cups. 3 (1qt) Basins
3 (2 qt) Basins 2 Lbs. Black Tea
½ Lb Blue mixed yarn
2 Blue-bowls
1 Covered Chamber

In addition to the above we left a good Cooking-Stove & the following furniture which was all good. (The Mayflower No. 8.)
1 Wash-boiler 1 Tea-kettle co
(both Copper)
1 Dinner-pot 1 Dish-kettle
1 Steamer 1 Coffee-Boiler
1 Extra Kettle 2 Dripping Pan
1 Gridiron 1 Griddle 1 Spider
4 Oblong Tins 1 Frying-pan
2 Tin Basins (mer
1 Long Handle Dipper & Skim-
5 Joints Pipe & 1 Elbow